















14914  
*THE ITALIAN PRINCIPIA—PART I.*

---

A

# FIRST ITALIAN COURSE

CONTAINING A

GRAMMAR, DELECTUS, AND EXERCISE BOOK  
WITH VOCABULARIES

ON THE PLAN OF

DR. WILLIAM SMITH'S "PRINCIPIA LATINA"

1891

NEW YORK

HARPER & BROTHERS, FRANKLIN SQUARE

1891.

## THE PRINCIPIA SERIES.

12mo, Cloth.

PRINCIPIA LATINA, PART I.....	\$0 55
PRINCIPIA LATINA, PART II.....	90
INITIA GRÆCA, PART I.....	60
APPENDIX TO INITIA GRÆCA, PART I.....	40
FRENCH PRINCIPIA, PART I.....	50
FRENCH PRINCIPIA, PART II.....	80
FRENCH PRINCIPIA, PART III.....	1 00
GERMAN PRINCIPIA, PART I.....	50
GERMAN PRINCIPIA, PART II.....	80
ITALIAN PRINCIPIA, PART I.....	75
ITALIAN PRINCIPIA, PART II.....	90

PUBLISHED BY HARPER & BROTHERS, NEW YORK.

**H** HARPER & BROTHERS will send any of the above works by mail, postage prepaid, to any part of the United States, Canada, or Mexico, on receipt of the price

21739  
 12192

## PREFACE.

---

THE following Work has been drawn up by Signor Ricci, Professor of Italian in the City of London College, on the same plan as the *Principia Latina* and the French and German *Principia*.

The main object of the book is to enable a beginner to acquire an accurate knowledge of the chief grammatical forms, to learn their usage by constructing simple sentences as soon as he commences the study of the language, and to accumulate gradually a stock of words useful in conversation as well as in reading. The grammatical forms are printed in conspicuous type and at full length, as no sound knowledge of the language can be acquired unless the pupil becomes thoroughly familiar with these forms. But at the same time it is important that the learner should be exercised from the first in the construction of Sentences, so as to test by practical application the grammatical forms. The present Work thus contains Grammar, Delectus, and Exercise-book, with Vocabularies, and consequently presents in one book all that the beginner will require for some time in his study of the language.

The Grammar has been made as complete as possible, so far as the forms are concerned, in order to obviate the necessity of the use of any other Grammar. Great pains have been taken to simplify the Rules, which often consist

of only a few words, when the same subjects occupy several pages in other Italian Grammars. Special care has been taken in the arrangement and classification of the Irregular Verbs. Many of the so-called Irregular Verbs, which show the same slight irregularities, are given in the chapters on Peculiarities of Verbs.

As most persons have learnt some Latin before beginning Italian, it has been thought advisable to point out the affinities between the two languages. In the Vocabularies the etymology of *all* Italian words is given, not only of those derived from the Latin, but also of those which come from the Teutonic and other languages. In the case of Teutonic derivations the modern German forms, where they exist, are generally given, as more practically useful than the older forms, from which the Italian words actually come. In drawing up these lists the authorities of Diez, Littré, and Brachet have been chiefly followed.

The writer has consulted most of the books used in teaching Italian both in this country and abroad, and desires to express his obligations to the Grammars of Volpe and Sauer, as well as to the ordinary Grammars used in Italian Schools.

# CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
I. THE ALPHABET. PARTS OF SPEECH .. .. .	1
II. PRONUNCIATION .. .. .	2
III. THE ARTICLE .. .. .	3
IV. THE SUBSTANTIVE .. .. .	5
1. FORMATION OF THE PLURAL .. .. .	5
2. FORMATION OF THE GENITIVE .. .. .	9
3. FORMATION OF THE DATIVE .. .. .	10
4. FORMATION OF THE ABLATIVE .. .. .	11
V. THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE .. .. .	14
VI. PROPER NAMES .. .. .	15
VII. THE VERB AVERE .. .. .	16
VIII. THE VERB ESSERE .. .. .	22
IX. THE ADJECTIVE .. .. .	27
1. QUALIFICATIVE ADJECTIVES .. .. .	27
2. POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES .. .. .	37
3. DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES .. .. .	38
4. INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES .. .. .	39
5. NUMERAL ADJECTIVES .. .. .	40
6. INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES .. .. .	45
X. THE VERB .. .. .	47
XI. FIRST CONJUGATION .. .. .	49
XII. SECOND CONJUGATION .. .. .	51
XIII. THIRD CONJUGATION .. .. .	54
XIV. AFFINITIES OF THE ITALIAN AND LATIN VERBS .. .. .	57
XV. PECULIARITIES OF SOME VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION .. .. .	58
XVI. PECULIARITIES OF SOME VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION .. .. .	61
XVII. PECULIARITIES OF SOME VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION .. .. .	65
XVIII. COMPLEMENTS OF VERBS .. .. .	69
XIX. THE PRONOUN .. .. .	75
A. PERSONAL PRONOUNS .. .. .	75
B. DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS .. .. .	84
C. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS .. .. .	87

	PAGE
D. INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS .. .. .	87
E. RELATIVE PRONOUNS .. .. .	89
F. INDEFINITE PRONOUNS .. .. .	91
XX. PASSIVE VERBS .. .. .	92
XXI. NEUTER VERBS .. .. .	98
XXII. REFLECTIVE VERBS .. .. .	101
XXIII. IMPERSONAL VERBS .. .. .	108
XXIV. ADVERBS .. .. .	112
A. ADVERBS OF TIME .. .. .	114
B. ADVERBS OF PLACE .. .. .	115
C. ADVERBS OF MANNER .. .. .	116
D. ADVERBS OF QUANTITY .. .. .	117
E. ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION .. .. .	118
F. ADVERBS OF NEGATION .. .. .	118
G. ADVERBS OF DOUBT .. .. .	120
H. ADVERBIAL EXPRESSIONS .. .. .	121
XXV. PREPOSITIONS .. .. .	123
A. PREPOSITIONS GOVERNING THE GENITIVE .. .. .	123
B. PREPOSITIONS GOVERNING THE DATIVE .. .. .	124
C. PREPOSITIONS GOVERNING THE ACCUSATIVE .. .. .	125
D. PREPOSITIONS GOVERNING THE ABLATIVE .. .. .	125
XXVI. CONJUNCTIONS .. .. .	126
A. COPULATIVE CONJUNCTIONS .. .. .	126
B. DISJUNCTIVE CONJUNCTIONS .. .. .	127
XXVII. INTERJECTIONS .. .. .	128
XXVIII. IRREGULAR VERBS .. .. .	130
THE FIRST CLASS .. .. .	130
VERBS IRREGULAR IN THE PAST DEFINITE AND	
PAST PARTICIPLE .. .. .	131
THE SECOND CLASS .. .. .	139
A. VERBS IRREGULAR IN THE PAST PARTICIPLE	
ONLY .. .. .	139
B. VERBS IRREGULAR IN DIFFERENT TENSES .. .. .	141
THE THIRD CLASS .. .. .	164
DEFECTIVE VERBS .. .. .	164
ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS .. .. .	169
Vocabularies .. .. .	179
INDEX I.—ITALIAN WORDS .. .. .	204
INDEX II.—ENGLISH WORDS .. .. .	213



# A FIRST ITALIAN COURSE.

---

## I.—THE ALPHABET. PARTS OF SPEECH.

1. *Alphabet*.—The Italian alphabet consists of 22 letters :

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, L, M, N, O, P,  
a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, l, m, n, o, p,  
Q, R, S, T, U, V, Z.  
q, r, s, t, u, v, z.

The English letters K, W, X, Y are only used in foreign words.

The names of the Italian letters are given on page 3. Of these letters, *a, e, i, o, u* are Vowels (*vocali*), the remaining letters being consonants (*consonanti*).

2. *Accents*.—There is only one written accent ( ` ) in Italian, and it is used

- (a) To mark a contraction ; as, *verità*, *truth* ; *carità*, *charity* ; written instead of *caritáte*, *veritáte*, showing thus the suppression of a syllable, and preserving the accent of the word in its original place.
- (b) To give a different signification to the same word, as *la*, *the*, *là*, *there* ; *da*, *from*, *dà*, *gives* ; *e*, *and*, *è*, *is*.
- (c) On the third person singular of the Past Definite and on the first and third persons singular of the Future : as, *egli amò*, *he loved* ; *io amerò*, *I shall love* ; *egli amerà*, *he will love*.

NOTE 1.—The acute accent ( ' ) is *never* written in Italian, but in this work it is put for the sake of beginners upon every Italian word, except in the Exercises, in order to indicate the pronunciation ; as, *un àngelo*, *an angel* ; *un amico*, *a friend*.

2.—Some writers use the circumflex accent ( ^ ) to mark the contraction of two i's : as *pricipi* for *principii*, etc.

3. *Apostrophe*.—The Apostrophe shows that a vowel has been dropped, as *l'amico*, *the friend*, instead of *lo amico* ; *l'ánima*, *the soul*, instead of *la ánima*.

4. *Genders*.—There are two Genders: Masculine (*mascolino*) and Feminine (*femminino*).

5. *Numbers*.—There are two Numbers: Singular (*singolare*) and Plural (*plurale*).

6. *Parts of Speech*.—There are Nine Parts of Speech in the Italian language:

1. Article,	<i>articolo.</i>	5. Verb,	<i>verbo.</i>
2. Substantive, or Noun,	<i>sostantivo,</i> or <i>nóme.</i>	6. Adverb,	<i>avverbio.</i>
3. Adjective,	<i>aggettivo.</i>	7. Preposition,	<i>preposizione.</i>
4. Pronoun,	<i>pronóme.</i>	8. Conjunction,	<i>congiunzione.</i>
		9. Interjection,	<i>interiezione.</i>

## II.—PRONUNCIATION.

Every letter must be pronounced in Italian, as there are neither diphthongs nor mutes.

### VOWELS.

a	is pronounced like a in father:	as, pádre, <i>father.</i>
e {	(close) "	a in made: méno, <i>less.</i>
e {	(open) "	a in and: érba, <i>grass.</i>
i	"	e in to be: díre, <i>so say.</i>
o {	(close) "	o in society: sótto, <i>under.</i>
o {	(open) "	o in loss: dótto, <i>learned.</i>
u	"	oo in booty: múto, <i>dumb.</i>

### CONSONANTS.

The Consonants not given below have the same sound as in English.

c	has the sound of	{ k before a, o, u, h: as cáro, <i>dear</i> ; che, <i>what</i> .
		{ ch in cherry before e, i: as céra, <i>wax</i> ; città, <i>town</i> .
g	has the sound of	{ g in garden before a, o, u, h; as góla, <i>throat</i> ; ghiánda, <i>acorn</i> .
		{ g in general before e, i: as geláre, <i>to freeze</i> ; giórno, <i>day</i> .

gl when before i sounds like ll in billiards: as égli, *he*; except in negligere (*to neglect*) and its derivatives; when it sounds like gl in negligent. In all other cases gl has the English sound.

gn sounds like ni in union: as bágno, *bath*; rágno, *spider*.

h is never pronounced in Italian, and is used

(a) to harden the sound of the letters c and g when these precede the vowel e or i.

(b) to give different meanings to the same word: as anno, *year*; hanno (*they*) *have*.

j sounds like y in to yield and is used only to form the plural of a few words in io: as esémpio, *example*, esémpj or esémpii.

sc has the sound of { sc in scatter before a, o, u, h: as, scácco, *chess*.  
{ sh in shame before e, i: as, scímmia, *monkey*.

## PRONUNCIATION OF THE ITALIAN ALPHABET.

	Name.	Similar sounds in English.	
A	a	sounded like	a in <i>father</i> .
B	bi	"	be in <i>to be</i> .
C	ci	"	ch in <i>cherry</i> and c in <i>cottage</i> .
D	di	"	di in <i>discovery</i> .
E	e	"	a in <i>and</i> and <i>made</i> .
F	effe	"	effe in <i>effervescent</i> .
G	gi	"	ge in <i>general</i> and g in <i>garden</i> .
H	acca	"	aca in <i>academy</i> .
I	i	"	i in <i>middle</i> .
J	i lúngo	"	y in <i>to yield</i> .
L	elle	"	elle in <i>Ellesmere</i> .
M	emme	"	the English m.
N	enne	"	en in <i>enemy</i> .
O	o	"	o in <i>loss</i> and in <i>society</i> .
P	pi	"	pi in <i>pity</i> .
Q	qu	"	qu in <i>quarrel</i> .
R	erre	"	err in <i>to err</i> .
S	esse	"	esse in <i>essence</i> .
T	ti	"	tea in <i>tea</i> .
U	u	"	oo in <i>looty</i> .
V	vi	"	vi in <i>victory</i> .
Z	zeda	"	the English long zèd.

III.—THE ARTICLE (*l'Articolo*).

There are three Articles, the DEFINITE, the INDEFINITE, and the PARTITIVE.

## 1. DEFINITE ARTICLE.

	Masculine.	Feminine.
Singular	il, lo (l') *	la (l')
Plural	i, gli	le

Il is used before all masculine nouns beginning with a consonant, except the *impure s* and *z*; as, *il pàdre, the father*; *il fratèllo, the brother*. Lo is used before masculine nouns beginning with the *impure s*, *z* or a vowel, but the *o* is dropped before a vowel: as, *lo scóglio, the rock*; *lo zío, the uncle*; *l'ósso, the bone*, instead of *lo osso*. I is the plural of *il*, and *gli* of *lo*; but the *i* of *gli* is only dropped before another *i*: as, *lo scéttro, the sceptre*; *gli scéttri, the sceptres*; *l'ingannatóre, the cheat*; *gl'ingannatóri, the cheats*.

NOTE.—When a noun ends in *gli*, the *g* of the article is dropped to avoid the repetition of the same sound: as, *li scógli, the rocks*; *li artigli, the claws*.

NOTE.—The *impure s* is *s* followed by another consonant; as, *sb, sc, sd, &c.*

\* The Article comes from the Latin demonstrative pronoun *ille, illa*.

**La** is used with all feminine nouns; but drops the *a* and takes an apostrophe when before a vowel: as, *l' alliéva, the pupil (fem.)*, instead of *la alliéva*.

## 2. INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

Masculine.  
**uno, un.**

Feminine.  
**una, un'.**

**Uno** is used before masculine words beginning with the impure *s* or *z*; **un** is used before all other masculine nouns; **una** is used before all feminine nouns, except those beginning with a vowel, before which it drops the *a* and is written **un'**: as, *uno scácco, a chessboard*; *un amico, a friend (masc.)*; *una madre, a mother*; *un' amica, a friend (fem.)*.

[3. THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE is given on page 14.]

The Article always agrees in gender and number with the Noun.

Singular.		Examples.	Plural.	
<b>il</b> pádre,	<i>the father.</i>		<b>i</b> pádri,	<i>the fathers.</i>
<b>la</b> mádre,	<i>the mother.</i>		<b>le</b> mádri,	<i>the mothers.</i>
<b>lo</b> spécchio,	<i>the looking-glass.</i>		<b>gli</b> spécchi,	<i>the looking-glasses.</i>
<b>l'</b> amico,	<i>the friend (m.).</i>		<b>gli</b> amíci,	<i>the friends (m.).</i>
<b>l'</b> amíca,	<i>the friend (f.)</i>		<b>le</b> amíche,	<i>the friends (f.).</i>
<b>uno</b> spécchio,	<i>a looking-glass.</i>			
<b>un</b> cane,	<i>a dog.</i>			
<b>una</b> càmera,	<i>a room.</i>			
<b>un'</b> ànima,	<i>a soul.</i>			

## Present Tense of the Verb "To have," *avére*.

Singular.		Plural.
<b>io</b> ho,* <i>I have.</i>		<b>nóí</b> abbiámo, <i>we have.</i>
<b>tu</b> hái, <i>thou hast.</i>		<b>vóí</b> avéte, <i>you have.</i>
<b>égli</b> ha, <i>he has.</i>		<b>églino</b> háнно, <i>they (m.) have.</i>
<b>élla</b> ha, <i>she has.</i>		<b>élleno</b> háнно, <i>they (f.) have.</i>

## EXERCISE I.

1. Io ho l' orologio.
2. Io ho una camera.
3. Tu hai un cane.
4. Il padre ha l' orologio.
5. La madre ha un cane.
6. L' amico ha uno zio.
7. L' amica ha una zia.
8. Lo zio ha una madre.
9. L' uomo ha il cane.
10. L' uomo ha una camera.
11. Lo zio ha la camera.
12. La madre ha un orologio.

\* Many authors use the accent instead of the *h*: as, *ò, ài, à, àнно*. Note that the *h*, or the accent, are used to distinguish the verb from similar words of different meaning: as *o, or*; *ai, to the*; *a, to*; *anno, year*.

1. I have a dog. 2. We have a room. 3. The man has a friend (*masc.*). 4. The man has a dog. 5. The mother has a friend (*fem.*). 6. They (*masc.*) have a watch. 7. They (*fem.*) have a friend (*fem.*). 8. The friend (*fem.*) has an uncle. 9. I have the dog. 10. The man has a dog. 11. The mother has a watch. 12. The friend (*masc.*) has a room.

*Present Tense of the Verb "To have,"* *avére, used Interrogatively.*

Singular.		Plural.	
ho io ?	have I ?	abbiamo noi ?	have we ?
hai tu ?	hast thou ?	avete voi ?	have you ?
ha egli ?	has he ?	hanno églino ?	have they ( <i>m.</i> ) ?
ha ella ?	has she ?	hanno élleno ?	have they ( <i>f.</i> ) ?
sì, yes ; no, no ; e (before vowels ed), and ; che, what.			

#### EXERCISE II.

1. Avete voi un padre ed una madre ? 2. Ha egli uno zio ? Sì, egli ha uno zio. 3. Hai tu una zia ? 4. Avete voi un cane ? 5. Ha egli lo zucchero ? 6. Avete voi una camera ? Sì, io ho una camera. 7. Ha il cane un osso ? Sì, il cane ha un osso. 8. Ha l'amico la cera ? Sì, egli ha la cera. 9. Avete voi un allievo ? No, io ho un'allieva. 10. Ha ella un orologio ? 11. Che avete voi ? Io ho un cane. 12. Avete voi un coltello ? Sì, io ho un coltello.

1. Has he a friend (*masc.*) ? 2. Have they (*masc.*) a pupil (*masc.*) ? 3. Has the friend (*masc.*) a watch ? 4. Have you a pupil (*fem.*) ? 5. Has he a watch ? 6. Have they (*fem.*) an uncle ? Yes, they (*fem.*) have an uncle. 7. Have you a knife ? No, I have the sugar. 8. Have you a room ? Yes, I have a room. 9. Has he a dog ? No, he has a watch. 10. Has she the sugar ? Yes, she has the sugar. 11. Has the dog a bone ? Yes, the dog has a bone. 12. Have they (*masc.*) a room ? Yes, they (*masc.*) have a room.

#### IV.—THE SUBSTANTIVE (*il Sostantivo*).

##### 1. FORMATION OF THE PLURAL (*Formazione del Plurale*).

All nouns form their plural in *i*, except feminine nouns in *a*, which form their plural in *e*.

Singular.	Examples.	Plural.
il fratello,	<i>the brother.</i>	i fratelli, <i>the brothers.</i>
la mano,	<i>the hand.</i>	le mani, <i>the hands.</i>
il principe,	<i>the prince.</i>	i principi, <i>the princes.</i>
la madre,	<i>the mother.</i>	le madri, <i>the mothers.</i>
la casa,	<i>the house.</i>	le case, <i>the houses.</i>
il poeta,	<i>the poet.</i>	i poeti, <i>the poets.</i>

## NOTES.

1. Words ending in *ca*, *ga* take *h* after the *c* or *g* in the plural, in order to preserve to those letters the same hard sound they have in the singular: as, *il dúca*, *the duke*, *i dúchi*; *la rúga*, *the wrinkle*, *le rúghe*.

2. Words ending in *co*, *go* in the singular have their plural, some in *ci*, *gi*, and some in *chi*, *ghi*: *l'amíco*, *the friend*, *gli amíci*; *il sácco*, *the sack*, *i sácchi*; *il mágo*, *the magician*, *i mági*; *l'ágo*, *the needle*, *gli ághi*.

3. Monosyllables, words with the accent on the last syllable, and words ending in *i*, *ie*, or *s* do not change in the plural: as, *il re*, *the king*, *i re*; *la città*, *the town*, *le città*; *la spécie*, *species*, *le spécie*; *il lápis*, *the pencil*, *i lápis*.

4. Words ending in *cia*, *ccia*, *gia*, *ggia*, and *scia* drop the *i* in the plural: *la fáccia*, *the face*, *le fácce*; *la spiággia*, *the coast*, *le spiágge*.

5. The names of trees are masculine, and the names of fruits are feminine: as, *il nóce*, *the walnut-tree*, *la nóce*, *the walnut*; *il ciriégio*, *the cherry-tree*, *la ciriégia*, *the cherry*, etc. The exceptions are: *la quércia*, *the oak*, *il fico*, which means *the fig-tree* and *the fig*; *il limóne*, *the lemon-tree* and *the lemon*; and *l'ananáso*, *the pine-apple tree* and *the pine apple*.

The following words are irregular in the plural:—

<i>Dío</i> ,	<i>God.</i>	<i>gii déi</i> ,	<i>the gods.</i>
<i>il búe</i> ,	<i>the ox.</i>	<i>i buói</i> ,	<i>the oxen.</i>
<i>mílle</i> ,	<i>a thousand.</i>	<i>míla</i> ,	<i>thousands.</i>
<i>la móglie</i> ,	<i>the wife.</i>	<i>le mógli.</i>	<i>the wives.</i>
<i>l'uóino</i> ,	<i>the man.</i>	<i>gli uómini</i> ,	<i>the men.</i>
<i>l'uóvo</i> ,	<i>the egg.</i>	<i>le uóva</i> ,	<i>the eggs.</i>

[Other Irregular Plurals to be passed over by the pupil at present.

1. The following masculine nouns in *o* have, besides the plural in *i*, a feminine plural in *a*, sometimes *e*, in some cases with a different signification (the plurals placed in brackets are less frequent):—

Singular. Masculine.	Masculine.	Plural.	Feminine.
<i>l'anélló</i> , <i>the ring</i>	<i>gli anélli</i>		( <i>le anélla</i> ).
<i>il bráccio</i> , <i>the arm</i>	( <i>i brácci</i> )		<i>le bráccia</i> .
<i>il budélló</i> , <i>the gut</i>	<i>i budélli</i>		<i>le budélla</i> , <i>bu- délle</i> .
<i>il calcágnó</i> , <i>the heel</i>	( <i>i calcágni</i> )		<i>le calcáigna</i> .
<i>il castélló</i> , <i>the castle</i>	<i>i castélli</i>		( <i>le castélla</i> ).
<i>il cervélló</i> , <i>the brain</i>	<i>i cervélli</i> , <i>mind</i>		<i>le cervélla</i> , <i>brains</i> .

Singular. Masculine.	Masculine.	Plural. Feminine.
il ciglio, <i>the eyebrow</i>	(i cigli)	le ciglia.
il coltello, <i>the knife</i>	i coltelli	(le coltella).
il corno, <i>the horn</i>	i corni, <i>cornets</i>	le corna, <i>horns</i> .
il ditello, <i>the arm-pit</i>	(i ditelli)	le ditella, ditelle.
il dito, <i>the finger</i>	(i diti)	le dita.
il filo, <i>the thread</i>	i fili ( <i>of a plot</i> )	le fila ( <i>of cloth</i> ).
il fondamento, <i>the foundation</i>	i fondamenti ( <i>used abstractedly</i> )	le fondamenta ( <i>of masonry</i> ).
il frutto, <i>the fruit</i>	i frutti, <i>results</i>	le frutta, <i>the fruits</i> .
il fúso, <i>the spindle</i>	i fúsi	(le fúsa).
il gésto, <i>the gesture</i>	i gésti, <i>gestures</i>	le gésta, <i>great deeds</i> .
il ginocchio, <i>the knee</i>	(i ginocchi)	le ginocchia.
il gómite, <i>the elbow</i>	i gómiti	(le gómite).
il grido, <i>the shout</i>	(i gridi)	le grida.
il lábbro, <i>the lip</i>	(i lábbri)	le lábbra.
il légno, <i>the wood</i>	i légni, <i>ships</i>	le légna, <i>légne, firewood</i> .
il lenzuólo, <i>the sheet</i>	(i lenzuóli)	le lenzuóla.
il mémbro, <i>the limb</i>	i mémbri, <i>members</i>	le mémbra, <i>limbs</i> .
il múro, <i>the wall</i>	i múri, <i>walls (of a house)</i>	le múra <i>walls (of a town)</i> .
l' orécchio, <i>the ear</i>	(gli orécchi)	le orécchia, orécchie.
l' ósso, <i>the bone</i>	gli óssi, <i>bones</i>	le óssa ( <i>remains of the dead, ashes</i> ).
il pómo, <i>the apple</i>	i pómi	(le póma).
il púgno, <i>the fist</i>	i púgni, <i>blows with fist</i>	le púgna, <i>fists</i> .
il qua-irélllo, <i>brick, arrow</i>	i quadrélli, <i>bricks</i>	le quadriella, <i>arrows</i> .
il riso, <i>laughter, rice</i>	i rasi, <i>rice</i>	le risa, <i>laughter</i> .
il sácco, <i>sack</i>	i sácchi	(le sácca).
lo strído, <i>shout</i>	(gli strídi)	le strída.
il témpo, <i>the time, weather</i>	i témpi, <i>times, weathers</i>	le quátro témpora, <i>the four ember-weeks</i> .
il vestígio, <i>the track, trace</i>	(i vestígi)	le vestígia, <i>vestige</i> .
il vestiménto, <i>clothing</i>	(i vestiménti)	le vestimenta.

2. The following masculine nouns in *o* have always the plural feminine in *a* :—

il centináio, <i>the hundred,</i>	le centináia.
il cuóio, <i>the leather,</i>	le cuóia.
il míglio, <i>the mile,</i>	le míglia.
il migliáio, <i>the thousand,</i>	le migliáia.
il móggio, <i>the bucket,</i>	le móggia.
il páio, <i>the pair,</i>	le páia.
il rúbbio, <i>four bushels,</i>	le rúbbia.
lo stáio, <i>the bushel,</i>	le stáia.

3. The following nouns are only used in the singular :

la cancréna, <i>the gangrene.</i>	la próle, <i>the offspring.</i>
la cáríe, <i>rotteness of bones.</i>	la róba, <i>the property.</i>
la máne, <i>the morning.</i>	la rosolía, <i>the measles.</i>
la pásqua, <i>Easter.</i>	la stírpe, <i>the pedigree.</i>
la progénie, <i>the descendants.</i>	

4. The following words have no singular when meaning,

gli annáli, <i>the annals.</i>	le fáuci, <i>throat (of a wild beast).</i>
le basétte, <i>the whiskers.</i>	le fórbici, <i>the scissors.</i>
i báffi, <i>the moustaches.</i>	i guái, <i>the woes.</i>
i calzóni, <i>the trousers.</i>	le interióra, <i>the entrails.</i>
le carézze, <i>the caresses.</i>	le mólle, <i>the tongs.</i>
i dolci, <i>the sweetmeats.</i>	i mostacchi, <i>the moustaches.</i>
l' eséque, <i>the funeral.</i>	le mutánde, <i>the drawers.</i>
le nózze, <i>the wedding.</i>	i vánni, <i>the pinions.</i>
gli sponsáli, <i>the betrothal.</i>	le viscere, <i>the entrails.</i>
le ténebre, <i>the darkness.</i>	i víveri, <i>the victuals.</i>

5. The following nouns have a different meaning in their plural:—

il céppo, <i>the trunk of a tree.</i>	i céppi, <i>the fetters.</i>
la dote, <i>the dowry.</i>	le doti, <i>the qualities.</i>
il férrò, <i>the iron.</i>	i férrì, <i>the fetters.</i>
il fásto, <i>the luxury.</i>	i fasti, <i>the annals.</i>
il genitóre, <i>the father.</i>	i genitóri, <i>the parents.</i>
la génte, <i>the people.</i>	le génti, <i>the nations.</i>
la grázia, <i>grace, free pardon.</i>	le grázie, <i>thanks.</i>
il natále, <i>Christmas.</i>	i natáli, <i>the birth.</i>
il ráme, <i>the ore (metal).</i>	i rámi, <i>the engraved plates.</i>
il sále, <i>the salt.</i>	i sáli, <i>the witticisms.</i>
la vacánza, <i>the vacancy (of an office).</i>	le vacánze, <i>the holidays.]</i>

*dúe, two; tre, three; vedúto, visto, seen.*

#### EXERCISE III.

1. Due uomini hanno veduto un cavallo. 2. Le donne hanno gli aghi. 3. Io ho gli specchi. 4. Io ho visto un ragno. 5. Ha egli un potere? Sì, egli ha due poderi. 6. Ella ha le frutta. 7. La moglie ha tre aghi. 8. Noi abbiamo due mani. 9. Lo zio ha due sorelle. 10. Hai tu due uova? No, io ho un uovo. 11. La casa ha tre porte. 12. Egli ha uno specchio.

1. She has two needles. 2. We have three houses. 3. He has two uncles. 4. He has an estate. 5. We have the fruits. 6. He has a sister. 7. She has three eggs. 8. Have you two horses? No, I have one horse. 9. The house has two doors. 10. Have you an aunt? I have three aunts. 11. The woman has a needle. 12. We have three horses.

*sóno, are; quáttro, four; cínque, five; ánche, also; o, or.*

#### EXERCISE IV.

##### A.

1. Avete voi tre, o quattro case? Io ho cinque case. 2. Avete voi uno zio? Sì, ed io ho anche una zia. 3. Ella ha una figlia. 4. La mano ha cinque dita. 5. Egli ha tre figli e due figlie. 6. La casa ha quattro finestre. 7. Io ho due fratelli. 8. Tu hai tre sorelle ed un fratello. 9. La zia ha quattro sorelle. 10. Il padre ha tre fratelli. 11. La casa ha una porta e cinque finestre. 12. Noi abbiamo una sorella.



1. I have two houses. 2. The house has two doors. 3. The house has five windows. 4. The sister has five needles. 5. Have you a brother? I have a brother and two sisters. 6. The mother has five sons and three daughters. 7. The uncle has a brother. 8. The aunt has two sisters. 9. The hands have fingers. 10. Have you five horses? No, I have two horses. 11. Have you a knife? No, I have a bone. 12. The man has a watch, two horses and three houses.

## B.

1. La donna ha cinque figli. 2. Ella ha anche due figlie. 3. Io ho due cappelli. 4. Le due donne sono sorelle. 5. Il padre e lo zio sono amici. 6. Hai tu le noci? No, io ho le arance. 7. Noi abbiamo due spazzole. 8. Avete voi il sapone? Sì, ed io ho anche l'asciugamano. 9. La figlia ha due sorelle. 10. Il figlio ha due fratelli. 11. La sorella ha una spazzola. 12. Il padre ha una forchetta.

1. I have a towel. 2. He has a hat. 3. She has two oranges. 4. He has a brother and also a sister. 5. Have you a fork? Yes, and I have also a knife. 6. She has a daughter. 7. They (*masc.*) have five walnuts. 8. The sister has two oranges and three walnuts. 9. I have a brush. 10. I have an uncle and an aunt. 11. Have you an uncle? Yes, and I have also an aunt. 12. We have two oranges.

2. FORMATION OF THE GENITIVE (*Genitivo*).

The preposition *of* is expressed in Italian by *di*, which is thus used with the article.

	Singular.		Plural.		
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Masculine.	Feminine.	
<i>Definite Article</i>	del dello dell'	della dell'	dei degli	delle	} <i>of the.</i>
<i>Indefinite Article</i>	d' uno, d' un, d' una, d' un'				
<b>Del</b>	a contraction of di il.		<b>Dei</b>	a contraction of di i.	
<b>Dello, dell'</b>	" di lo.		<b>Degli</b>	" di gli.	
<b>Della, dell'</b>	" di la.		<b>Delle</b>	" di le.	

## Examples.

	Singular.		Plural.
del padre	<i>of the father.</i>	dei padri	<i>of the fathers.</i>
dello zio	<i>of the uncle.</i>	degli zii	<i>of the uncles.</i>
dell' amico	<i>of the friend (m.)</i>	degli amici	<i>of the friends (m.)</i>
della madre	<i>of the mother.</i>	delle madri	<i>of the mothers.</i>
dell' amica	<i>of the friend (f.)</i>	delle amiche	<i>of the friends (f.)</i>
d' uno specchio	<i>of a looking-glass.</i>		
d' un cappello	<i>of a hat.</i>		
d' una camera	<i>of a room.</i>		
d' un' anima	<i>of a soul.</i>		

*è, is; d'ove, óve, where; quì, here.*

## EXERCISE V.

1. L'arte del pittore. 2. Il cappello del fratello è quì. 3. Dov'è (*for dove è*) il libro del fratello? Quì. 4. Il colore della faccia.

5. La faccia dell'uomo. 6. Le strida della scimmia. 7. Dove sono gli amici dello zio? Eglino sono quì. 8. Dov'è la sedia della zia? La sedia della zia è quì. 9. Il giardino dello zio. 10. Il cappello della cugina. 11. Il cavallo del cugino. 12. Le dita della mano.

1. The books of the cousin (*masc.*) are here. 2. The hat of the man. 3. The garden of the house. 4. The windows of the houses. 5. The room of the uncle. 6. The colour of the hands. 7. The friends of the cousin (*masc.*). 8. The horses of the uncle. 9. The chairs of the room. 10. The house of the painter. 11. The house of the aunt. 12. The hats of the brothers are here.

### 3. FORMATION OF THE DATIVE (*Dativo*).

The prepositions *to* and *at* are translated in Italian by a (before a vowel *ad*), which is thus used with the article.

	Singular.		Plural.	
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Masculine.	Feminine.
Definite Article	al	àlla	ai	àlle
	àllo	all'	àgli	
	all'			

Indefinite Article *ad úno, ad un, ad úna, ad un'.*

Al	a contraction of a il.	Ai	a contraction of a i.
Allo, all'	„ a lo.	Agli	„ a gli.
Alla, all'	„ a la.	Alle	„ a le

Singular.		Plural.	
Examples.			
al pádre	<i>to the father.</i>	ai pádri	<i>to the fathers.</i>
àllo zio	<i>to the uncle.</i>	àgli zii	<i>to the uncles.</i>
all' amíco	<i>to the friend (m.)</i>	àgli amíci	<i>to the friends (m.)</i>
àlla mádre	<i>to the mother.</i>	àlle mádri	<i>to the mothers.</i>
all' amíca	<i>to the friend (f)</i>	àlle amíche	<i>to the friends (f.)</i>
ad úno spéechio	<i>to a looking-glass.</i>		
ad ún cappélllo	<i>to a hat.</i>		
ad úna càmera	<i>to a room.</i>		
ad un' ànima	<i>to a soul.</i>		

Masculine :	(il) mío	(i) miéi	} my.
Feminine :	(la) mía	(le) míe	
	chi, who? whom?	dáto, given.	
	io ámo, I love, I like.	io do, I give.	

### EXERCISE VI.

1. Io do un cappello alla sorella. 2. Avete voi dato un anello alla madre? 3. Io do le frutta alla figlia. 4. Io amo il mio bastone. 5. Lo zio ha dato uno specchio alla zia. 6. Io ho dato il giornale allo zio. 7. Io do la mia penna alla sorella. 8. L'allieva ha dato

una penna all' allievo. 9. Egli ha dato un libro alla madre. 10. Noi abbiamo dato un quadro al fratello. 11. Lo zio ha dato il mio bastone al padre. 12. Io ho dato il mio cappello al fratello.

1. I have given my ring to the aunt. 2. He has given my stick to the uncle. 3. She has given a hat to the daughter. 4. She has given a pen to the aunt. 5. We have given a newspaper to the father. 6. They (*masc.*) have given a painting to the uncle. 7. I have given my hat to the friend (*masc.*). 8. The uncle has given a pen to my friends (*masc.*). 9. He has given a book to the daughter. 10. They (*masc.*) have given my newspapers to the pupils (*masc.*). 11. I like my painting. 12. He has given a horse to the man.

#### 4. FORMATION OF THE ABLATIVE (*Ablativo*).

The *Ablative* is formed in Italian with the prepositions *da*, *from*; *in*, *in*; *su*, *upon*, *on*; *per*, *by*; *con*, *with*; *fra*, *tra*, *among*; which are thus used with the article.

	Singular		Plural.	
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Masculine.	Feminine.
Def. Art.	<i>dal</i> , <i>dállo</i> , <i>dall'</i>	<i>dál</i> la, <i>dall'</i>	<i>dai</i> , <i>dágli</i>	<i>dál</i> le <i>from the.</i>
	<i>nel</i> , <i>néllo</i> , <i>nell'</i>	<i>nél</i> la, <i>nell'</i>	<i>nei</i> , <i>négli</i>	<i>nél</i> le <i>in the.</i>
	<i>sul</i> , <i>súllo</i> , <i>sull'</i>	<i>súl</i> la, <i>sull'</i>	<i>sui</i> , <i>súgli</i>	<i>súl</i> le <i>on the.</i>
	<i>pel</i> , <i>per lo</i> , <i>per l'</i>	<i>per la</i> , <i>per l'</i>	<i>pei</i> , <i>per gli</i> , <i>per le</i>	<i>by the.</i>
	<i>col</i> , <i>con lo</i> , <i>con l'</i>	<i>con la</i> , <i>con l'</i>	<i>coi</i> , <i>con gli</i> , <i>con le</i>	<i>with the.</i>
Indef. Art.	<i>da úno</i> , <i>da un</i>	<i>da úna</i> , <i>da un'</i>		<i>from a, an.</i>
	<i>in úno</i> , <i>in un</i>	<i>in úna</i> , <i>in un'</i>		<i>in a, an.</i>
	<i>sur úno</i> , <i>sur un</i>	<i>sur úna</i> , <i>sur un'</i>		<i>on a, an.</i>
	<i>per úno</i> , <i>per un</i>	<i>per úna</i> , <i>per un'</i>		<i>by a, an.</i>
	<i>con úno</i> , <i>con un</i>	<i>con úna</i> , <i>con un'</i>		<i>with a, an.</i>

*Dal* a contraction of *da il*.

*Dállo*, *dall'* „ *da lo*.

*Dál*la, *dall'* „ *da la*.

*Dai* a contraction of *da i*.

*Dágli* „ *da gli*.

*Dál*le „ *da le*.

The same contractions take place with the other prepositions (see p. 12), except with *fra* and *tra*, which are generally not contracted with the article.

Examples.			
	Singular.		Plural.
<i>dal</i> pádre	<i>from the father.</i>	<i>dai</i> pádri	<i>from the fathers.</i>
<i>dállo</i> zío	<i>from the uncle.</i>	<i>dágli</i> zíi	<i>from the uncles.</i>
<i>dall'</i> amíco	<i>from the friend (m.)</i>	<i>dágli</i> amíci	<i>from the friends (m.)</i>
<i>dál</i> la mádre	<i>from the mother.</i>	<i>dál</i> le mádri	<i>from the mothers.</i>
<i>dall'</i> amíca	<i>from the friend (f.)</i>	<i>dál</i> le amíche	<i>from the friends (f.)</i>
<i>da úno</i> spécchio	<i>from a looking-glass.</i>		
<i>da un</i> cappéllo	<i>from a hat.</i>		
<i>da úna</i> cámera	<i>from a room.</i>		
<i>da un'</i> ánima	<i>from a soul.</i>		

io vengo, *I come* ; egli viene, *he comes* ; io vado, *I go*.

## EXERCISE VII.

## A.

1. Io vengo dalla città. 2. Egli viene dal giardino. 3. Ella viene dall'albergo. 4. Io vado alla chiesa. 5. Ella viene dalla ferrovia. 6. Egli viene dalla zia. 7. Io vado per la strada. 8. Ella è con la madre. 9. Ella viene dal teatro. 10. Il servo viene coi libri. 11. Il dottore viene dalla casa. 12. Lo speziale viene col dottore.

1. I come from the church. 2. He comes from the hotel. 3. I go to the hotel. 4. She comes by the railway. 5. I come from the street. 6. She comes with the books. 7. The uncle comes with the doctor. 8. I come from the church. 9. She is with my brother and with my sister. 10. The aunt comes from the town. 11. I go with the mother. 12. She comes from the garden.

egli va, *he goes*.

oggi, *to-day*.

## B.

1. Il padre va alla chiesa. 2. La madre va con la zia. 3. Egli va oggi col fratello. 4. Ella va al teatro. 5. Il dottore va oggi all'albergo. 6. Io vengo dal teatro. 7. Il servo va all'osteria. 8. Io vado oggi alla ferrovia. 9. Egli è nella strada. 10. Il libro è sulla tavola. 11. Ella è nella strada con la zia. 12. Ella è nella camera.

1. He goes to the railway. 2. She goes to (the) church. 3. He comes from the house. 4. She comes from the theatre. 5. He is at the hotel. 6. The pen is on the table. 7. I go to the hotel with my servant. 8. I come from the railway. 9. My brother goes with my sister. 10. He goes to the garden. 11. She comes from the garden. 12. I go to-day to the hotel.

RECAPITULATION OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE AND OF ITS  
USE WITH THE PREPOSITIONS.

	Masc. Sing.		F. Sing.	Masc. Plur.		F. Plur.	
di, of . .	il .	lo .	la .	i .	gli .	le .	<i>the</i>
a, to . .	del .	dello	della	dei .	dègli	delle	<i>of the</i>
da, from .	al .	állo	àlla	ai .	àgli	àlle	<i>to the</i>
in, in . .	dal .	dállo	dàlla	dai .	dàgli	dàlle	<i>from the</i>
su, on . .	nel .	nèllo	nèlla	nei .	nègli	nèlle	<i>in the</i>
per, by .	sul .	súllo	sùlla	sui .	sùgli	sùlle	<i>on the</i>
con, with .	pel .	per lo	per la	pei .	per gli	per le	<i>by the</i>
	col .	con lo	con la	coi .	con gli	con le	<i>with the.</i>

## RECAPITULATION OF THE DECLENSION OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.\*

## 1. Nouns beginning with a consonant:—

Masculine.		Singular.	Feminine.	
Nom.	il pádre,	<i>the father.</i>	la mádre,	<i>the mother.</i>
Gen.	del pádre,	<i>of the father.</i>	dèlla mádre,	<i>of the mother.</i>
Dat.	al pádre,	<i>to the father.</i>	àlla mádre,	<i>to the mother.</i>
Abl.	dal pádre,	<i>from the father.</i>	dàlla mádre,	<i>from the mother.</i>
Plural.				
Nom.	i pádri,	<i>the fathers.</i>	le mádri,	<i>the mothers.</i>
Gen.	dei pádri,	<i>of the fathers.</i>	dèlle mádri,	<i>of the mothers.</i>
Dat.	ai pádri,	<i>to the fathers.</i>	àlle mádri,	<i>to the mothers.</i>
Abl.	dai pádri,	<i>from the fathers.</i>	dàlle mádri,	<i>from the mothers.</i>

## 2. Nouns beginning with z, or s followed by a consonant:—

Masculine.		Singular.	Feminine.	
Nom.	lo scúdo,	<i>the shield.</i>	la scátola,	<i>the box.</i>
Gen.	dèllo scúdo,	<i>of the shield.</i>	dèlla scátola,	<i>of the box.</i>
Dat.	állo scúdo,	<i>to the shield.</i>	àlla scátola,	<i>to the box.</i>
Abl.	dállo scúdo,	<i>from the shield.</i>	dàlla scátola,	<i>from the box.</i>
Plural.				
Nom.	gli scúdi,	<i>the shields.</i>	le scátole,	<i>the boxes.</i>
Gen.	dègli scúdi,	<i>of the shields.</i>	dèlle scátole,	<i>of the boxes.</i>
Dat.	àgli scúdi,	<i>to the shields.</i>	àlle scátole,	<i>to the boxes.</i>
Abl.	dàgli scúdi,	<i>from the shields.</i>	dàlle scátole,	<i>from the boxes.</i>

## 3. Nouns beginning with a vowel:—

Masculine.		Singular.	Feminine.	
Nom.	l' amíco,	<i>the friend.</i>	l' ánima,	<i>the soul.</i>
Gen.	dell' amíco,	<i>of the friend.</i>	dell' ánima,	<i>of the soul.</i>
Dat.	all' amíco,	<i>to the friend.</i>	all' ánima,	<i>to the soul.</i>
Abl.	dall' amíco,	<i>from the friend.</i>	dall' ánima,	<i>from the soul.</i>
Plural.				
Nom.	gli amíci,	<i>the friends.</i>	le ánime,	<i>the souls.</i>
Gen.	dègli amíci,	<i>of the friends.</i>	dèlle ánime,	<i>of the souls.</i>
Dat.	àgli amíci,	<i>to the friends.</i>	àlle ánime,	<i>to the souls.</i>
Abl.	dàgli amíci,	<i>from the friends.</i>	dàlle ánime,	<i>from the souls.</i>

\* The Accusative of Nouns is like the Nominative

V.—THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE (*Articolo partitivo*).

The Partitive Article *some* (or *any*), is the same as the Genitive of the Definite Article (see p. 9): as, io ho del vino, *I have some wine*; della birra, *some beer*.

NOTE 1.—When the word is used in an indefinite and general sense, the Italian is like the English: as, io ho libri e pénne, *I have books and pens*.

## EXERCISE VIII.

1. Io ho degli amici. 2. Hai tu del burro? Sì, io ho del burro. 3. Egli ha della carne. 4. Ella ha del danaro. 5. Eglino hanno del formaggio. 6. Elleno hanno del latte. 7. Avete voi del pane? Sì, io ho pane e formaggio. 8. Ella ha delle pere. 9. Noi abbiamo del tè. 10. Eglino non hanno vino, ma hanno della birra. 11. Ella ha dell'acqua. 12. Io non ho danaro.

1. I have some water. 2. He has some wine. 3. Has she any butter? Yes, she has butter and eggs. 4. We have some butter. 5. Have you any water? Yes, I have some water. 6. I have some pears. 7. They (*masc.*) have some wine. 8. You have some meat. 9. Have you some bread? Yes, I have some bread. 10. We have given some money to the man. 11. I have given some pears to my sister. 12. They (*fem.*) have given some beer to my brother.

NOTE 2.—When the Partitive Noun is in the Genitive case, or expresses the *part* of a thing, the preposition *di* is used without the Article: as, una bottiglia di vino, *a bottle of wine*.

## EXERCISE IX.

1. Io ho un bicchiere di vino. 2. Tu hai una tazza di tè. 3. Ella ha degli abiti di seta. 4. Il mio orologio è d'oro. 5. Noi abbiamo delle bottiglie di birra. 6. La mia spada è d'acciaio. 7. Il tuo bastone è d'ebano. 8. La casa del cugino è di marmo. 9. Io ho degli stivali di pelle. 10. Avete voi del caffè, o della cioccolata? 11. La tavola è di legno. 12. L'anello è d'oro.

1. I have a cup of tea. 2. He has a glass of water. 3. She has some needles of steel. 4. We have two sticks of ebony. 5. You have a house of marble. 6. They (*masc.*) have boots of leather. 7. They (*fem.*) have some dresses of silk. 8. We have a table of wood. 9. You have a cup of coffee. 10. I have a cup of chocolate. 11. Thou hast a bottle of wine. 12. She has a hat of silk.

---

# VI.—PROPER NAMES (*Nómi pròpri*).

1. The Article is omitted before,

(a) Christian names : as, *Cárlò, Charles*.

(b) Names of towns, except *il Vásto, il Cáiro, la Mirándola, l'Áia, the Hague*.

Names of countries, when governed by the preposition *in* or *di*, are used *with* or *without* the Article : as, *in Inghiltérra, in England* ; *in Itália, in Italy* ; *nella Cina, in China*.

2. The Article is used with the names of countries, or parts of the world : as,

La Fráncia,	<i>France.</i>	La Prússia,	<i>Prussia.</i>
La Spáña,	<i>Spain.</i>	L' Áustria,	<i>Austria.</i>
Il Portogállo,	<i>Portugal.</i>	La Turchía,	<i>Turkey.</i>
L' Itália,	<i>Italy.</i>	La Cina,	<i>China.</i>
La Svízzera,	<i>Switzerland.</i>	L' Índia,	<i>India.</i>
La Germánia,	<i>Germany.</i>	Gli Státi Uníti,	<i>The United States.</i>
Il Bélgio,	<i>Belgium.</i>	Il Brasile,	<i>Brazil.</i>
L' Olánda,	<i>Holland.</i>	L' Európa,	<i>Europe.</i>
La Danimárca,	<i>Denmark.</i>	L' Ásia,	<i>Asia.</i>
La Svézia,	<i>Sweden.</i>	L' África,	<i>Africa.</i>
La Norvégia,	<i>Norway.</i>	L' América,	<i>America.</i>
La Rússia,	<i>Russia.</i>	L' Austrália,	<i>Australia.</i>

3. The Article is omitted before the names of islands, except the following and a few others :—

L' Inghiltérra,	<i>England.</i>	La Sicília,	<i>Sicily.</i>
L' Irlánda,	<i>Ireland.</i>	La Sardégna,	<i>Sardinia.</i>
L' Élba,	<i>Elba.</i>	La Córsc'a,	<i>Corsica.</i>

4. The article is often used with family names : as, *il Machiavélli, il Tásso, etc.*

NOTE.—The English Possessive case, *John's hat, Emma's sister*, is rendered in Italian by the Genitive : as, *il cappello di Giovánni (the hat of John), la sorélla di Émma (the sister of Emma)* ; the nominative always preceding the genitive.

## EXERCISE X.

### A.

1. Carlo è mio fratello. 2. Emma è mia sorella. 3. Io ho i guanti di Sofia. 4. Dov'è la zia? Ella è a Londra. 5. Dov'è il cappello di Pietro? Il cappello di Pietro è sulla tavola. 6. Avete voi un bastone? Sì, io ho il bastone di Giovanni. 7. Io ho il cappello di Carlo. 8. Maria è la figlia della signora Scalchi. 9. È ella qui? No, ella è a Parigi. 10. Dov'è il padre? Egli è a Roma. 11. Dov'è il figlio del signore Stoppino? Egli è a Milano. 12. Avete voi un cappello? Sì, io ho il mio cappello.

1. Peter is my brother. 2. Mary is my sister. 3. I have my brother's gloves. 4. Where is John? He is in Paris. 5. Where is my brother? He is in London. 6. Where is Mrs. Johnson? She is in Milan. 7. Have you my hat? No, I have my hat. 8. Where is Peter's cousin (*masc.*)? He is in Rome. 9. Have you

my uncle's stick? 10. Have you given some money to the man? Yes, sir. 11. Who has the gloves? The father has the gloves. 12. He has Mary's gloves.

**B.**

1. Parigi è la capitale della Francia. 2. Londra è la capitale dell'Inghilterra. 3. Mio cugino è a Berlino. 4. Mio padre è in Inghilterra. 5. Dresda è in Sassonia. 6. Il Belgio è in Europa. 7. Il Brasile è in America. 8. Mio zio è in Asia. 9. Io vengo dall'Inghilterra. 10. Io vado oggi con mio fratello al teatro. 11. Dov'è mia zia? Al teatro. 12. Io ho il cappello di Pietro.

1. My father is in Asia. 2. Holland is in Europe. 3. My brother is in Germany. 4. My uncle is in China. 5. My cousin (*masc.*) is in Italy. 6. My cousin (*fem.*) is in Paris. 7. My sister is in Russia. 8. Where is Charles? He is in London. 9. She is with my sister in the room. 10. I have John's horse. 11. I have my uncle's newspaper. 12. We have the pupils' (*fem.*) books.

## VII.—THE VERB *AVÉRE*, *to have*.

### INDICATIVE MOOD (*Indicativo*).

#### PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

Singular.		Plural.	
io ho,	<i>I have.</i>	nói abbiámo,	<i>we have.</i>
tu hái,	<i>thou hast.</i>	vói avéte,	<i>you have.</i>
égli ha,	<i>he has.</i>	églino hánno,	<i>they have.</i>
élla ha,	<i>she has.</i>	élleno hánno,	

#### IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfétto*).

io avéva,	<i>I had.</i>	nói avevámo,	<i>we had.</i>
tu avévi,	<i>thou hadst.</i>	vói aveváte,	<i>you had.</i>
égli avéva,	<i>he had.</i>	églino avévano,	<i>they had.</i>

#### PAST DEFINITE TENSE (*Passáto Defínito*).\*

io ébbi,	<i>I had.</i>	nói avémmo,	<i>we had.</i>
tu avésti,	<i>thou hadst.</i>	vói avéste,	<i>you had.</i>
égli ebbe,	<i>he had.</i>	églino ebbero,	<i>they had.</i>

#### FUTURE TENSE (*Futúro*).

io avrò,	<i>I shall have.</i>	nói avrémo,	<i>we shall have.</i>
tu avrái,	<i>thou wilt have.</i>	vói avréte,	<i>you will have.</i>
égli avrà,	<i>he will have.</i>	églino avránno,	<i>they will have.</i>

#### COMPOUND TENSES (*Témpi Compósti*).

*avúto, had.*

#### PAST INDEFINITE TENSE (*Passáto Indefínito*).

io ho avúto,	<i>I have had.</i>	nói abbiámo avúto,	<i>we have had.</i>
tu hái avúto,	<i>thou hast had.</i>	vói avéte avúto,	<i>you have had.</i>
égli ha avúto,	<i>he has had.</i>	églino hánno avúto,	<i>they have had.</i>

\* See page 48 for an explanation of the difference between the Imperfect and the Past Definite.



PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

Singular.

io avéva avúto, *I had had.*  
 tu avévi avúto, *thou hadst had.*  
 égli avéva avúto, *he had had.*

Plural.

nói avevámo avúto, *we had had.*  
 vói aveváte avúto, *you had had.*  
 églino avévano avúto, *they had had.*

PAST ANTERIOR TENSE (*Passáto Rimóto*).

io ébbi avúto, *I had had.*  
 tu avésti avúto, *thou hadst had.*  
 égli ebbe avúto, *he had had.*

nói avémmo avúto, *we had had.*  
 vói avéste avúto, *you had had.*  
 églino ebbero avúto, *they had had.*

FUTURE ANTERIOR TENSE (*Futúro Anterióre*).

io avrò avúto, *I shall have had.*  
 tu avrái avúto, *thou wilt have had.*  
 égli avrà avúto, *he will have had.*

nói avrémo avúto, *we shall have had.*  
 vói avréte avúto, *you will have had.*  
 églino avránno avúto, *they will have had.*

CONDITIONAL MOOD (*Condizionále*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

io avréi, *I should have.*  
 tu avrésti, *thou wouldst have.*  
 égli avrébbe, *he would have.*

nói avrémmo *we should have.*  
 vói avréste, *you would have.*  
 églino avrébbero, *they would have.*

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

## First Form.

io avréi avúto, *I should have had.*  
 tu avrésti avúto, *thou wouldst have had.*  
 égli avrébbe avúto, *he would have had.*

nói avrémmo avúto, *we should have had.*  
 vói avréste avúto, *you would have had.*  
 églino avrébbero avúto, *they would have had.*

## Second Form.

io avéssi avúto, *I should have had.*  
 tu avéssi avúto, *thou wouldst have had.*  
 égli avésse avúto, *he would have had.*

nói avéssimo avúto, *we should have had.*  
 vói avéste avúto, *you would have had.*  
 églino avéssero avúto, *they would have had.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD (*Imperatívo*).

ábbi tu, *have thou.*  
 ábbia égli, *let him have.*

abbiamo nós, *let us have.*  
 abbiate vói, *have ye.*  
 abbiano églino, *let them have.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (*Soggiuntivo*)PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

Singular.		Plural.	
ch' io ábbia,	that I may	che nói abbiámo,	that we may
che tu ábbia,	that thou mayst	che vói abbiáte,	that you may
ch' égli ábbia,	that he may	ch' églino ábbiano,	that they may

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfétto*).

ch' io avéssi,	that I might	che nói avéssimo,	that we
che tu avéssi,	that thou	che vói avéste,	that you
	mightst	ch' églino avés-	that they
ch' égli avésse,	that he might	sero,	

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

ch' io ábbia avúto,	that I may	che nói abbiámo	that we may
che tu ábbi avúto,	that thou	avúto,	
	mayst	che vói abbiáte	that you may
ch' égli ábbia avúto,	that he	avúto,	
	may	ch' églino ábbia-	that they may
		no avúto,	

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

ch' io avéssi	that I might	che nói avéssimo	that we might
avúto,		avúto,	
che tu avéssi	that thou	che vói avéste	that you might
avúto,	mightst	avúto,	
ch' égli avésse	that he might	ch' églino avés-	that they
avúto,		sero avúto,	might

INFINITIVE MOOD (*Infínito*).PRESENT (*Presénte*).PAST (*Passáto*).

avére,	to have.	avér avúto,	to have had.
--------	----------	-------------	--------------

GERUND (*Gerúndio*).PRESENT (*Presénte*).PAST (*Passáto*).

avéndo,	having.	avéndo avúto,	having had.
---------	---------	---------------	-------------

PARTICIPLES (*Participi*).PRESENT (*Presénte*).PAST (*Passáto*).

avénte,	having.	Sing. avúto (m.), avúta (f.)	} had
		Plur. avúti (m.), avúte (f.)	

## RULES ON THE USE OF THE VERB.

1. The Personal Pronoun is often omitted in Italian; as, Ho vedúto mío pádre, *I have seen my father.*

2. The interrogative is the same as in English; as, Ho io? *Have I?* Avéva io? *Had I?* See p. 56.

3. The negative *non* always precedes the Verb; as, Non ho vedúto Cárlo, *I have not seen Charles*; non hái tu visto mío fratéllo? *Hast thou not seen my brother?*

4. The Italians use the feminine pronoun **Ella** and the third person singular of the Verb, in addressing a stranger, or a superior; in which case the word *Vossignoría, Your Lordship*, is understood; as *Élla ha il mío cappéllo (Your Lordship) has (you have) my hat.\**

The second person plural, *vói, you*, is used in mercantile correspondence and in familiar conversation. The second person singular *tu, thou*, is used amongst friends and relations. *Vói* and *tu* are used towards servants. These rules are not strictly followed everywhere in Italy.

## Idioms formed with the Verb AVÉRE, shortened AVÉR.

Avére a ménte,	<i>to remember.</i>	Avér per iscusáto,	<i>to excuse.</i>
Avére a máno,	<i>to have a thing ready.</i>	Avér ragióne,	<i>to be right.</i>
Avér cáro,	<i>to cherish.</i>	Avér tórtó,	<i>to be wrong.</i>
Avéría con,	<i>to be angry with.</i>	Avérvógliá ( <i>with DI</i> ),	<i>to wish.</i>
Avér cáldo,	<i>to feel warm.</i>	Avér buóna céra,	<i>to look healthy.</i>
Avér fréddo,	<i>to feel cold.</i>	Avér cattíva,	<i>to look unhealthy, poorly.</i>
Avér cervéllo,	<i>to be clever.</i>	or mála céra,	
Avér giudízio,		Avér páziénza,	<i>to be patient.</i>
Avér fréttá,	<i>to be in hurry.</i>	Avére a or da ( <i>before an infinitive</i> ),	<i>to be obliged.</i>
Avér fáme,	<i>to be hungry.</i>	Avér certézza,	<i>to be certain, to be sure.</i>
Avér sété,	<i>to be thirsty.</i>	Avér cuóre,	<i>to dare.</i>
Avér sónno,	<i>to be sleepy.</i>	Avér fáccia di,	<i>to seem, to appear.</i>
Avér fáma di,	<i>to be reputed.</i>	Avér bisógno,	<i>to want, to need.</i>
Avér vóce di,	<i>to take place.</i>	Avér compassióne,	<i>to pity.</i>
Avér luógo,	<i>to intend.</i>	Avér cúra,	<i>to take care.</i>
Avér l'intenzióne,		Avér a grádo,	<i>to be pleased with.</i>
Avér pensiéro,	<i>to feel pain.</i>	Avére a schífo,	<i>to despise.</i>
Avér idéa,		Avér in dispрэzzo,	
Avér mále,	<i>to be frigh-tened.</i>	Avér ástio,	<i>to be angry with, to hate.</i>
Avér paúra,	<i>to be glad.</i>	Avér in ódio,	
Avér piacére,	<i>to take offence.</i>		
Avér a mále,			
Avér per mále,			

\* When *Ella* is written in the middle of a sentence with a capital *e* it must be translated by *you*; when written with a small *e*, it must be translated by *she*.

## EXERCISE XI.

## A.

*Simple Tenses.*

1. Io ho un libro. 2. Tu hai un calamaio. 3. Egli ha una lettera. 4. Ella ha una collana. 5. Noi abbiamo due scarpe. 6. Voi avete cinque lire. 7. Eglino hanno due mele. 8. Elleno hanno tre orologi. 9. Io ebbi tre fichi. 10. Ella avrà due lettere. 11. Voi avrete un calamaio. 12. Eglino avranno due cavalli.

1. I have a horse. 2. Thou hast two pens. 3. He has four shoes. 4. She has three needles. 5. We have two rings. 6. You have five figs. 7. They (*masc.*) have two apples. 8. They (*fem.*) have two letters. 9. I shall have a letter. 10. We shall have two horses. 11. She will have a chair. 12. He will have an inkstand.

*es, if.*

## B.

*Compound Tenses.*

1. Io ho avuto un regalo. 2. Tu hai avuto un foglio di carta. 3. Egli ha avuto un anello. 4. Ella ha avuto due orecchini. 5. Noi abbiamo avuto delle ciriege. 6. Voi avete avuto una disgrazia. 7. Eglino hanno avuto due bottiglie di birra. 8. Elleno hanno avuto quattro penne. 9. Avrà egli avuto un regalo? Nossignore.\* 10. Avremo noi avuto dello zucchero? Sissignore. 11. Avreste voi avuto un regalo? Sissignore. 12. Non avevano eglino avuto una disgrazia? No, signora; eglino non avevano avuto una disgrazia.

1. I have had a sheet of paper. 2. Thou hast had a present. 3. She has had four earrings. 4. He has had some cherries. 5. We have had a misfortune. 6. You have had some figs. 7. They (*masc.*) will have had three bottles of beer. 8. They (*fem.*) would have had a present. 9. Have we had a present? No, sir. 10. Has she not had a chain? No, sir. 11. Will you have had some cherries? No, sir. 12. Would they (*masc.*) have had a misfortune? No, sir.

*Idiomatic Forms.*

## C.

1. Voi non avete a mente il colore del vino di Giovanni. 2. Avete voi caldo o freddo? Io non ho freddo, io ho caldo. 3. L'amico non aveva un asciugamano, egli aveva un cappello. 4. Il pittore non aveva colori. 5. Aveva la zia del butirro? No, la zia non aveva butirro, ella aveva del latte e del tè. 6. Avete

\* Whenever *no*, or a word ending with an accentuated vowel is joined to another word, the first letter of the latter is doubled: as—

No signore becomes nossignore.  
Sì signore     „     sissignore.  
amò lo     „     amollo.

da-rò ti becomes darottì.  
dà mi     dammi, &c.

But this does not occur when they precede *gli*, or a word beginning with a vowel thus: *giurò gli* becomes *giurogli*, *là onde* becomes *laonde*, etc.

voi voglia d'un'arancia? No, io ho voglia di avere delle pere. 7. Avete voi fretta? No, signore, io non ho fretta. 8. Avete voi fame, o sete? Io ho sete, non ho fame. 9. Il fratello ha mala cera, signore, egli ha voglia d'un bicchier \* d'acqua. 10. Abbiate giudizio, ed avrete danaro. 11. Se io avessi danaro, avrei libri e servi. 12. Ella non ha pazienza, ella ha fretta.

1. The painter has no colours. 2. Do you feel cold? No, sir, I feel warm. 3. The friend (*fem.*) had no oranges, she had walnuts. 4. Had the friend (*masc.*) not a hat? No, sir, he had a book. 5. Had the uncle a cup of coffee? Yes, sir, and he had also butter and bread. 6. Have you a fork? No, sir, I have not a fork. 7. The daughter had not a needle, she had a watch and two books. 8. Have you some books? No, sir, we have no books. 9. Have you had a sheet of paper from Charles? Yes, sir, and I have had also a newspaper. 10. Has he had a letter from the uncle? No, sir, he has had a letter from my father. 11. Have they (*fem.*) not had a present from my sister? Yes, madam, they (*fem.*) have had two watches from Mrs. N. 12. Does he look well? No, sir, he looks poorly.

## D.

1. Io non ho paura della spada, io ho paura de' cani. 2. Mio fratello ha cattiva cera, egli ha avuto paura. 3. Ha egli veduto il mio cavallo? No, signore, egli non ha veduto il vostro cavallo. 4. Hanno eglino veduto i miei giardini? Sì, signora, eglino hanno veduto i giardini ed anche le case. 5. Ha egli moglie il cugino? † Mio cugino ha moglie e due figli. 6. Ha Carlo avuto del formaggio e del pane? No, signore, Carlo non ha avuto formaggio, Carlo ha avuto del pane. 7. Ha egli voglia di libri o di danaro? Egli ha voglia di libri. 8. Ha mio fratello avuto delle noci? No, signora, egli ha avuto delle arance. 9. Avrebbe egli voglia d'un bicchiere di birra? No, signore, egli ha voglia d'un bicchiere di vino ed anche di pane e formaggio. 10. Mia madre ha avuto un orologio d'oro da mio padre. 11. La zia ebbe delle noci dalla cugina. 12. Mio fratello e mia sorella hanno avuto una tazza di tè e del pane e butirro.

1. Have you had a cup of tea? No, sir, I have had a glass of wine. 2. Has he some oranges? Yes, madam, and he has also some walnuts. 3. Hast thou had my hat? No, sir, I have not had the hat. 4. I shall have two bottles of wine from Charles. 5. Have you a ring? Yes sir, I have a ring and a watch. 6. I have no cousins (*masc.*) and Charles has no brothers. 7. My brothers have had a monkey. 8. My aunts have had two cups of tea. 9. Have I not given to my brothers my horse and my watch? Yes, Sir, you have given to the brothers the horse and the watch. 10. Has she had my books? She has had the books and the pen. 11. I have given to Charles my inkstand and three sheets of paper. 12. The painter has given to my cousin (*fem.*) some colours.

\* The final *e* of words is often dropped. See p. 28, note.

† Has the cousin a wife? lit. Has he a wife—the cousin?

VIII.—THE VERB *ÉSSERE*, to be.INDICATIVE MOOD (*Indicativo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

Singular.		Plural.	
io sóno,	<i>I am.</i>	nói siámo,	<i>we are.</i>
tu séi,	<i>thou art.</i>	vói siéte,	<i>you are.</i>
égli è,	<i>he is.</i>	églino sóno,	<i>they are.</i>
ella è,	<i>she is.</i>	élleno sóno,	

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfétto*).

io éra,	<i>I was.</i>	nói eravámo,	<i>we were.</i>
tu éri,	<i>thou wast.</i>	vói eraváte,	<i>you were.</i>
égli éra,	<i>he was.</i>	églino érano,	<i>they were.</i>

PAST DEFINITE TENSE (*Passáto Defínito*).

io fúi,	<i>I was.</i>	nói fúmmo,	<i>we were.</i>
tu fósti,	<i>thou wast.</i>	vói fóste,	<i>you were.</i>
égli fu,	<i>he was.</i>	églino fúrono,	<i>they were.</i>

FUTURE TENSE (*Futúro*).

io sarò,	<i>I shall be.</i>	nói sarémo,	<i>we shall be.</i>
tu sarái,	<i>thou wilt be.</i>	vói saréte,	<i>you will be.</i>
égli sarà,	<i>he will be.</i>	églino saránno,	<i>they will be.</i>

COMPOUND TENSES (*Témpi Compósti*).státo, *been.*PAST INDEFINITE TENSE (*Passáto Indefínito*).

io sóno státo,	<i>I have (am) been.</i>	nói siámo státi,	<i>we have been.</i>
tu séi státo,	<i>thou hast been.</i>	vói siéte státi,	<i>you have been.</i>
égli è státo,	<i>he has been.</i>	églino sóno státi,	<i>they have been.</i>

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

io éra státo,	<i>I had (was) been.</i>	nói eravámo státi,	<i>we had been.</i>
tu éri státo,	<i>thou hadst been.</i>	vói eraváte státi,	<i>you had been.</i>
égli éra státo,	<i>he had been.</i>	églino érano státi,	<i>they had been.</i>

PAST ANTERIOR TENSE (*Passáto Rimóto*).

io fúi státo,	<i>I had (was) been.</i>	nói fúmmo státi,	<i>we had been.</i>
tu fósti státo,	<i>thou hadst been.</i>	vói fóste státi,	<i>you had been.</i>
égli fu státo,	<i>he had been.</i>	églino fúrono státi,	<i>they had been.</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR TENSE (*Futúro Anterióre*).

io sarò státo,	<i>I shall have (be) been.</i>	nói sarémo státi,	<i>we shall have been.</i>
tu sarái státo,	<i>thou shalt have been.</i>	vói saréte státi,	<i>you shall have been.</i>
égli sarà státo,	<i>he shall have been.</i>	églino saránno státi,	<i>they shall have been.</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD (*Condizionale*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

	Singular.		Plural.
io saréi,	<i>I should be.</i>	nói sarémmo,	<i>we should be.</i>
tu sarésti,	<i>thou wouldst be.</i>	vói saréste,	<i>you would be.</i>
égli sarébbe,	<i>he would be.</i>	églino sarébbero,	<i>they would be.</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).*First Form.*

io saréi státo,	<i>I should have</i>	nói sarémmo státi,	<i>we should have</i>
tu sarésti státo,	<i>thou wouldst have</i>	vói saréste státi,	<i>you would have</i>
égli sarébbe státo,	<i>he would have</i>	églino sarébbero státi,	<i>they would have</i>

*Second Form.*

io fóssi státo,	<i>I should have been.</i>	nói fóssimo státi,	<i>we should have been.</i>
tu fóssi státo,	<i>thou wouldst have been.</i>	vói fóste státi,	<i>you would have been.</i>
égli fósse státo,	<i>he would have been.</i>	églino fóssero státi,	<i>they would have been.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD (*Imperatívo*).

síi tu,	<i>be thou.</i>	siámo nós,	<i>let us be.</i>
sía égli,	<i>let him be.</i>	siáte vói,	<i>be ye.</i>
		siano églino,	<i>let them be.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (*Soggiuntívo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

oh' io sía,	<i>that I may be.</i>	che nós siámo,	<i>that we may be.</i>
che tu síi,	<i>that thou mayst be.</i>	che vói siáte,	<i>that you may be.</i>
ch' égli sía,	<i>that he may be.</i>	ch' églino siano,	<i>that he may be.</i>

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfétto*).

ch' io fóssi,	<i>that I might be.</i>	che nós fóssimo,	<i>that we might be.</i>
che tu fóssi,	<i>that thou mightst be.</i>	che vói fóste,	<i>that you might be.</i>
ch' égli fósse,	<i>that he might be.</i>	ch' églino fóssero,	<i>that they might be.</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

ch' io sía státo,	<i>that I may have been.</i>	che nós siámo státi,	<i>that we may have been.</i>
che tu síi státo,	<i>that thou mayst have been.</i>	che vói siáte státi,	<i>that you may have been.</i>
ch' égli sía státo,	<i>that he may have been.</i>	ch' églino siano státi,	<i>that they may have been.</i>

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

Singular.	Plural.
ch' io fóssi státo, <i>that I might</i>	che nói fóssimo státi, <i>that we might</i>
che tu fóssi státo, <i>that thou mightst</i>	che vói fóste státi, <i>that you might</i>
ch' égli fósse státo, <i>that he might</i>	ch' églino fóssero státi, <i>that they might</i>

INFINITIVE MOOD (*Infinito*).

PRESENT ( <i>Presénte</i> ).	PAST ( <i>Passáto</i> ).
éssere, <i>to be.</i>	éssere státo, <i>to have (be) been.</i>

GERUND (*Gerúndio*).

PRESENT ( <i>Presénte</i> ).	PAST ( <i>Passáto</i> ).
esséndo, <i>being.</i>	esséndo státo, <i>having (being) been.</i>

PARTICIPLES (*Participi*).

PRESENT ( <i>Presénte</i> ).	PAST ( <i>Passáto</i> ).
[essénte, <i>being.</i> ]	<i>Sing.</i> státo (m.) státa (f.) } <i>been.</i>
	<i>Plur.</i> státi (m.) státe (f.) }

NOTE 1.—The verb *Éssere* is conjugated, in its Compound Tenses, with the verb “to be,” not “to have:” as, *Io sóno státo, I have (am) been.* It means “to exist” when used without an adjective or participle. *Essénte* is very seldom used.

NOTE 2.—All Participles are declined like adjectives, being used in the masculine and feminine gender, and in the singular and plural number: as, *státo, státa, státi, státe.*

Participles agree in gender and number with the Subject when with the verb *to be*, and are left undeclined, or agree with the Object or Accusative, when with the verb *to have*.

Idioms formed with *ÉSSERE*.

Éssere a mal términe,	<i>to be in a critical position.</i>	
Éssere all' órdine,	<i>to be ready.</i>	
Éssere un póco di buóno,	<i>to be good for nothing.</i>	
Éssere in procínto di,	}	<i>to be on the point of.</i>
Éssere sul púnto di,		
Éssere per,	}	<i>to have a good character.</i>
Éssere in buón concétto,		
Éssere in cattívo concétto,	}	<i>to have a bad character.</i>
Éssere a grádo,		
Éssere d' accórdo,	}	<i>to please.</i>
Éssere in disaccórdo,		
Éssere in grádo di,	}	<i>to agree.</i>
Éssere in sè,		
Éssere fuóri di sè,	}	<i>to disagree.</i>
	}	<i>to be able.</i>
	}	<i>to be right (in mind).</i>
	}	<i>to be mad, or maddened.</i>



## EXERCISE XII.

andàre, to go;

fàre, to do, to make.

## A.

*Simple Tenses.*

1. Io sono nella casa (*or a casa*). 2. Tu sei nella libreria. 3. Il libro è sulla tavola. 4. Ella è sulla sedia. 5. Eglino sono sul tetto. 6. Siete voi nella cantina? 7. Eglino sono in carrozza. 8. Siete voi per le scale? 9. Siamo noi in città? 10. Sarete voi a tempo? 11. Io non fui a tempo. 12. Saranno elleno al teatro?

1. I am in the library. 2. Art thou in the house? 3. He is in the cellar. 4. She is in the carriage. 5. We are in (*a*) time. 6. You are not in (*a*) time. 7. He is on the roof. 8. They (*fem.*) are in the house. 9. Will he be in (*a*) time? 10. Shall I be in (*a*) time? 11. Will he be in the library? 12. Will they (*masc.*) be in the room? No, Sir.

## B

*Compound Tenses.*

1. Dove siete stato, signore? Io sono stato a Londra. 2. Dov'è stata la sorella? Ella è stata a Parigi. 3. Dove sono state le zie? Elleno sono state al mercato. 4. Dove sono stati i fratelli? Eglino sono stati alla passeggiata. 5. La serva è stata al mercato. 6. Egli è stato al parco. 7. Io sarei stato dal medico. 8. Voi non sareste stato a tempo. 9. Siete voi stati al ballo? 10. È egli stato al pranzo del signor B.? 11. Sei tu stato per le scale? 12. Noi siamo stati con gli zii.

1. I have been to Paris. 2. Where has he been? He has been in London. 3. She has been at the market. 4. Has the servant (*masc.*) been here? 5. Will the mother have been with the daughter? 6. We should have been to the theatre. 7. You would have been with my father. 8. Where would you have been? At Paris. 9. You would not have been in time. 10. He would have been with the doctor. 11. The sisters of Charles would have been here. 12. She would have been in the market.

ora, now; già, di già, already.

## C.

1. Avete voi il mio bastone? No, io non ho il bastone. 2. Siete voi stato al teatro? Sì, signore. 3. Io sarei stato al parco, se avessi avuto tempo. 4. Io vado ora al parco. 5. Io sono già stato alla passeggiata. 6. Siete voi già stato col pittore? Io sono stato ora col pittore. 7. Ella ha avuta la febbre. 8. Noi abbiamo avuto un regalo. 9. Egli è stato col capitano. 10. Voi avete avuto delle pere. 11. Noi non avevamo avute le frutta. 12. Egli è stato in Francia.

1. The captain has been in Italy. 2. Has he been with my father? 3. We have not been at the promenade. 4. Have you

already been with the captain? 5. He has had the fever. 6. She has been to the park. 7. Have you had some pears? 8. They (*masc.*) have already had two bottles of wine. 9. She will have two houses. 10. If I had had the time, I would have been with my brother. 11. Where have you been? In the (*al*) park. 12. We have already been in the library.

*perchè, why; ancora, yet; non ancora, not yet; fatto, done, made.*

## D.

1. Non ho io ragione? 2. Non hai tu torto? 3. Ella non ha ragione. 4. Voi avete torto. 5. Non abbiamo avuto torto. 6. Elleno hanno avuto ragione. 7. Perchè siete voi stato in campagna? 8. Io non sono ancora stato alla passeggiata. 9. Io ho fatto l'esercizio. 10. Avete voi avuta la lezione? 11. Io non ho avuto tempo. 12. Io ho fatta una passeggiata.

1. Has she not a brother? 2. Has he not a sister? 3. Was (*had*) I not right? 4. Were (*had*) you not wrong? 5. Have you not been in the country? 6. Was he not at the promenade? 7. Was she not with my sister? 8. Had he not time? 9. Were you not at the dinner? 10. Shall we be (*have*) right? 11. Have you done the exercise? 12. Have they (*fem.*) had some presents?

## E.

*Idiomatical Sentences.*

1. Il mio amico è a mal termine. Che ha egli? Egli ha avuto una disgrazia. 2. Siete voi all'ordine, Giovanni? Sì, signore, io sono all'ordine. 3. Mio fratello è un poco di buono, egli non era alla lezione. 4. Io era in procinto di fare un regalo a mio cugino. 5. Noi eravamo in procinto di andare all'albergo. 6. Io sono in buon concetto con mia madre e con mio padre. 7. È Ella d'accordo con mio zio? Nossignore, io non sono d'accordo con lo zio: noi siamo in disaccordo. 8. Siete voi in grado di fare una passeggiata? Sissignore, io sono in grado di fare una passeggiata. 9. Mio fratello era fuori di sè dalla paura. Egli aveva paura del cane. 10. Sono elleno d'accordo? No, elleno sono in disaccordo. 11. Noi siamo per fare una passeggiata. 12. Amico mio, tu sei a mal termine.

1. Do you agree with my uncle? No, sir, we do not agree. 2. Is my cousin (*masc.*) in a critical position? He is good for nothing, he is in a critical position. 3. Are you ready? We are ready, sir. 4. Were they (*masc.*) ready? No, sir, they (*masc.*) were not ready. 5. I am on the point of going (*to go*) to the hotel. 6. We are on the point of going (*to go*) to take (*to make*) a promenade. 7. Will you be able to take (*to make*) a walk with my brother? I shall be able to take (*to make*) a walk. 8. My uncle was madened by fear of the dog. 9. Charles has a bad character, he is good for nothing. 10. Has John a good character with Mr. G.? My brother has a good character with Mr. G. 11. Are you ready for dinner? We are not ready for dinner. 12. Did the doctors agree? No, sir, the doctors disagreed.

IX.—THE ADJECTIVE (*l' Aggettivo*).

There are six classes of Adjectives: *qualificative*, *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *interrogative*, *numeral*, and *indefinite*.

Qualificative Adjectives (*Aggettivi qualificativi*).

Qualificative Adjectives express the *quality* of persons or things: as, un uómo álto, *a tall man*; úna bélla pittúra, *a beautiful painting*.

## A. FORMATION OF THE FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES.

All Adjectives ending in *o* form their Feminine by changing *o* into *a*: as,

Masculine.	Feminine.	
buóno,	buóna,	<i>good.</i>
álto,	álta,	<i>tall.</i>
cattívo,	cattíva,	<i>bad.</i>

All Adjectives ending in *e* are the same for both genders: as,

Masculine.	Feminine.	
gránde,	gránde,	<i>great.</i>
amábile,	amábile,	<i>amiable.</i>
célebre,	célebre,	<i>celebrated.</i>

Many masculine *Nouns* in *o* have feminine forms in *a* like adjectives: as, il cugíno, *the male cousin*, la cugína, *the female cousin*; il figlio, *the son*, la figlia, *the daughter*.

Masculine *Nouns* in *tore* have feminine forms in *trice*: as, l'attóre, *the actor*, l'attríce, *the actress*; l'autóre, *the author*, l'autríce, *the authoress*; il vinctóre, *the conqueror*, la vinctríce, *the female conqueror*, and as adj. *victorious*.

Some nouns in *tore* have a double feminine: as, il traditóre, *the traitor*, la traditóra and la traditrice, *the traitress*.

## B. FORMATION OF THE PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives form their plural in the same way as substantives: thus words in *o* and *e* form their plural in *i*, and words in *a* form their plural in *e*: as,

	Masculine.	Feminine.	
	Singular. álto,	álta,	} <i>tall.</i>
	Plural. álti,	álte	
	Singular. gránde,	gránde,	} <i>great.</i>
	Plural. grándi,	grándi,	

Adjectives ending in *ca*, or *ga*, form their plural in *che*, or *ghe*, in order to retain their hard sound: those in *co*, or *go*, sometimes form their plural in *ci*, or *gi*, and at other times in *chi*, or *ghi*: as,

	Masculine	Feminine.	
<i>Singular.</i>	<i>biáncó</i> ,	<i>biánca</i> ,	} <i>white.</i>
<i>Plural.</i>	<i>biánchi</i> ,	<i>biánche</i>	
<i>Singular.</i>	<i>lárgo</i> ,	<i>lárga</i> ,	} <i>wide.</i>
<i>Plural.</i>	<i>lárgghi</i> ,	<i>lárghe</i> ,	
<i>Singular.</i>	<i>antíco</i> ,	<i>antíca</i> ,	} <i>ancient.</i>
<i>Plural.</i>	<i>antíchi</i> ,	<i>antíche</i> ,	
<i>Singular.</i>	<i>benéfíco</i> ,	<i>benéfica</i> ,	} <i>beneficent.</i>
<i>Plural.</i>	<i>benéfici</i> ,	<i>benéfiche</i> ,	

NOTE.—When the accent is on the antepenultimate, like *benéfico*, the plural is usually *ci*, not *chi*.

### C. AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives agree in gender and number with the noun they qualify: as,

*Singular.* *cáro amíco*, *dear friend (m.)*    *cára amíca*, *dear friend (f.)*.  
*Plural.* *cári amíci*, *dear friends (m.)*    *cáre amíche*, *dear friends (f.)*.

If the same Adjective qualifies nouns of different genders, it is put in the masculine plural: as, *il pádre e la mádre sóno buóni*, *the father and the mother are good*.

A noun in the plural may be followed by two or more adjectives in the singular: as, *le língue gréca e latína*, *the Greek and Latin languages*.

NOTE.—Sometimes the Adjectives (as well as other words) drop the final letter, or syllable: as, *buón úomo*, *good man*; *gran soldáto*, *great soldier*; *bell' árte*, *fine art*.

### EXERCISE XIII.

#### A.

1. Il buon vino e la buona birra. 2. Il buon pane e la buona carne. 3. Il lungo canale nella grande città. 4. La grande quercia nella campagna. 5. La piccola sorella è nel giardino. 6. Chi fu vincitore della battaglia? 7. L'attore e l'attrice furono applauditi. 8. Ella era una traditora. 9. La mia bianca mano è piccola. 10. La mia guancia non è gonfia. 11. Ella ha una madre prudente. 12. Mio padre è anche prudente.

1. The long table is in the room. 2. Have you had my little stick? 3. The chair is small. 4. The canal is long. 5. Oaks (*art.*) are tall. 6. The actress has (*is*) been applauded. 7. She is a good painter (*fem.*). 8. My little house is in the town. 9. My tall brother is in the library. 10. My friend (*masc.*) is tall. 11. My hat is white. 12. My cheek is swollen.

## B.

1. La mia casa è grande. 2. Il cappello di Carlo è nero. 3. La mia sedia è alta. 4. Il pozzo nel giardino è profondo. 5. La sorella ha un abito bianco. 6. I miei capelli sono neri. 7. I due cavalli sono bigi. 8. Le case nella città sono alte. 9. I miei amici sono felici. 10. Le donne sono anche felici. 11. Ella è ancora giovine. 12. Egli è un giovine di buona famiglia.

1. My hat is black. 2. The brother of Charles is tall. 3. My house is small. 4. Mary's chair is high. 5. The coat of my brother is black. 6. The hat of my father is white. 7. The wells are deep. 8. My horses are grey. 9. The house is not high. 10. My mother is happy. 11. My father is also happy. 12. My sisters are not happy.

## C.

1. La vecchia donna ha un cappello bianco. 2. Il fabbro ha due grandi figli. 3. Mio padre ha una vecchia madre. 4. Mio nonno è vecchio. 5. La nonna mia ha una bella casa. 6. Io sono stato alla casa della mia giovine sorella. 7. Egli è giovine ed alto. 8. Avete voi del buon vino? Sì, io ho del vino vecchio. 9. Il latte è fresco, ma il pane è secco. 10. Egli ha avuto due bottiglie di vino vecchio. 11. Io ho due belle carrozze. 12. Ha egli due cavalli bigi?

1. The uncle of Charles is old. 2. The aunt of John is not old. 3. My mother has an old father. 4. The mother of my father is old. 5. My grandfather is not yet old. 6. The man in the street is tall. 7. The milk on the table is fresh. 8. The bread is not new. 9. The old man has no money. 10. Is the wine good? Yes, the wine is old. 11. I have had some old wine. 12. Hast thou had three bottles of old wine? No, sir, I have had one bottle of old wine.

## D.

1. La birra è amara. 2. Il vino non è amaro. 3. Siete voi felice? No, io non sono felice. 4. Emma è felice, perchè ella è buona. 5. Vittorio sarà un buon giovine. 6. Egli ha una buona madre ed un buon padre. 7. Ella ha una madre affettuosa. 8. Il vecchio fabbro ha cinque giovani figli. 9. Egli ha due buone sorelle. 10. Il maestro è severo. 11. La casa è vecchia. 12. Il libro è nuovo.

1. The master is not severe. 2. I am not happy. 3. My beer is bitter. 4. The wine is not old. 5. She is not happy. 6. Are you not happy? 7. Victor is a good son. 8. He will be an affectionate son. 9. She has an affectionate mother. 10. The blacksmith has an old father. 11. The house is not old. 12. The book is old.

## D. POSITION OF THE ADJECTIVE.

1. Adjectives of one or two syllables generally *precede* the noun they qualify : as,

un búon ragázzo,	<i>a good boy.</i>
un bell' orolóio,	<i>a fine watch.</i>

2. Adjectives of more than two syllables generally *follow* the noun they qualify : as,

úna dóнна amábile,	<i>an amiable woman.</i>
un giòvine studiósso,	<i>a studious youth.</i>

This rule, however, is not strictly followed in Italian.

3. Adjectives denoting *physical* qualities, *colour*, *taste*, *smell*, &c., follow the noun they qualify : as,

carta biánca,	<i>white paper.</i>
la távola rotónda	<i>the round table.</i>
un uómo ciéco,	<i>a blind man.</i>

4. Participles agree with and follow the noun : as,

úna figlia amáta,	<i>a beloved daughter.</i>
-------------------	----------------------------

5. The signification of an Adjective sometimes changes with its position *before* or *after* the noun : as,

un uómo gránde,	<i>a tall man.</i>
un gránd' uómo,	<i>a great man.</i>
un gálant' uómo,	<i>a gentleman.</i>
un uómo galánte,	<i>a coxcomb.</i>

*voi amáte, you love, you like.*

## EXERCISE XIV.

## A.

1. Io amo il buon vino e la buona carne. 2. Che amate voi? Io amo la campagna. 3. Amate voi il vino? No, signore, io amo la birra. 4. Io non amo la birra cattiva. 5. Io ho un bel cavallo. 6. Che avete voi? Delle belle rose. 7. La mia rosa è rossa. 8. Il mio fiore è bianco. 9. Io amo le viole. 10. Amate voi le rose? Io amo le rose bianche. 11. Le rose sono rosse ed anche bianche. 12. Avete voi della carta bianca?

1. I like the town. 2. Do you like (like you) the country?

3. The rose is white. 4. My rose is red. 5. Have you had a grey horse? No, sir, I have had a black horse. 6. My mother has a black dress. 7. I have a black coat. 8. Have you had some white paper? 9. We have had some red roses. 10. They (*f.*) have some white roses. 11. She has had some roses white and red. 12. I like (*the*) red flowers.

## B.

1. Io ho dell' uva buona. 2. Dov' è il giovine? Egli è a Parigi. 3. Parigi è una bella città. 4. Roma è anche una bella città. 5. Torino è una città nuova. 6. La strada principale del villaggio è lunga. 7. Mio nonno è nella casa del vecchio amico. 8. I miei vecchi amici sono ricchi. 9. Lo zio è ancora giovine. 10. Io amo la lingua italiana. 11. Amate voi la lingua italiana, o la lingua inglese? 12. Io amo la lingua inglese.

1. Have you some good grapes (*Sing.*)? Yes, sir. 2. I like good grapes (*Sing.*). 3. I like also good wine. 4. I have had some red flowers. 5. I have been in the little village. 6. The street is long. 7. The town is old. 8. I have had some red and white flowers. 9. My old friend is rich. 10. Have you some paper? Yes, I have some white paper. 11. Have you a white rose? No, sir, I have a red rose. 12. I have had a grey horse.

## E. COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives have three forms, called the Positive, Comparative and Superlative degrees.

There are three Comparatives: the comparative of *superiority*, the comparative of *equality*, and the comparative of *inferiority*. There are two Superlatives: the superlative of *superiority*, and the superlative of *inferiority*. The superlative is either *absolute*, by which a high degree is expressed without comparison, or *relative*: as *Nápoli è una città grandissima, è la più grande delle città Italiane, Naples is a very great city, is the greatest of Italian cities*; the first is a superlative absolute, the second a superlative relative of superiority.

1. The Comparative of superiority is formed by prefixing *più, more*, to the Positive, and the Superlative relative of superiority by prefixing *il più, the most*, to the Positive.

Positive ( <i>Positivo</i> ).		Comparative ( <i>Comparativo</i> ).	Superlative ( <i>Superlativo</i> ).
<i>Masc.</i>	álto	} <i>tall.</i>	il più álto.
<i>Fem.</i>	álta		
<i>Masc.</i>	gránde	} <i>great.</i>	il più gránde.
<i>Fem.</i>	gránde		

2. The Comparison of inferiority is formed by prefixing *méno*, *less*, to the Positive, and the Superlative relative of inferiority by prefixing *il méno*, *the least*, to the Positive: as.

	Positive.		Comparative.		Superlative.
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>crudéle</i>	} <i>cruel.</i>	<i>méno crudéle</i>		<i>il méno crudéle.</i>
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>crudéle</i>		<i>méno crudéle</i>		<i>la méno crudéle.</i>
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>sécco</i>	} <i>dry.</i>	<i>méno sécco</i>		<i>il méno sécco.</i>
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>sécca</i>		<i>méno sécca</i>		<i>la méno sécca.</i>

3. The Superlative absolute is formed by adding the termination *íssimo* to the Positive deprived of its final letter: as,

	Positive.		Superlative.
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>gránde</i>	} <i>great.</i>	<i>grandíssimo</i>
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>gránde</i>		<i>grandíssima</i>

*very great.*

### EXCEPTIONS.

1. Adjectives ending in *ro* and *re* preceded by a consonant drop their *ro* and *re* and add *érrimo* to make their Superlative absolute: as,

	Positive.		Superlative.
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>ácre</i>	} <i>sour.</i>	<i>acérrimo.</i>
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>ácre</i>		<i>acérrima.</i>
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>intégro</i>	} <i>honest.</i>	<i>integérrimo.</i>
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>intégro</i>		<i>integérrima.</i>
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>celebre</i>	} <i>celebrated.</i>	<i>celebérrimo.</i>
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>celebre</i>		<i>celebérrima.</i>

2. Adjectives ending in *dico*, *fico*, and *volo* drop the last letter and add *entíssimo* to make their Superlative absolute: as,

	Positive.		Superlative.
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>malédico</i>	} <i>maledicent.</i>	<i>maledicentíssimo.</i>
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>malédica</i>		<i>maledicentíssima.</i>
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>benéfico</i>	} <i>beneficent</i>	<i>beneficentíssimo.</i>
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>benéfica</i>		<i>beneficentíssima.</i>
<i>Masc.</i>	<i>benévolo</i>	} <i>benevolent.</i>	<i>benevolentíssimo.</i>
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>benévola</i>		<i>benevolentíssima.</i>

NOTE.—The above forms follow the Latin: as, *acer*, *acerrimus*, *maledicus*, *maledicentissimus*.

### Irregular Comparison.

The following Adjectives have their Comparative and Superlative irregular: thus—

Positive.	Comparative.	Superl. Rel.	Superl. Absol.
<i>buóno</i> , a, <i>good.</i>	<i>miglióre</i>	<i>il</i> , <i>la</i> <i>miglióre</i>	<i>óttimo</i> , a
<i>málo</i> , <i>cattívo</i> , { a, } <i>bad.</i>	<i>peggióre</i>	<i>il</i> , <i>la</i> <i>peggióre</i>	<i>péssimo</i> , a



Positive.	Comparative.	Superl. Rel.	Superl. Absol.
*gránde, <i>great</i> .	maggióre	il, la maggióre	mássimo, a
*piccolo, a, <i>small</i> .	minóre	il, la minóre	mínimo, a
*álto, a, <i>high</i> .	superióre	il, la superióre	{suprémo, a sómmo, a
*básso, a, <i>low</i> .	inferióre	l' inferióre,	ínfimo, a

Those marked with an asterisk form their Comparative and Superlative relative also in the regular way.

2. The following Adjectives have no positive :—

Comparative.	Superlative.
posterióre, <i>later</i> .	postrémo, <i>last</i> .
esterióre, <i>exterior</i> .	estrémo, <i>extreme, last</i> .
interióre, <i>interior</i> .	íntimo, <i>inward, intimate</i> .
prióre, <i>former</i> .	prímo, <i>first</i>
ulterióre, <i>further</i> .	último, <i>last</i> .
citerióre, <i>on this side</i> .	
anterióre, <i>former, foregoing</i> .	
	próssimo, <i>next</i> .

REMARKS.

1. The comparison of equality, *as . . . as* or *so . . . as*, is formed by placing the adjectives or nouns between *così . . . che*, or *tánto . . . quánto*: *as*,

Giovánni è *così* ricco *che* Piétro, *John is as rich as Peter*.

La távola è *tánto* lárga *quánto* lúnga, *the table is as broad as long*.

2. The English *than* after the Comparative is expressed in two ways, either by the Genitive or by *che*.

(i) The genitive is used when the comparative is followed by a noun or a pronoun: *as*,

Il sóle è *più* gránde *délla* lúna, *the sun is larger than the moon*.

Il leóne è *méno* crudéle *délla* tigre, *the lion is less cruel than the tiger*.

Tu *séi* *più* gránde *di* me, *thou art taller than I*.

(ii) *Che* is used when there is a comparison between two nouns without an adjective: *as*,

Égli è *più* pittóre *che* scultóre, *he is more a painter than a sculptor*.

(iii) *Che* is used when the comparison is between two adjectives: *as*, .

Égli è *più* fortunáto *che* prudénte, *he is more fortunate than prudent*.

(iv) Che is used when two verbs are compared, and non is used if no negative precedes: as,

Voi parlate più che non pensate, *you speak more than you think.*

But in many cases it is indifferent whether the comparison is expressed by the Genitive or che.

## F. MODIFICATIONS OF ADJECTIVES AND NOUNS.

### (*Augmentatives and Diminutives.*)

A peculiarity of the Italian language is the power of modifying an Adjective or a Noun by changing its termination, so as to augment or diminish the original meaning of the word: thus, *vecchio*, *old*, is changed into *vecchiétto*, *a little old man*; *vecchióne*, *a very old man*; *vecchiaccio*, *an ugly old man*; &c.

1. The terminations *óne*, *úto*, denote *increase*: as, *pórta*, *a door*, *portóne*, *a large door or gate*; *ricco*, *rich*, *riccóne*, *enormously rich*; *náso*, *a nose*, *nasóne*, *a large nose*; *nasúto*, *adj.*, *with a long nose*.

2. The termination *ótto* denotes *strength*: as, *gióvine*, *youth*, *giovinótto*, *a strong young man*; *contadína*, *a countrywoman*, *contadinótta*, *a strong countrywoman*.

3. The terminations *áccio*, *ástro*, *ázzo*, *ágliá* suggest something *bad*: as, *gióvine*, *youth*, *giovinástro*, *a bad young man*; *víno*, *wine*, *vináccio*, *bad wine*; *médico*, *doctor*, *medicástro*, *quack*; *plébe*, *people*, *plebágliá*, *mob*.

4. The terminations *íno*, *étto*, *élo*, *erélo*, suggest *diminution* together with *fondness*: as, *cáro*, *dear*, *caríno*, *little dear*; *máno*, *hand*, *manína*, *little hand*; *vecchio*, *old man*, *vecchiétto*, *dear little old man*, or, *vecchierélo*.

5. The terminations *uólo*, *úccio*, *úzzo*, *úcio*, *úciolo*, *ígnó*, *ógnolo* denote *diminution with contempt*: as, *libro*, *book*, *librúccio*, *worthless little book*; *vérdé*, *green*, *verdógnolo*, *greenish*; &c.

6. Words already modified can undergo a *second* modification: as, *cápra*, *goat*, *caprétto*, *young goat*, *caprettíno*, *small young goat*; *fióre*, *flower*, *fiorélo*, *little flower*, *fiorellíno*, *dear little flower*; etc.

7. Some words, thus modified, have altogether lost their original meaning, and have become new words with new meanings: as, città, *city*, cittadélla, *citadel*; pádre, *father*, padrino, *god-father*, &c.

It is not every word that can be modified in Italian, but it is impossible to give any rule, as there are no fixed rules for the use of these modifications.

These terminations greatly enrich the Italian language, but their use is only to be learnt by long practice and knowledge of the best Italian authors.

## EXERCISE XV.

*ma, but.*

## A.

1. Il leone è più grande del lupo. 2. Il gatto è meno grande del cane. 3. La nuova casa è più piccola della vecchia casa. 4. La campagna è più grata della città. 5. Le notti d'inverno sono più lunghe de' giorni. 6. Il maestro è più vecchio dello scolare. 7. Il bue è meno forte dell'elefante. 8. La luna è più piccola della terra. 9. Gli amici sono più numerosi nella buona che nella cattiva fortuna. 10. L'anello della sorella è d'oro. 11. Ho meno danaro, ma ho più libri di voi. 12. La tua sedia è nella camera.

1. The room of my brother is larger than my room. 2. The wolf is stronger than the dog. 3. My brother is taller than John. 4. The old man is in the room. 5. Paris is smaller than London. 6. Horses are stronger than dogs. 7. The canal is longer than the street. 8. The house is old. 9. The elephant is stronger than the horse. 10. The glass is upon the table. 11. The dog is in the room. 12. The cat is on the roof.

## B.

1. Vittorio è un carissimo ragazzo. 2. Londra è la più grande città d'Europa. 3. La città è grandissima. 4. Le strade sono lunghissime. 5. Egli è un uomo integerrimo. 6. Il banchiere è benevolentissimo. 7. La pittura è bella, ma è cara. 8. Dov'è il mic bicchiere? Sulla tavola. 9. Egli è mio intimo amico. 10. Noi siamo amicissimi. 11. Il gatto è sulla sedia. 12. La ragazza è nella casa.

1. He is better than Charles. 2. The wine of John is very bad. 3. He was the greatest man of Rome. 4. The watch of Mary is very dear. 5. He is the smallest of my brothers. 6. The sister of Emma is my best friend. 7. England has the largest city of Europe. 8. The son of Emma is very young. 9. John is a very young man. 10. He is an old man. 11. She is my oldest friend (*f.*). 12. He is the youngest of my brothers.

*(Modifications of Adjectives and Nouns.)*

## C:

1. Il canone nel giardino è addormentato. 2. Io ho visto un gattone nella cucina. 3. I lupicini sono con la lupa. 4. Il cavalluccio di Vittorino è di colore nerognolo. 5. I noccioli delle pesche sono amarognoli. 6. Il fiorellino è rossiccio e non giallògnolo. 7. Il mio librone è più pesante del tuo libricino. 8. Il vecchietto è riccone, egli è più ricco del mediconzolo. 9. Il vinetto è amarastro. 10. La mia casetta è più bella della tua casaccia. 11. Un giovinotto è più forte d' un vecchierello. 12. Il libretto è sul tavolino.

1. \*The little-old-man is in the garden. 2. The powerful-big-dog is in my room. 3. The kitten is with the big-ugly-cat. 4. The pony is in the garden. 5. The small-dear-little-flowers are upon the little-table. 6. My big-book is upon the big-book of John. 7. The young-little-wolf is with two big-wolves. 8. The dear-little-weak-old-woman is with the aunt. 9. The quack is a very-poor-ugly-man. 10. The dear-little-book is upon the big-worthless-table. 11. My little-flower is yellowish. 12. The bad wine is nastily-bitter.

## D.

1. L'erbetta del praticello è piena di fiorellini. 2. Le caprette sono fra gli arboscelli del mio boschetto. 3. La pecorella è addormentata fra le pianticelle. 4. Le quercette sono meno forti de' quercioni. 5. Il tuo anellino è belluccio. 6. La mia cameretta è piccolina, ed è meno grande del tuo camerone. 7. Il tuo cappellaccio è vecchissimo. 8. Il quadruccio del pittoraccio è bruttissimo. 9. La manina della vecchierella è aggrinzita. 10. I capelli di Saffo sono nerastri ed inanellati. 11. La navicella è sul mare. 12. I passerotti e le farfallette sono nel giardino.

1. The little-pretty-field has new short-grass, and pretty-dear-little-flowers. 2. The pretty-little wood has more young trees than trees. 3. The young-goats are amongst the little-plants. 4. A big-oak and a little-young-oak are in the garden. 5. The little-ring of the little-sister is rather-pretty. 6. John is in the big-room of the ugly-old-house. 7. I have two pretty-fat-little sparrows in my little-room. 8. Victor has two little-butterflies. 9. Two naughty-little-boys are with an ugly-old-man in the street. 10. Little-rings of gold are on the pretty-little-hands of Sappho. 11. The little-brothers of John are on the little-ship. 12. I have had a big-glass of weak-wine.

---

\* None of these nouns or adjectives should be translated into Italian by itself; but the noun or adjective they qualify should be translated in the Italian *modified* form.

## 2. Possessive Adjectives (*Aggettivi Possessivi*).

The Possessive Adjectives are—

Singular.		Plural.		English.
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
il mio,	la mia,	i miei,	le mie,	my.
il tuo,	la tua,	i tuoi,	le tue,	thy.
il suo,	la sua,	i suoi,	le sue,	his, her, its.
il nostro,	la nostra,	i nostri,	le nostre,	our.
il vostro,	la vostra,	i vostri,	le vostre,	your.
il loro,*	la loro,	i loro,	le loro,	their.

1. When the Possessive Adjective *precedes* in the *Singular* words expressing relationship or titles, no article is used with it: as, *mio padre*, *my father*; *tua zia*, *thy aunt*; *suo cugino*, *his cousin (m.)*; *Vostra Maestà*, *your Majesty*.

But if the possessive is in the *Plural* or *follows* the words expressing relationship or titles, the article must be used: as, *i vostri genitori*, *your parents*; *il padre mio*, *my father*; *la Maestà Vostra*, *your Majesty*, etc.†

The article is also used when another adjective precedes these words: as, *il mio caro padre*, *my dear father*; *la mia cara madre*, *my dear mother*.

NOTE.—*Loro* is never changed, and always takes the article, even with words expressing relationship: as, *il loro padre*, *their father*; *la loro madre*, *their mother*; *i loro figli*, *their sons*; *le loro figlie*, *their daughters*.

2. The Possessive Adjectives agree with their Substantives in gender and number. In English, the Possessive Adjective in the Object or Accusative agrees in gender with the Subject of the sentence, but in Italian it agrees in gender with the Object: as

*Carlo ha visto sua madre*, *Charles has seen his mother*.

*Vostra sorella ha visto suo padre*, *your sister has seen her father*.

*La madre ama i suoi figli*, *the mother loves her sons*.

*Il padre ama le sue figlie*, *the father loves his daughters*.

3. When *his*, *her*, refer not to the subject of the sentence, but to some other noun, the genitive of the Third Personal Pronoun, *di lui*, *di lei*, is used: as,

*Carlo ha visto sua sorella*, *ed i figli di lei*, *Charles has seen his sister and her children*.

*I suoi figli* would mean *the children of Charles*.

\* *Loro*, from the Latin *illorum*, Fr. *leur*.

† If these words are *modified* (see F, pp. 34-35), they take the article: as, *il mio fratellino*, *my little brother*; *la mia sorellina*, *my little sister*.

4. As *E'lla* is used in politely addressing a person (see p. 19), so *são* or *di léi* are used for the English *your*, and are then written with a capital letter: as,

*Io ho il São cappéllo, or io ho il cappéllo di Léi, I have your hat.*

## EXERCISE XVI.

*áma, (he, or she) loves.*

*ámano, (they) love.*

1. Mio cugino è allegro. 2. Io era a casa vostra ieri sera. 3. Noi siamo stati con vostro padre. 4. Voi siete mio amico. 5. Ella era con vostro fratello. 6. L'amico era con lo zio di Carlo. 7. Saremo a pranzo da vostro padre. 8. Io sarò a pranzo da vostra madre. 9. Carlo ama sua madre. 10. Emma ama suo padre. 11. Gli uomini amano i loro genitori. 12. Le mie sorelle amano il loro padre.

1. Your brothers are in the country. 2. Your sister is here. 3. Your aunt was with the brother. 4. Your house is the highest in the town. 5. My hat was white. 6. We were with your sons. 7. My exercises are very long. 8. She was with her father. 9. You are not so tall as your brother. 10. Your paper is whiter than my paper. 11. Your brother is stronger than my cousin (*m.*). 12. Your sister is smaller than my cousin (*f.*).

3. Demonstrative Adjectives (*Aggettivi Dimostrativi*).

The Demonstrative Adjectives are declined without the article.

Singular.		Plural.		English.
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
quêsto,*	quêsta,	quêsti,	quêste,	this, these (near me).
cotêsto,†	cotêsta,	cotêsti,	cotêste,	that, those (near you).
quêllo,‡	quêlla,	quêlli,	quêlle,	that, those (yonder).

1. *Quêsto* refers to a person or thing near the speaker; *cotêsto* to a person or thing near the person addressed; and *quêllo* to a person or thing at a distance.

2. *Quêlli*, the pl., is usually changed into *quêgli* before a vowel or impure *s*: as, *quêgli onóri, those honours*.

3. Before a consonant, except impure *s*, *quêllo* usually becomes *quel*, and *quêlli* becomes *quéi* or *que'*: as, *quel câne, that dog; quéi libri, those books*.

\* *Quêsto*, from the Latin *ecce iste*.

† *Cotêsto*, written also *codêsto*, contracted from the Latin *eccu' tibi iste*.

‡ *Quêllo*, from the Latin *ecce ille*.

## EXERCISE XVII.

1. Quest'uomo è vecchio, ma questa ragazza è giovine. 2. Questi alberi sono grandi. 3. Coteste sedie sono alte. 4. Queste pere sono mature. 5. Cotesto libro è buono. 6. Quelle case sono vecchie. 7. Cotesto cappello è nuovo. 8. Quel bicchiere è piccolo. 9. Quelle tazze sono grandi. 10. Questa penna è migliore della penna tua. 11. Questo è un bell' orologio. 12. Quella lezione è difficilissima.

1. This woman is younger than that woman. 2. This watch is dearer than that watch. 3. That glass is small. 4. Those streets are very (*molto*) long. 5. That coat is dearer than my coat. 6. Those lessons are not difficult. 7. That man has an old hat. 8. This house is higher than that house. 9. This exercise is less difficult than that exercise. 10. That dog is stronger than this dog. 11. This is an old painting. 12. That book is older than my book.

4. Interrogative Adjectives (*Aggettivi Interrogativi*).

The Interrogative Adjectives are—

Singular. Masc. and Fem.	Plural Masc. and Fem	English.
<b>quále,</b>	<b>quáli,</b>	<i>which ? or what ?</i>

**che** (both genders and numbers), *what ?* used in exclamations.

**Quale** often becomes **qual** before a consonant, except impure *s*.

## Examples.

quále cavállo ?	<i>which horse ?</i>
quále dóнна ?	<i>which woman ?</i>
qual bicchiére ?	<i>which glass ?</i>
quáli líbri ?	<i>which books ?</i>
quáli cáse ?	<i>which houses ?</i>
che bel líbro !	<i>what a beautiful book !</i>
che bé'la chiésa !	<i>what a beautiful church !</i>
che héi fióri !	<i>what beautiful flowers !</i>
che bélle pittúre !	<i>what beautiful paintings !</i>

andáto, *gone*.

## EXERCISE XVIII.

1. Quale donna avete voi visto ? 2. In quale città siete voi stato ? 3. Qual fiore è codesto ? 4. Quali fiori avete voi in mano ? 5. Quali libri avete voi avuti ? 6. Con quali studenti siete voi stato ? 7. Per quali vie siete voi andato ? 8. Quali ameni boschi avete voi visto ? 9. A casa di quali amici siete voi stato ? 10. Di qual colore avete voi il vostro abito ? 11. Le arance sono di color gialló. 12. Che bella musica è la musica italiana !

1. Which man has been here? 2. In which room have you been? 3. Which of my brothers have you seen? 4. Which flowers have you had? 5. Which books are those on the table? 6. Which colour is the best? 7. Which books has your father? 8. With which students have you been in the town? 9. Which forest have you seen? 10. What roads have you seen? 11. What (a) beautiful colour! 12. What (a) small hat!

## 5. Numeral Adjectives (*Aggettivi Numeráli*).

### A. CARDINAL NUMBERS (*Númeri Cardináli*).

1 úno, úna.	40 quaránta.
2 dúe.	41 quarantúno.
3 tre.	42 quarantadúe.
4 quáttro.	43 quarantatrè.
5 cinque.	44 quarantaquáttro.
6 séi.	45 quarantacínque.
7 sétto.	46 quarantaséi.
8 ótto.	47 quarantasétte.
9 nóve.	48 quarantóttro.
10 diéci.	49 quarantanóve.
11 úndici.	50 cinquánta.
12 dódici.	51 cinquantúno.
13 trédici.	52 cinquantadúe.
14 quattórdici.	53 cinquantatrè.
15 quíndici.	54 cinquantaquáttro.
16 sédici.	55 cinquantacínque.
17 diciassétte.	56 cinquantaséi.
18 dicióttro.	57 cinquantasétte.
19 diciannóve.	58 cinquantóttro.
20 vénti.	59 cinquantanóve.
21 ventúno.	60 sessánta.
22 ventidúe.	61 sessantúno.
23 ventitrè.	62 sessantadúe.
24 ventiquáttro.	63 sessantatrè.
25 venticínque.	64 sessantaquáttro.
26 ventiséi.	65 sessantacínque.
27 ventiséttre.	66 sessantaséi.
28 ventóttro.	67 sessantasétte.
29 ventinóve.	68 sessantóttro.
30 trénta.	69 sessantanóve.
31 trentúno.	70 settánta.
32 trentadúe.	71 settantúno.
33 trentatrè.	72 settantadúe.
34 trentaquáttro.	73 settantatrè.
35 trentacínque.	74 settantaquáttro.
36 trentaséi.	75 settantacínque.
37 trentasétte.	76 settantaséi.
38 trentóttro.	77 settantasétte.
39 trentanóve.	78 settantóttro.



79 settantanóve.	95 novantacínque.
80 ottánta.	96 novantaséi.
81 ottantúno.	97 novantasétte.
82 ottantadúe.	98 novantótto.
83 ottantatrè.	99 novantanóve.
84 ottantaquáttro.	100 cénto.
85 ottantacínque.	101 cénto ed úno.
86 ottantaséi.	110 cénto diéci.
87 ottantasétte.	200 duecénto.
88 ottantótto.	300 trecénto.
89 ottantanóve.	1000 mille.
90 novánta.	2000 dúe míla.
91 novantúno.	3000 tre míla.
92 novantadúe.	10,000 diecimíla.
93 novantatrè.	100,000 centomíla.
94 novantaquáttro.	200,000 duecentomíla.
1,000,000 un milióne.	100,000,000 cénto milióni.
2,000,000 dúe milióni.	1,000,000,000 un miliárdo.

## REMARKS.

1. All Numerals remain unchanged in Italian, except *úno*, the feminine of which is *úna*; and *mille*, having the plural *míla*.

2. In speaking of a person's age, the Italians use the verb *to have*, instead of *to be*, as in English: *io ho dódici ánni*, *I have twelve years (I am twelve years old)*; *che età avéte voi*, *what age have you? (how old are you?)*

3. When a noun follows *ventúno*, *trentúno* . . . . *cinquant-úno* . . . . *centoventúno*, etc., it is left in the singular (*i. e.*, it agrees with the last numeral *úno*): as *ventúno libro*, *21 books*; *ventúna pénna*, *21 pens*; but if the noun precedes the numeral, it is in the plural: as, *libri ventúno*, *pénne ventúno*.

4. In such phrases as *a year ago*, *two years ago*, the English word *ago* is translated by *è*, *is*, *sóno*, *are*, or *fa*, *it makes*: as, *è un áнно*, or, *un áнно fa*; *dúe ánni sóno*, or *dúe ánni fa*. (Note that *fa* always follows the noun.)

5. Once	is translated	<i>úna vólta</i> .
twice	„	<i>dúe vólte</i> .
three times	„	<i>tre vólte</i> .
four times	„	<i>quáttro vólte</i> .
five times	„	<i>cínque vólte</i> , etc.

## EXERCISE XIX.

1. Io ho settantasette libri. 2. Tu hai sei cani. 3. Noi abbiamo sette fratelli e nove sorelle. 4. Una compagnia di soldati ha duecento cinquanta uomini. 5. Un reggimento ha tre mila uomini. 6. Mio fratello ha tredici anni. 7. Mia sorella ha quindici anni. 8. Che età ha vostro cugino? Egli ha diciotto anni. 9. Io ho visto lo zio due giorni sono. 10. Due ore fa io era nella scuola. 11. Due settimane fa io era a Londra. 12. Io sono stato all'esposizione tre mesi fa.

1. She has two hundred and fifty books in the library. 2. He has two horses. 3. We have three brothers and six sisters. 4. They (*m.*) have six hundred books in the library. 5. He is (*has*) sixteen years *old*. 6. How old is your cousin? (*m.*) He is eleven years *old*. 7. I have seen your garden two years ago. 8. I have seen your brother an hour ago. 9. I was with your brother ten days ago. 10. I was at the exhibition a week ago. 11. That regiment of soldiers has two thousand one hundred and thirty men. 12. The captain has two hundred men in the company.

B. ORDINAL NUMBERS (*Númeri Ordinali*).

The Ordinal Numbers are declined like Adjectives: as, *il primo mese, the first month*; *la prima óra, the first hour*; *i primi giòrni, the first days*; *le prime alliéve, the first pupils (f.)*

1st *primo*.  
2nd *secóndo*.  
3rd *térzo*.  
4th *quárto*.  
5th *quínto*.  
6th *sésto*.  
7th *séttimo*.  
8th *ottávo*.  
9th *nóno*.  
10th *décimo*.  
11th *undécimo, or décimo primo*.  
12th *duodécimo, or décimo secóndo*.  
13th *tredicésimo, or décimo tértzo*.  
14th *quattordicésimo, or décimo quárto*.  
15th *quindicésimo, or decimoquínto*.  
16th *sedicésimo, or décimo sésto*.  
17th *diciassettésimo, or décimo séttimo*.

18th *diciottésimo, or diciottávo*.  
19th *diciannovésimo, or decimonóno*.  
20th *ventésimo*.  
21st *ventésimo primo, or ventunésimo*.  
30th *trentésimo*.  
31st *trentunésimo*.  
40th *quarantésimo*.  
50th *cinquantésimo*.  
100th *centésimo*.  
101st *centésimo primo*.  
200th *duecentésimo*.  
300th *trecentésimo*.  
400th *quattrocentésimo*.  
500th *cinquecentésimo*.  
1000th *millésimo*.  
10,000th *diecimillésimo*.  
100,000th *centomillésimo*.  
1,000,000th *milionesimo, etc.*  
último *the last*.

C. FRACTIONAL NUMBERS (*Frazióni*).

Fractional numbers are expressed by *ordinal* numbers, as in English, except *métzo*, *half*, *la metà*, *the half*. When *métzo* precedes a noun, it agrees with it: as, *métza libbra*, *half a pound*. Note that the English *a* is not translated.

If *métzo* follows the noun, it is left unchanged: as, *una libbra e métzo*, *a pound and a half*; *tre mézze lire fanno una lira e métzo*, *three half-lire make one lira and a half*.

## REMARKS.

1. The Numerals which follow the names of kings are rendered with the *Ordinal* as in English: as, *Vittório Emmanuéle Secóndo*, *Victor Emanuel II.*: *Umbérto Primo*, *Humbert I.*

2. The days of the month are rendered by the *Cardinal*: as, *il tre di mággio*, *the three (third) of May*; except the first day of the month, which is translated by the *Ordinal*: as, *il primo mággio*, *the first (of) May*.

3. The *hours* of the day are thus expressed:—

che óra è?  
 sóno le tre,  
 sóno le quáttro,  
 sóno le cinque,  
 è mézzo giòrno,  
 è mézza nótte,  
 sóno le dódici e un quártó,  
 sóno le dódici e mézzo,  
 sóno le dódici e tre quárti, }  
 l' una méno un quártó, }  
 è un' óra, or è l' una,  
 è un' óra e un quártó, }  
 è l' una e un quártó, }  
 sóno le due e tre quárti, }  
 sóno le tre méno un quártó, }  
 sóno le tre e cinque,  
 sóno le sei méno diéci,

*what o'clock is it?*  
*it is three o'clock.*  
*it is four o'clock.*  
*it is five o'clock.*  
*it is mid-day, noon.*  
*it is midnight.*  
*it is a quarter past twelve.*  
*it is half-past twelve.*  
*it is a quarter to one.*  
*it is one o'clock.*  
*it is a quarter past one.*  
*it is a quarter to three.*  
*it is five minutes past three.*  
*it is ten minutes to six, literally, six*  
*hours less ten, the word minutes*  
*being understood.*  
*at what o'clock?*  
*at two o'clock.*  
*at three o'clock.*

a che óra?  
 alle due,  
 alle tre,

álle quáttro,	<i>at four o'clock.</i>
álle séi e un quártro,	<i>at a quarter past six.</i>
álle diéci e mézzo,	<i>at half-past ten.</i>
dópo le diéci e mézzo,	<i>after half-past ten.</i>

4. The English twelve hundred, thirteen hundred, etc., must *never* be translated dódici cénto, trédici cénto, but mille e duecénto, mille e trecénto, etc.

5. The multiplicatives are:—

sémplice, <i>simple.</i>	séstuplo, <i>sixfold.</i>
dóppio, <i>twofold.</i>	setúplo, <i>sevenfold.</i>
tríplo, <i>threefold.</i>	décuplo, <i>tenfold.</i>
quádruplo, <i>fourfold.</i>	céntuplo, <i>one hundredfold.</i>
quíntuplo, <i>fivefold.</i>	

#### NAMES OF THE MONTHS.

I Mési.	The Months.	I Mési.	The Months.
Gennáio,	<i>January</i>	Lúglio,	<i>July.</i>
Febbráio,	<i>February.</i>	Agósto,	<i>August.</i>
Márzo,	<i>March.</i>	Settémbré,	<i>September.</i>
Aprile,	<i>April.</i>	Ottóbre,	<i>October.</i>
Mággio,	<i>May.</i>	Novémbré,	<i>November.</i>
Giúugno,	<i>June.</i>	Decémbré,	<i>December.</i>

#### NAMES OF THE DAYS OF THE WEEK.

I Giórni délla Settimána.	The Days of the Week.
Doménica,	<i>Sunday.</i>
Lunedì,	<i>Monday.</i>
Martedì,	<i>Tuesday.</i>
Mercoledì,	<i>Wednesday.</i>
Giovedì,	<i>Thursday.</i>
Venerdì,	<i>Friday.</i>
Sábato,	<i>Saturday.</i>

#### NAMES OF THE FOUR SEASONS.

Nómi délle quáttro Stagióni.

Primavéra,	<i>Spring.</i>
Està, estate, stàte,	<i>Summer.</i>
Autúnnno,	<i>Autumn.</i>
Invéрно,	<i>Winter.</i>

#### EXERCISE XX.

##### A.

1. Aprile è il quarto mese del'anno. 2. Luglio è un mese caldo. 3. Dicembre è un mese freddo. 4. La state è calda. 5. Quest'inverno è stato freddissimo. 6. La primavera del mille

ottocento settantotto è stata dolce. 7. L'autunno è bello. 8. Febbraio è un mese cortissimo. 9. Guglielmo è il primo della classe. 10. Maria è l'ultima della classe. 11. Settembre ha trenta giorni. 12. L'anno ha dodici mesi.

1. March is the third month of the year. 2. June has thirty days. 3. August is a warm month. 4. January is a cold month. 5. Summer in England is less warm than in Italy. 6. Winter in England is colder than in France. 7. My brother is the second in the class. 8. My sister is the first in the class. 9. This summer is the warmest summer. 10. This winter I shall be in Italy. 11. December is longer than February. 12. The week has seven days.

*morì, died.*

*nâcque, was born.*

### B.

1. Che ora è? Sono le sette. 2. A che ora siete stato dal medico? Alle due e mezzo. 3. Io sono stato al concerto dalle otto ed un quarto alle dieci e tre quarti. 4. Napoleone terzo morì a Chislehurst il nove gennaio mille ottocento settantatre. 5. Napoleone primo morì a Sant'Elena il cinque maggio mille ottocento ventuno. 6. Mio fratello nacque il sedici marzo mille ottocento sessanta cinque. 7. La sorella è alla seconda finestra del primo piano. 8. La terza casa in questa strada è vecchissima. 9. Carlo quinto e Francesco primo furono contemporanei. 10. Egli nacque il tre luglio del mille ottocento settanta. 11. Alle sei io era con tuo fratello. 12. Noi saremo alle otto a casa tua.

1. Victor Emmanuel II. died the ninth January one thousand eight hundred seventy-eight. 2. She was-born the fifth March eighteen hundred and sixty. 3. I was with your brother at seven o'clock. 4. We shall be at your house at nine o'clock. 5. What o'clock is it? It is half-past ten o'clock. 6. We were in the room at a quarter past two o'clock. 7. Charles is at the third window of the first floor. 8. Napoleon the first and Wellington were contemporaries. 9. My brother was born the twenty-first July eighteen hundred and seventy-one. 10. I shall be at that house at three o'clock. 11. He was with my cousin (*m.*) at two o'clock. 12. She was at the house of the doctor at half-past one o'clock.

### 6. Indefinite Adjectives (*Aggettivi Indefiniti*).

The following Indefinite Adjectives are always used with a noun. When by themselves, they are pronouns:—

Indeclinable.		Declinable.		
		Masc.	Fem.	
ógni, <sup>1</sup>	<i>each.</i>	<i>Sing. tútto,<sup>4</sup></i>	<i>tútta,</i>	} <i>all, each.</i>
qualche, <sup>2</sup>	<i>some.</i>	<i>Plur. tútti,</i>	<i>tútto,</i>	
qualúnque, <sup>3</sup>	<i>every.</i>	<i>Sing. alcúno,<sup>5</sup></i>	<i>alcúna,</i>	} <i>some, few.</i>
		<i>Plur. alcúni,</i>	<i>alcúne,</i>	
		<i>Sing. talúno,</i>	<i>talúna,</i>	} <i>some one.</i>
		<i>Plur. talúni,</i>	<i>talúne,</i>	
		<i>Sing. tále,</i>	<i>tále,</i>	} <i>such a</i>
		<i>Plur. tali,</i>	<i>táli,</i>	
		<i>Sing. cotále,<sup>6</sup></i>	<i>cotále,</i>	
		<i>Plur. cotáli,</i>	<i>cotáli,</i>	

*Plural only.*

Masc.	Fem.	
parécchi, <sup>7</sup>	paréccie,	<i>several.</i>
alquánti,	alquánte,	} <i>some.</i>
diversi,	diverse,	
póchi,	póche,	<i>few.</i>
differénti,	differénti,	<i>some.</i>
mólti,	mólte,	<i>many.</i>

*Singular only.*

niúno, <sup>8</sup>	niúna,	} <i>no one.</i>
núllo,	núlla,	
nessúno,	nessúna,	
verúno,	verúna,	<i>no one, with a negative.</i>
ciascúno, <sup>9</sup>	ciascúna,	<i>each one.</i>
un céro,	una céro,	<i>some one.</i>

## REMARKS.

1. When *tútto* precedes the noun, it must also precede the article : as,

<i>tútto il villággio,</i>	<i>the whole village.</i>
<i>tútta la città,</i>	<i>the whole town.</i>
<i>tútti gli uómini,</i>	<i>all the men.</i>
<i>tútte le dónne,</i>	<i>all the women.</i>

2. *Niúno*, *núllo*, *nessúno* take a negative if they follow the verb : as, *non ha nessun amico, he has no friend* ; but do not take a negative if they precede the verb : as, *nessun uómo è súo amico, no man is his friend.*

<sup>1</sup> *Ógni*, from the Latin *omnis*.  
<sup>2</sup> *Qualche* „ *qualis quam*, after the analogy of *quisquam*.  
<sup>3</sup> *Qualúnque* „ *qualiscumque*.  
<sup>4</sup> *Tútto* „ *totus*.  
<sup>5</sup> *Alcúno* „ *aliquis unus*.  
<sup>6</sup> *Cotále* „ *æque talis?*  
<sup>7</sup> *Parécchi* „ *L.L. pariculus, dim. of par.*  
<sup>8</sup> *Niúno* „ *ne unus*.  
<sup>9</sup> *Ciascúno* „ *quisque unus*.

## EXERCISE XXI.

1. Ogni uomo è mortale. 2. Tutta la casa era in fiamme. 3. Ho avuto alcuni amici a casa mia. 4. Niuna persona ha visto mio fratello. 5. Vostro fratello non fu visto da niuna persona. 6. Egli è stato visto da taluni uomini. 7. Il cugino è con parecchi amici nella camera. 8. Diversi uomini erano a casa mia. 9. Egli ha qualche amico a casa. 10. Parecchie donne erano nella chiesa. 11. Ha egli qualche cosa? Egli non ha nulla. 12. Ogni ora ha sessanta minuti.

1. Few persons were at my concert. 2. No one has seen your brother. 3. All the town was in flames. 4. Some person has seen my father with your brother in the town. 5. Every man has a friend. 6. Several men were in the house. 7. No man is happy. 8. Few men are rich in this town. 9. Many men are poor in that village. 10. My sister has several friends (*fem.*). 11. All these houses are very old. 12. She has been some time in Italy.

X.—THE VERB (*il Vérbo*).

There are five sorts of Verbs in Italian :—

1. ACTIVE, or Transitive (*il vérbo attivo*).
2. PASSIVE (*il vérbo passivo*).
3. NEUTER (*il vérbo neutro*).
4. REFLECTIVE (*il vérbo riflessivo*).
5. IMPERSONAL (*il vérbo impersonale*).

Verbs have five Moods (*Módi*) in Italian :—

1. The INDICATIVE (*L' Indicativo*).
2. The CONDITIONAL (*Il Condizionale*).
3. The IMPERATIVE (*L' Imperativo*).
4. The SUBJUNCTIVE (*Il Soggiuntivo*).
5. The INFINITIVE (*L' Infinito*).

To which may be added

The GERUND (*Il Gerúndio*).  
The PARTICIPLE (*Il Participio*).

Verbs have eight Tenses (*témpi*) in Italian ; one Present (*présente*), five Past (*passati*), and two Future (*futúri*).

Tenses are divided into Simple (*témpi sémplici*) and Compound (*témpi compósti*) ; the latter being composed of the past participle with a tense of the auxiliary verb *avére*, or *éssere*.

The eight Tenses are :—

1. PRESENT (*il présente*) io ámo, *I love, I am loving*.

2. IMPERFECT (*imperfétto*) expresses a past action going on while another took place: as, io leggeva quándo vói entráste, *I was reading when you came in.*

3. PAST DEFINITE (*passáto defínito*) expresses a past action entirely finished at a time specified: as, io viaggiái l'ánnò scórso, *I travelled last year.*

4. PAST INDEFINITE (*passáto indefínito*), or Compound of the Present of the Auxiliary and Past Participle of the Verb, expresses a thing as having taken place, without specifying when; or which has happened at a time not entirely past: as, égli ha mangiáto móltò, *he has eaten too much*; io ho vísto túò pádre óggi, *I have seen thy father to-day.*

5. PLUPERFECT (*più che perfétto*), or Compound of the Imperfect of the Auxiliary and Past Participle of the Verb, expresses a thing habitual or repeated, but which happened indeterminately before a past event: as, io avéva scrítto quándo vói mi vedéste, *I had written when you saw me.*

6. PAST ANTERIOR (*passáto anterióre*, or *rimóto*), or Compound of the Past Definite of the Auxiliary and the Past Participle of the Verb, expresses a thing which happened immediately before a past event: as, quándo io ébbi dormíto, uscíi di cása, *when I had slept I went out of the house.*

7. FUTURE (*il futúro*) expresses an action or thing which will happen at some indeterminate time to come: as, io morirò, *I shall die.*

8. FUTURE ANTERIOR (*futúro anterióre*), or Compound of the Future of the Auxiliary and Past Participle of the Verb, expresses a thing which will take place when another thing shall have happened: as, io sarò mórtò quándo tu arriverái a cinquant' ánni, *I shall be dead when thou wilt be fifty years old.*

The Italian Verbs are divided into three Conjugations (*coniugazióni*) distinguished by the ending of the Infinitive Mood.

- |  |       |                            |
|--|-------|----------------------------|
| I. The First Conjugation ends in                           | áre : | { as, amáre,<br>to love.   |
| II. The Second                    ,,                    ,, | ére : | { as, temére,<br>to fear.  |
|  | ere : | { as, véndere,<br>to sell. |
| III. The Third                    ,,                    ,, | íre : | { as, sentíre,<br>to feel. |



## XI.—FIRST CONJUGATION.—ACTIVE VOICE.

*Amàre, to love.*INDICATIVE MOOD (*Indicativo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

Singular.		Plural.	
io amo,	<i>I love.</i>	nói amiàmo,	<i>we love.</i>
tu àmi,	<i>thou lovest.</i>	vói amáte,	<i>you love.</i>
égli àma,	<i>he loves.</i>	églino àmano,	<i>they love.</i>
èlla àma,	<i>she loves.</i>	èlleno àmano,	

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfétto*).

io amáva,	<i>I loved.</i>	nói amavàmo,	<i>we loved.</i>
tu amàvi,	<i>thou wast loving.</i>	vói amaváte,	<i>you loved.</i>
égli amáva,	<i>he loved.</i>	églino amávano,	<i>they loved.</i>

PAST DEFINITE TENSE (*Passàto Definito*).

io amái,	<i>I loved.</i>	nói amámmo,	<i>we loved.</i>
tu amásti,	<i>thou lovedst.</i>	vói amásté,	<i>you loved.</i>
égli amò,	<i>he loved.</i>	églino amárono,	<i>they loved.</i>

FUTURE TENSE (*Futúro*).

io amerò,	<i>I shall love.</i>	nói amerémò,	<i>we shall love.</i>
tu amerái,	<i>thou wilt love.</i>	vói ameréte,	<i>you will love.</i>
égli amerà,	<i>he will love.</i>	églino ameránno,	<i>they will love.</i>

Compound Tenses (*Témpi Compósti*).PAST INDEFINITE TENSE (*Passàto Indefinito*).

io ho amàto,	<i>I have loved.</i>	nói abbiàmo amàto,	<i>we have loved.</i>
tu hái amàto,	<i>thou hast loved</i>	vói avéte amàto,	<i>you have loved.</i>
égli ha amàto,	<i>he has loved.</i>	églino hánno amàto,	<i>they have loved.</i>

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

io avéva amàto,	<i>I had loved.</i>	nói avevàmò amàto,	<i>we had loved.</i>
tu avévi amàto,	<i>thou hadst loved.</i>	vói aveváte amàto,	<i>you had loved.</i>
égli avéva amàto,	<i>he had loved.</i>	églino avévano amàto,	<i>they had loved.</i>

PAST ANTERIOR TENSE (*Passàto Rimòto*).

io ébbi amàto,	<i>I had loved.</i>	nói avémò amàto,	<i>we had loved.</i>
tu avésti amàto,	<i>thou hadst loved.</i>	vói avéste amàto,	<i>you had loved.</i>
égli ebbe amàto,	<i>he had loved.</i>	églino ebbero amàto,	<i>they had loved.</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR TENSE (*Futuro Anteriore*).

Singular.			Plural.		
io avrò amato,	<i>I shall have</i>	} loved.	nói avrèmo amato,	<i>we shall have</i>	} loved.
tu avrái amato,	<i>thou wilt have</i>		vói avréte amato,	<i>you will have</i>	
égli avrà amato,	<i>he will have</i>		églino avránno amato,	<i>they will have</i>	

IMPERATIVE MOOD (*Imperativo*).

áma (tu),	<i>love thou.</i>	amiámo (nói),	<i>let us love.</i>
ámi (égli),	<i>let him love.</i>	amáte (vói),	<i>love ye.</i>
		ámino (églino),	<i>let them love.</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD (*Condizionale*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presente*).

io ameréi,	<i>I should love.</i>	nói amerémmo,	<i>we should love.</i>
tu amerésti,	<i>thou wouldst love.</i>	vói ameréste,	<i>you would love.</i>
égli amerébbe,	<i>he would love.</i>	églino amerébbero,	<i>they would love.</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passato*).

io avréi amato,	<i>I should have loved.</i>	nói avrémmo amato,	<i>we should have loved.</i>
tu avrésti amato,	<i>thou wouldst have loved.</i>	vói avréste amato,	<i>you would have loved.</i>
égli avrébbe amato,	<i>he would have loved.</i>	églino avrébbero amato,	<i>they would have loved.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (*Soggiuntivo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presente*).

oh' io ámi,	<i>that I may love.</i>	che nós amiámo,	<i>that we may love</i>
che tu ámi,	<i>that thou mayst love</i>	che vói amiáte,	<i>that you may love.</i>
ch' égli ámi,	<i>that he may love</i>	ch' églino ámino,	<i>that they may love.</i>

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfetto*).

ch' io amássi,	<i>that I might</i>	che nós amássimo,	<i>that we might</i>
che tu amássi,	<i>that thou mightst</i>	che vói amáste,	<i>that you might</i>
ch' égli amásse,	<i>that he might</i>	ch' églino amássero,	<i>that they might</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passato*).

ch' io ábbia amato,	<i>that I may have loved.</i>	che nós abbiamo amato,	<i>that we may have loved.</i>
che tu ábbi amato,	<i>that thou mayst have loved.</i>	che vói abbiate amato,	<i>that you may have loved.</i>
ch' égli ábbia amato,	<i>that he may have loved.</i>	ch' églino ábbiano amato,	<i>that they may have loved.</i>

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

Singular.		Plural.	
ch'io avéssi	<i>that I might</i>	che nôi avéssimo	<i>that we might</i>
amáto,	<i>have loved.</i>	amáto,	<i>have loved.</i>
che tu avéssi	<i>that thou mightst</i>	che vói avéste	<i>that you might</i>
amáto,	<i>have loved.</i>	amáto,	<i>have loved.</i>
ch'égli avésse	<i>that he might</i>	ch'égli no avéssero	<i>that they might</i>
amáto.	<i>have loved.</i>	amáto,	<i>have loved.</i>

INFINITIVE MOOD (*Infinito*).

PRESENT.		PAST.	
amáre,	<i>to love.</i>	avér amáto,	<i>to have loved.</i>

GERUND (*Gerúndio*).

PRESENT.		PAST.	
amándo,	<i>loving.</i>	avéndo amáto,	<i>having loved.</i>

PARTICIPLES (*Participi*).

PRESENT.		PAST.	
amánte,	loving.	Masc.	Fem.
		Sing. amáto,	amáta,
		Plur. amáti,	amáte,
		} loved.	

## XII.—SECOND CONJUGATION.—ACTIVE VOICE.

Temére, *to fear.*INDICATIVE MOOD (*Indicativo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

Singular.		Plural.	
io témo,	<i>I fear.</i>	nói temiámo,	<i>we fear.</i>
tu témi,	<i>thou fearest.</i>	vói teméte,	<i>you fear.</i>
égli téme,	<i>he fears.</i>	égli no temono,	} <i>they fear.</i>
élla téme,	<i>she fears.</i>	élleno temono,	

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfétto*).

io teméva,	<i>I feared.</i>	nói temevámo,	<i>we feared.</i>
tu temévi,	<i>thou didst fear.</i>	vói temeváte,	<i>you feared.</i>
égli teméva,	<i>he feared.</i>	égli no temévano,	<i>they feared.</i>

PAST DEFINITE TENSE (*Passáto Defínito*).

io teméi,	<i>I feared.</i>	nói temémmo,	<i>we feared.</i>
tu temésti,	<i>thou didst fear.</i>	vói teméste,	<i>you feared.</i>
égli temè,	<i>he feared.</i>	égli no temérono,	<i>they feared.</i>

FUTURE TENSE (*Futúro*).

io temerò,	<i>I shall fear.</i>	nói temerémo,	<i>we shall fear.</i>
tu temerái,	<i>thou wilt fear</i>	vói temeréte,	<i>you will fear.</i>
égli temerà,	<i>he will fear.</i>	égli no temeránno,	<i>they will fear.</i>

*Compound Tenses (Témpi Compósti).*PAST INDEFINITE TENSE (*Passáto Indefínito*).

Singular.		Plural.	
io ho temúto,	<i>I have feared.</i>	nói abbiámo te-	<i>we have feared.</i>
tu hái temúto,	<i>thou hast feared.</i>	múto,	
égli ha temúto,	<i>he has feared.</i>	vói avéte temúto,	<i>you have feared.</i>
		églino háanno te-	<i>they have feared.</i>
		múto,	

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

io avéva temúto,	<i>I had feared.</i>	nói avevámo te-	<i>we had feared.</i>
tu avévi temúto,	<i>thou hadst feared.</i>	múto,	
égli avéva temúto,	<i>he had feared.</i>	vói aveváte temúto,	<i>you had feared.</i>
		églino avévano te-	<i>they had feared.</i>
		múto.	

PAST ANTERIOR TENSE (*Passáto Rimóto*).

io ébbi temúto,	<i>I had feared.</i>	nói avémmo te-	<i>we had feared.</i>
tu avésti temúto,	<i>thou hadst feared.</i>	múto,	
égli ebbe temúto,	<i>he had feared.</i>	vói avéste temúto,	<i>you had feared.</i>
		églino ebbero te-	<i>they had feared.</i>
		múto,	

FUTURE ANTERIOR TENSE (*Futúro Anterióre*).

io avrò temúto,	<i>I shall have feared.</i>	nói avrémo te-	<i>we shall have feared.</i>
tu avrái temúto,	<i>thou wilt have feared.</i>	múto,	
égli avrà temúto,	<i>he will have feared.</i>	vói avréte temúto,	<i>you will have feared.</i>
		églino avránno temúto,	<i>they will have feared.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD (*Imperativo*).

témi (tu),	<i>fear thou.</i>	temiámo (nói),	<i>let us fear.</i>
téma (égli),	<i>let him fear.</i>	teméte (vói),	<i>fear ye.</i>
		témino (églino),	<i>let them fear.</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD (*Condizionále*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

io temeréi,	<i>I should fear.</i>	nói temerémmo,	<i>we should fear.</i>
tu temerésti,	<i>thou wouldst fear.</i>	vói temeréste,	<i>you would fear.</i>
égli temerébbe,	<i>he would fear.</i>	églino temerébbero,	<i>they would fear.</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

io avréi temúto,	<i>I should have feared.</i>	noi avrémmo te-	<i>we should have feared.</i>
tu avrésti temúto,	<i>thou wouldst have feared.</i>	múto,	
égli avrébbe te-	<i>he would have feared.</i>	vói avréste te-	<i>you would have feared.</i>
múto,		múto,	
		églino avrébbero temúto,	<i>they would have feared.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (*Soggiuntivo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

Singular,	Plural.
ch'io téma, <i>that I may fear.</i>	che nói temíamo, <i>that we may fear.</i>
che tu téma, <i>that thou mayst fear.</i>	che vói temiáte, <i>that you may fear.</i>
ch'égli téma, <i>that he may fear.</i>	ch'égliño témano, <i>that they may fear.</i>

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfétto*).

ch'io teméssi, <i>that I might fear.</i>	che nói teméssimo, <i>that we might fear.</i>
che tu teméssi, <i>that thou mightst fear.</i>	che vói teméste, <i>that you might fear.</i>
ch'égli temésse, <i>that he might fear.</i>	ch'égliño temés-sero, <i>that they might fear.</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

ch'io ábbia temúto, <i>that I may have feared.</i>	che nói abbiámo temúto, <i>that we may have feared.</i>
che tu ábbi te- <i>that thou mayst</i> múto, <i>have feared.</i>	che vói abbiáte temúto, <i>that you may have feared.</i>
ch'égli ábbia te- <i>that he may have</i> múto, <i>feared.</i>	ch'égliño ábbiano temúto, <i>that they may have feared.</i>

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

ch'io avéssi te- <i>that I might</i> múto, <i>fear.</i>	che nói avéssimo temúto, <i>that we might fear.</i>
che tu avéssi te- <i>that thou mightst</i> múto, <i>fear.</i>	che vói avéste te- <i>that you might</i> múto, <i>fear.</i>
ch'égli avésse te- <i>that he might</i> múto, <i>fear.</i>	ch'égliño avés-sero temúto, <i>that they might fear.</i>

INFINITIVE MOOD (*Infiníto*).

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

temére, <i>to fear.</i>	avér temúto, <i>to have feared.</i>
-------------------------	-------------------------------------

GERUND (*Gerúndio*).

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

teméndo, <i>fearing.</i>	avéndo temúto, <i>having feared.</i>
--------------------------	--------------------------------------

PARTICIPLES (*Participi*).

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

teménte, <i>fearing.</i>	<table> <tr> <td></td><td>Masc.</td><td>Fem.</td></tr> <tr> <td> </td><td>Sing. temúto,</td><td>temúta,</td></tr> <tr> <td> </td><td>Plur. temúti,</td><td>temúte,</td></tr> </table>		Masc.	Fem.		Sing. temúto,	temúta,		Plur. temúti,	temúte,	} <i>feared.</i>
	Masc.	Fem.									
	Sing. temúto,	temúta,									
	Plur. temúti,	temúte,									

## XIII.—THIRD CONJUGATION.—ACTIVE VOICE.

Sentire, to feel.

INDICATIVE MOOD (*Indicativo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presente*).

Singular.		Plural.	
io sento,	<i>I feel.</i>	nói sentiámo,	<i>we feel.</i>
tu senti,	<i>thou feelest.</i>	vói sentíte,	<i>you feel.</i>
egli sente,	<i>he feels.</i>	églino sentono,	} <i>they feel.</i>
ella sente,	<i>she feels.</i>	èllo sentono,	

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfetto*).

io sentíva,	<i>I felt.</i>	nói sentivámo,	<i>we felt.</i>
tu sentívi,	<i>thou didst feel.</i>	vói sentiváte,	<i>you felt.</i>
egli sentíva,	<i>he felt.</i>	églino sentivano,	<i>they felt.</i>

PAST DEFINITE TENSE (*Passato Definito*).

io sentíi,	<i>I felt.</i>	nói sentímmo,	<i>we felt.</i>
tu sentísti,	<i>thou didst feel.</i>	vói sentísti,	<i>you felt.</i>
egli sentì,	<i>he felt.</i>	églino sentírono,	<i>they felt.</i>

FUTURE TENSE (*Futuro*).

io sentirò,	<i>I shall feel.</i>	nói sentirémo,	<i>we shall feel.</i>
tu sentirái,	<i>thou wilt feel.</i>	vói sentiréte,	<i>you will feel.</i>
egli sentirà,	<i>he will feel.</i>	églino sentiránno,	<i>they will feel.</i>

Compound Tenses (*Témpi Compósti*).PAST INDEFINITE TENSE (*Passato Indefinito*).

io ho sentíto,	<i>I have felt.</i>	nói abbíamo sen- títo,	<i>we have felt.</i>
tu hái sentíto,	<i>thou hast felt.</i>	vói avéte sentíto,	<i>you have felt.</i>
egli ha sentíto,	<i>he has felt.</i>	églino háanno sen- títo,	<i>they have felt.</i>

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfetto*).

io avéva sentíto,	<i>I had felt.</i>	nói avevámo sen- títo,	<i>we had felt.</i>
tu avévi sentíto,	<i>thou hadst felt.</i>	vói aveváte sen- títo,	<i>you had felt.</i>
egli avéva sentíto,	<i>he had felt.</i>	églino avévano sentíto,	<i>they had felt.</i>

PAST ANTERIOR TENSE (*Passato Rimóto*).

io ébbi sentíto,	<i>I had felt.</i>	nói avémmo sen- títo,	<i>we had felt.</i>
tu avésti sentíto,	<i>thou hadst felt.</i>	vói avéste sen- títo,	<i>you had felt.</i>
egli ebbe sentíto,	<i>he had felt.</i>	églino ébbero sen- títo,	<i>they had felt.</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR TENSE (*Futúro Anterióre*).

Singular.	Plural.
io avrò sentíto, <i>I shall have felt.</i>	nói avrémo sen- <i>we shall have</i> títo, <i>felt.</i>
tu avrái sentíto, <i>thou wilt have</i> <i>felt.</i>	voi avréte sen- <i>you will have</i> títo, <i>felt.</i>
égli avrà sentíto, <i>he will have</i> <i>felt.</i>	églino avránno <i>they will have</i> sentíto, <i>felt.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD (*Imperatívo*).

sénti (tu), <i>feel (thou).</i>	sentiámo (nói), <i>let us feel.</i>
sénta (égli), <i>let him feel.</i>	sentíte (vói), <i>feel ye.</i>
	séntano (églino), <i>let them feel.</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD (*Condizionále*).

PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

io sentiréi, <i>I should feel.</i>	nói sentirémmo, <i>we should feel.</i>
tu sentirésti, <i>thou wouldst</i> <i>feel.</i>	vói sentiréste, <i>you would feel.</i>
égli sentirébbe, <i>he would feel.</i>	églino sentiréb- <i>they would feel</i> bero,

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

io avréi sentíto, <i>I should have</i> <i>felt.</i>	nói avrémmo sen- <i>we should have</i> títo, <i>felt.</i>
tu avrésti sentíto, <i>thou wouldst</i> <i>have felt.</i>	vói avréste sen- <i>you would have</i> títo, <i>felt.</i>
égli avrébbe sen- <i>he would have</i> títo, <i>felt.</i>	églino avrébbero <i>they would have</i> sentíto, <i>felt.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (*Soggiuntívo*).

PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

ch' io sénta, <i>that I may feel.</i>	che nós sentiámo, <i>that we may feel.</i>
che tu sénta, <i>that thou mayst</i> <i>feel.</i>	che vói sentiáte, <i>that you may feel.</i>
ch' égli sénta, <i>that he may feel.</i>	ch' églino séntano, <i>that they may</i> <i>feel.</i>

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfétto*).

ch' io sentíssi, <i>that I might feel.</i>	che nós sentíssimo, <i>that we might</i> <i>feel.</i>
che tu sentíssi, <i>that thou mightst</i> <i>feel.</i>	che vói sentísti, <i>that you might</i> <i>feel.</i>
ch' égli sentísse, <i>that he might</i> <i>feel.</i>	ch' églino sentís- <i>that they might</i> sero, <i>feel.</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

ch' io ábbia sen- <i>that I may have</i> títo, <i>felt.</i>	che nós abbíamo <i>that we may</i> sentíto, <i>have felt.</i>
che tu ábbi sen- <i>that thou mayst</i> títo, <i>have felt.</i>	che vói abbíate <i>that you may</i> sentíto, <i>have felt.</i>
ch' égli ábbia sen- <i>that he may have</i> títo, <i>felt.</i>	ch' églino ábbiano <i>that they may</i> sentíto, <i>have felt.</i>

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

Singular.		Plural.	
ch' io avéssi sen- títo,	that I might have felt.	che noi avéssimo sentíto,	that we might have felt.
che tu avéssi sen- títo,	that thou mightst have felt.	che vói avéste sentíto,	that you might have felt.
ch' égli avésse sentíto,	that he might have felt.	ch' églino avés- sero sentíto,	that they might have felt.

INFINITIVE MOOD (*Infiníto*).

PRESENT.		PAST.	
sentíre,	to feel.	avér sentíto,	to have felt.

GERUND (*Gerúndio*).

PRESENT.		PAST.	
senténdo,	feeling.	avéndo sentíto,	having felt.

PARTICIPLES (*Particípi*).

PRESENT.		PAST.		
senténte,	feeling.		Masc.	Fem.
		Sing.	sentíto,	sentíta,
		Plur.	sentíti,	sentíte,

} felt.

The English forms *I do love, I am loving, I did love, I was loving*, etc., are to be translated in Italian by *io ámo, I love; io amáva, I loved*, etc.

## EXAMPLE OF THE PRESENT INDICATIVE OF AMÁRE.

Interrogative.	Negative.	Interrog. with a Neg.
Do I love? etc.	I do not love, etc.	Do I not love? etc.
ámo io?	io non ámo.	non ámo io?
ámi tu?	tu non ámi.	non ámi tu?
áma égli?	égli non áma.	non áma égli?
amiámo nói?	nói non amiámo.	non amiámo nói?
amáte vói?	vói non amáte.	non amáte vói?
ámano églino?	églino non ámano.*	non ámano églino?

## EXERCISE XXII.

Write out all the Tenses of the Indicative and Conditional Moods of *trovare, to find; vèndere, to sell; servire, to serve*;—in the Interrogative form, the Negative form, and the Interrogative form with a Negative.

\* The second person singular of the imperative negative is formed with the present of the infinitive: *as, non amáre, do not love; non temére, do not fear, &c.*



# XIV.—AFFINITIES OF THE ITALIAN AND LATIN VERBS.

1. As almost all Italian words end with a vowel, we must first suppress the final consonants of the Latin verb, in order to see the affinities of the verb in the two languages.

The following letters are often interchanged, their sound being approximate. *B* is exchanged with *v*; *e* with *i*; *d* with *t*; *o* with *u*; *ss* with *x*: as, *amáva* instead of *amábam*; *amáte* for *amátis*; *réssero* for *rexerunt*, etc.

2. The *Infinitive* is the same in both languages, ending in *are*, *ere*, and *ire*. The Latin Second and Third Conjugations in *ēre* (long), and *ěre* (short), form *one* conjugation in Italian; that is, the Second. Some Latin verbs ending in *ēre* (long) become in Italian *are*; as, *vovēre*, *to vow*, becomes *votáre*. Some other Latin verbs ending in *ēre* (long) become in Italian *īre*; as, *favēre*, *to favour*, becomes *favoríre*. The similarity of the *Tenses* will be seen by their juxtaposition.

## INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.		IMPERFECT		PERFECT.	
<i>Latin.</i>	<i>Italian.</i>	<i>Latin.</i>	<i>Italian.</i>	<i>Latin.</i>	<i>Italian.</i>
amo.	ámo.	amaba <i>m.</i>	amáva.	amavi.	amáí.
ama <i>s.</i>	ámi.	amaba <i>s.</i>	amávi.	amavisti.	amásti.
ama <i>t.</i>	áma.	amaba <i>t.</i>	amáva.	amavit.	amò.
amamu <i>s.</i>	amiámo.	amabamu <i>s.</i>	amavámo.	amavimus.	amámmo.
amati <i>s.</i>	amáte.	amabati <i>s.</i>	amaváte.	amavisti <i>s.</i>	amáste.
aman <i>t.</i>	ámáno.	amaban <i>t.</i>	amávano.	amaverun <i>t.</i>	amárono.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.		IMPERFECT.	
<i>Latin.</i>	<i>Italian.</i>	<i>Latin.</i>	<i>Italian.</i>
ame <i>m.</i>	ámi.	amavisse <i>m.</i>	amássi.
ame <i>s.</i>	ámi.	amavisse <i>s.</i>	amássi.
ame <i>t.</i>	ámi.	amavisse <i>t.</i>	amásse.
amemu <i>s.</i>	amiámo.	amavissemu <i>s.</i>	amássimo.
ameti <i>s.</i>	amiáte.	amavisseti <i>s.</i>	amáste.
amen <i>t.</i>	ámino.	amavissen <i>t.</i>	amássero.

NOTE.—In the *Perfect Indicative* the *v* in the *Italian* is dropped. The *Imperfect Subjunctive* is formed from the Latin Pluperfect, the *vi* being dropped.

3. The *Future* is not formed from the Latin, as some suppose, but from the present tense of *avére* joined to the Infinitive of the verb: as, *amerò* from *amare-ho*, “I have to love,” *amerái* from *amare-hai*, &c.

## XV.—PECULIARITIES OF SOME VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

The following seeming irregularities of some Verbs of the First Conjugation, are no real irregularities, but take place in order to preserve the original sound of its Infinitive; thus,

1. Verbs ending in *care* or *gare*, as *mancáre*, *to fail*; *pagáre*, *to pay*; take an *h* after *c* or *g*, when these precede *e* or *i*. This is done in order to preserve to the *c* and *g* the *hard* sound of the Infinitive, as

io mánc <i>o</i> .	io pág <i>o</i> .
tu mánc <i>hi</i> .	tu pág <i>hi</i> .
égli mánc <i>a</i> .	égli pág <i>a</i> .
nói manchiámo.	nói paghiámo.

2. Verbs ending in *ciáre*, *giáre*, *sciáre*, as, *cominciáre*, *to begin*; *passeggiáre*, *to walk*; *lasciáre*, *to leave*, in which the *i* only serves to indicate the soft pronunciation, drop this *i* before *e* or *i*, as

io comínc <i>io</i> .	io passégg <i>io</i> .	io lás <i>cio</i> .
tu comínc <i>i</i> (one <i>i</i> ).	tu passégg <i>i</i> (one <i>i</i> ).	tu lás <i>i</i> (one <i>i</i> ).
ful. tu comincerá <i>i</i> .	tu passeggerá <i>i</i> .	tu lascerá <i>i</i> .

3. Verbs ending in *chiáre* and *gliáre* drop the *i* only before another *i*; as

pigliáre, <i>to take</i> .	invecchiáre, <i>to become old</i> .
io pigl <i>io</i> .	io invécch <i>io</i> .
tu pigl <i>i</i> (one <i>i</i> ).	tu invécch <i>i</i> (one <i>i</i> ).
tu piglierá <i>i</i> .	tu invecchierá <i>i</i> .

4. Verbs ending in *iáre*, when the *i* of the termination is preceded by another vowel, drop the *i* before another *i*, as, *annoiáre*, *to annoy*;

io annó <i>io</i> .
tu annói (one <i>i</i> ).

When these verbs however have the accent on the *i* in the first person singular of the Present of the Indicative, they follow the general rule.

spiáre, <i>to spy</i> .
io spío, <i>I spy</i> .
tu spí <i>i</i> .

In which case both *i*'s must be distinctly pronounced.

## EXERCISES ON THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

*pensàre a, to think of.      ritornàre da, to return from.*

## EXERCISE XXIII.

*The Simple Tenses.***A.**

1. Io amo il mio paese natale. 2. Se tu fossi tanto buono quanto mio fratello, tu ameresti il maestro. 3. Io portava una lettera alla posta, quando incontrai il soldato nella strada. 4. L'uomo generoso perdona volentieri ai nemici. 5. Mia sorella amò sempre la musica ed ella canta come una cantatrice di mestiere. 6. Io pensava ch'egli cercasse il cappello per le scale. 7. Io ritornai dalla campagna con un orribile mal di testa. 8. Porta la scatola nella mia camera, Antonio, e fa presto (*be quick*). 9. Io pagherò le cambiali fra pochi giorni, Signore; scusate il ritardo. 10. Se tu studiassi, saresti il primo della classe. 11. Se tu non paghi i debiti, mio caro amico, sarà male per te (*ill for thee*). 12. Io canterei il duetto ch'Ella mi domanda, ma non ho voce stassera.

1. Do you love your country? Yes, sir, I love my country. 2. I should like to return to my country. 3. I should like to forgive all my enemies. 4. I met a man in the street; he was carrying a long stick. 5. I was seeking my hat in the room, when you returned from the concert. 6. I should study my lessons if I had time. 7. In a few days I shall return to town in company with my friends (*masculine*). 8. I should pay you, sir, if I had the money. 9. I shall sing a duet this evening with my brother at the house of your aunt. 10. My books were on the table in the library. 11. I am thinking of the present brought for my uncle by your sister. 12. Bring my hat into this room, John, and be quick.

**B.**

1. Amate voi il caffè, o il tè? Io amo il tè. 2. Portavate voi un cappello bianco, od un cappello nero stamattina al passeggio? Io portava un cappello bigio. 3. A che ora ritornaste dalla passeggiata domenica scorsa? Io ritornai alle cinque e un quarto. 4. A che ora avete voi l'abitudine di mangiare? Io mangio alle sei. 5. Cercate voi la sua compagnia? No, signore, io non cerco la sua compagnia. 6. Io cercava il mio ombrello e trovai il suo bastone all'angolo della mia camera. 7. Io comprerei delle frutta, se avessi danaro. 8. Io lodo gli scolari studiosi, ma biasimo gl'ingardi. 9. Pensavate voi alle vostre lezioni, durante le vacanze? 10. Voi parlerete italiano fra pochi mesi, se imparerete le vostre lezioni. 11. Dove erano i miei libri? Io trovai i vostri libri sulla mia sedia. 12. Io pagai venti lire al bottegaio per sei volumi di poesia.

1. Did you have a white hat or a black hat this morning? I had a black hat. 2. I shall return from the concert at ten o'clock. 3. Bring a cup of coffee to my brother. 4. I did not return from the concert at nine o'clock, but I returned at eleven o'clock. 5. Shall you forgive your enemy? I shall forgive all my enemies. 6. Did you find my ring on the table? I did not find your ring on the table. 7. Is your hat on my chair? No, sir, my hat is on the table. 8. Were you seeking my father this morning? Yes, sir. 9. Did you praise my exercises? No, sir, I blamed your exercises, but I praised the exercises of your sister. 10. Did you speak of William to my brother? Yes, sir, and I spoke also of John's garden to your father. 11. Had you time to buy the newspaper? No, sir, I had no time to buy the newspaper. 12. Why did you not praise my exercise? Because your exercise was not good.

### *The Compound Tenses.*

#### C.

1. Io ho mangiato del pesce e dell'arrosto con l'insalata; e tu che cosa hai mangiato? Io ho mangiato del salame con due uova. 2. A che ora siete arrivato a Londra? Alle due. 3. Voi siete molto invecchiato dallo scorso anno. 4. Ha ella parlato con tua madre? Sì, signora, ella parlò con mia madre oggi. 5. Avete voi pensato alle conseguenze di una tale azione? Sì, signore. 6. Avevate voi trovato mio padre di buon umore? No, egli era di cattivo umore. 7. Siete voi stato ammalato lungo tempo? Io fui ammalato due settimane. 8. Pensate voi che il contadino abbia seminato il grano? Io penso che il contadino non ha ancora seminato il grano. 9. L'uomo cattivo calunnia tutti. 10. Onora tuo padre e tua madre e sarai felice. 11. Hai tu imparata la tua lezione? Non ancora, signor maestro. 12. Basta! non annoiare gli amici con i tuoi lamenti.

1. Have you eaten? I have eaten some cherries. 2. Why have you praised the exercises of my little brother? Because the exercises of your brother were good. 3. Have you been ill seven days? No, sir; I have been ill ten days. 4. I should have found my hat, if I had had time. 5. They (*fem.*) have found in your room all the books of your brother. 6. Have you spoken to my cousin (*masc.*)? No, sir, I have spoken to your father. 7. Where have you bought this stick? I have bought this stick in Paris. 8. Have you learnt your Italian lesson? Yes, sir, and my master has praised my exercise. 9. The banker has blamed his servant (*masc.*) because he was lazy. 10. Have you been in France? Yes, sir. 11. Would you have paid the shopkeeper if you had had the money? Yes, sir, I should have paid the shopkeeper. 12. Have you found a needle in the corner of this room? Yes, sir, I have found two needles in that corner.

# XVI.—PECULIARITIES OF SOME VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

In order to diminish the number of Irregular Verbs to be given afterwards, we here subjoin many Verbs of the Second Conjugation which are subject only to some small irregularities.

1. Some Verbs of the Second Conjugation have a double termination for the First and Third Persons of the Singular and the Third Person of the Plural in the *Past Definite Tense*, as: *temére, to fear; credere, to believe; ricevere, to receive; vèndere, to sell: cédere, to give way; pérdere, to lose.*

Regular Termination.	Irregular Termination.
io teméi.	io temétti.
tu temésti.	
égli temè.	égli temétte.
nói temémmo.	
vói teméste.	
églino temérono.	églino teméttero.
io credéi.	io credétti.
tu credésti.	
égli credè.	égli credétte.
nói credémmo.	
vói credéste.	
églino credérono.	églino credéttero.

2. *Tacére, to be silent; piacére, to please; giacére, to lie down; nascere, to be born; nuócere,\* to be hurtful; and their compounds, form their First and Third Person Singular and Third Person Plural of the Past Definite Tense irregularly, thus—*

io tácqui.	io piáccqui.	io náccqui.
tu tacésti.	tu piacésti.	tu nascésti.
égli táccque.	égli piáccque.	égli náccque.
nói tacémmo.	nói piacémmo.	nói nascémmo.
vói tacéste.	vói piacéste.	vói nascéste.
églino táccquero.	églino piáccquero.	églino náccquero

3. *Tacére, piacére, and giacére add i after the c when this letter precedes a, o, u, in order to preserve the soft sound: as, nós taciámo, we are silent; églino giáciono, they lie down; piaciúto, pleased. These three verbs have*

\* Nuocere loses the *u* in the irregular persons of its Past Definite, and in the Past Participle.

also the First Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative irregular, as: *io táccio, I am silent; io piáccio, I please; io giáccio, I am lying down.*

4. The following Verbs are irregular in the First and Third Persons Singular and in the Third Person Plural of the *Past Definite Tense*, and in the *Past Participle*, all following the same rule: as,

**chiúdere, to shut.**

**PAST DEFINITE.**

io chiúsi.	nói chiudémmo.
tu chiudésti.	vói chiudéste.
egli chiúse.	églino chiúsero.

**PAST PARTICIPLE.**

chiúso, chiúsa, chiúsi, chiúse, *shut.*

accéndere,	<i>to light.</i>	intrapréndere,	<i>to undertake</i>
árdere,	<i>to burn.*</i>	intrídere,	<i>to dilute.</i>
ascéndere,	<i>to ascend.</i>	intrúdere,	<i>to intrude.</i>
ascóndere,	<i>to hide.</i>	invádere,	<i>to invade.</i>
chiúdere,	<i>to shut.</i>	inórdere,	<i>to bite.</i>
confóndere,	<i>to confound.</i>	offéndere,	<i>to offend.</i>
conténdere,	<i>to dispute.</i>	percórrere,	<i>to traverse.</i>
convértere,	<i>to convert.</i>	pérdere,†	<i>to lose.</i>
córrere,	<i>to run.</i>	persuádere,	<i>to convince.</i>
corródere,	<i>to corrode.</i>	precídere,	<i>to cut.</i>
delúdere,	<i>to delude.</i>	profóndere,	<i>to dissipate.</i>
diféndere,	<i>to defend.</i>	préndere,	<i>to take.</i>
discéndere,	<i>to descend.</i>	raccéndere,	<i>to light again.</i>
discórrere,	<i>to discourse.</i>	racchiúdere,	<i>to enclose.</i>
dispérgere,	<i>to disperse.</i>	rádere,	<i>to shave.</i>
dissuadére,	<i>to dissuade.</i>	recídere,	<i>to cut.</i>
disténdere,	<i>to extend.</i>	riaccéndere,	<i>to light again.</i>
divídere,	<i>to divide.</i>	riárdere,	<i>to burn again.</i>
elídere,	<i>to elide.</i>	richiúdere,	<i>to shut again.</i>
elúdere,	<i>to elude.</i>	ricórrere,	<i>to recur.</i>
esclúdere,	<i>to exclude.</i>	rídere,	<i>to laugh.</i>
esténdere,	<i>to extend.</i>	rifóndere,	<i>to melt again.</i>
fóndere,	<i>to melt.</i>	rimórdere,	<i>to bite again.</i>
illúdere,	<i>to illude.</i>	rinchiúdere,	<i>to shut in.</i>
immérgere,	<i>to immerse.</i>	ripréndere,	<i>to retake</i>
inchiúdere,	<i>to enclose.</i>	ródere,	<i>to gnaw.</i>
incídere,	<i>to engrave.</i>	réndere,†	<i>to give back.</i>
inclúdere,	<i>to include.</i>	scéndere,	<i>to descend.</i>
incórrere,	<i>to incur.</i>	scórgere,	<i>to perceive.</i>
infóndere,	<i>to infuse.</i>	scórrere,	<i>to go over.</i>
inténdere,	<i>to intend.</i>	socchiúdere,	<i>to half-shut.</i>

\* The letters in black type are dropped in the Irregular Persons of the Past Definite Tense and in the Past Participle.

† Has also the regular terminations.

soccórrere,	to help.	stringere,*	to clutch, to bind.
sommérgere,	to submerge.	suddividere,	to subdivide.
sorpréndere,	to surprise.	téndere,	to tend.
sorrídere,	to smile.	térgere,	to wipe.
sospéndere,	to suspend.	trascéndere,	to surmount.
sóttinténdere,	to be understood.	trascórrere,	to go over.
spárgere,	to scatter.	trasfóndere,	to transfuse.
spéndere,	to spend.	uccídere,	to kill.
spérgere,	to disperse.	vilipéndere,	to insult.
sténdere,	to extend.		

Fóndere and its compounds change *o* into *u* in their irregular forms.

*fondere*, to melt.

PAST DEFINITE.

io fúsi.	noi fondémmo.
tu fondésti.	vói fondéste.
égli fúse.	églino fúsero

PAST PARTICIPLE.

fúso, fúsa, fúsi, fúse, melted.

## EXERCISES ON THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

### EXERCISE XXIV.

#### *Simple Tenses.*

#### A.

1. Io discorsi con tuo fratello della prossima guerra. 2. Il mio cane morse due contadini, uno nella gamba ed uno nel braccio. 3. Intesi l'attrice cantare la bell'aria: "Tergi il pianto, giovinetta." 4. Il generale incorse la disgrazia del re per aver ucciso il signor N. in un duello. 5. Io chiusi la porta della camera e discesi le scale per incontrare vostro padre. 6. Ti offesi io, mio caro? No, signore. 7. La serva riaccese il fuoco nella vostra camera, signor Giovanni, adempiendo i vostri ordini. 8. Nostro padre rimproverava Maria ed ella sorrideva, mostrando non avere molta educazione. 9. I nemici invasero tutto il paese ed uccisero molte persone. 10. Noi discorrevamo del tuo amico Guglielmo e delle sue virtù, nella ferrovia. 11. Se non intendi perdere, non hai da giocare. 12. Egli spese tutto il suo danaro ne' piaceri, ed ebbe a lavorare.

1. The servant (*fem.*) lighted again the fire at eight o'clock this morning. 2. That young man spent all his money for his country. 3. The enemy invaded our country with a hundred thousand men. 4. Will this dog bite? No, sir, this little dog does not bite. 5. He works on steel. 6. He descended to meet his father. 7. The uncle of William spent all his money with his brothers. 8. She killed

\* *Stringere* has the *p.p. stretto*.

her sons. 9. John played with his cousin (*masc.*) in the garden. 10. You would not smile if you had a headache. 11. He enclosed his hat in its box. 12. I was speaking with your father, when your sister was singing.

### Compound Tenses.

#### B.

1. Avreste voi leso i suoi diritti, se aveste conosciuto le sue ragioni? No, signore, io ho abbastanza educazione. 2. Io non amerei aver offeso vostro fratello, perchè egli è stato sempre mio buon amico. 3. Il soldato avrebbe ucciso il suo nemico, se avesse avuto tempo. 4. Il medico ha infuso nuova vita all'ammalato con le sue medicine. 5. Il fuoco arse tutto il giorno e tutta la sera nella mia camera. 6. Tu hai intrapreso una difficilissima azione, spero che succederai. 7. Intendevate voi offendere mio cugino, con una tale lettera? No, signore, io non ho mai inteso offendere suo cugino. 8. Ha Ella ricevuto le lettere lasciate in casa mia? No, signore, io non ho ancora ricevuto quelle lettere. 9. Avete voi venduto il vostro giardino? Non ancora, signore. 10. Hanno i soldati diviso il danaro de' loro nemici? Sì, signore, ed ebbero centocinquanta lire per uno. 11. Suspendete la vostra partenza, o il signor zio l'avrà a male. 12. Ha egli pagato i suoi debiti? Sì, signore, ed ha anche comprato un gran giardino.

1. Have you lost much money in playing? No, sir, I have not lost any money. 2. Has my letter offended your brother? No, sir, your letter has not offended my brother. 3. Has she sold her house, sir? No, sir, she has not yet sold her house, but she has sold her gardens. 4. Have you undertaken the education of my cousin (*masc.*)? Yes, sir, and I think he will not lose his time. 5. Have you known Mr. B.? No, sir, I did not know Mr. B., but I have known his son. 6. Have they (*masc.*) sold their books? Yes, sir, and they spent all the money in oranges. 7. Has he shut the door? No, sir, he has not shut the door. 8. Light again the fire in my room, Mary, and bring a cup of tea and some bread and butter. 9. I have spoken to my enemy in his misfortune. That was a good action. 10. I should have come down (*descended*) to meet your father if I had had the time. 11. She has received all her books from our uncle this morning. 12. Would you have undertaken to find my hat in that house? Yes, sir.

#### C.

1. A che ora vostro padre è a casa? Egli riceve dalle sette alle nove di sera. 2. Avete voi ricevute tutte le mie lettere? 3. Io avrei ricevuto un regalo dal maestro se non fossi stato infingardo. Ha tua sorella ricevuto l'abito nuovo? Non ancora. 4. Non avevate voi ricevuto cinquecento lire pel vostro cavallo? No, signore, io ricevei seicento cinquanta lire pel mio cavallo.



5. Perchè battete voi vostro figlio? Io batto mio figlio perchè egli è un poco di buono. 6. Tuo fratello discendeva per le scale, ed è caduto. 7. Io ho incontrato vostro fratello in buona compagnia. 8. Io non ho perduto nulla, ma non ho guadagnato. 9. A che ora avete voi ricevute queste arance? Alle due ed un quarto. 10. Avete voi guadagnato molto danaro? Io ho guadagnato settantacinque lire. 11. Ha egli diviso l'arancia per metà? Egli divise l'arancia in sei parti. 12. Hanno i loro amici ricevuto de' regali? I miei amici non hanno ricevuto regali.

1. Have you not received a present from my father? I have not received any present from your father. 2. Have you known my brother Charles? I have not known your brother Charles, but I have known your brother William. 3. Have you lost any money? No, sir, I have not lost any money. 4. Have you not spoken with your master of your exercises? Not yet, sir. 5. Has he not yet sold his house? No, sir, he has not yet sold his house. 6. Had they (*masc.*) not undertaken a very difficult action? That action was not very difficult. 7. Had not your master beaten that lazy pupil? My master had blamed, but had not beaten, the lazy pupil. 8. Had the servant (*fem.*) re-lighted the fire in my room at eight o'clock? No, sir, she re-lighted the fire at three o'clock. 9. We have not spoken to your father to-day. 10. Who is fallen in the stairs? Your cousin (*masc.*) Charles. 11. Has she not received a present from her mother? Yes, sir; and she has also received a present from her father. 12. Would you not sell this house if you had no money? I should sell the house if I had no money.

## XVII.—PECULIARITIES OF SOME VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

1. There are only twelve Verbs of the Third Conjugation, which are Regular in all their terminations like *sentire*, *to feel* (see pages 54–56): these are,

Bollire,	<i>to boil.</i>	Sdrucire,	<i>to rend.</i>
Cucire,	<i>to sew.</i>	Seguire,	<i>to follow.</i>
Dormire,	<i>to sleep.</i>	Sentire,	<i>to feel.</i>
Fuggire,	<i>to run away.</i>	Servire,	<i>to serve.</i>
Partire,	<i>to depart.</i>	Sortire,	<i>to go out.</i>
Pentirsi,*	<i>to repent (oneself).</i>	Vestire,	<i>to clothe.</i>

Of the above *cucire* and *sdrucire* take an *i* whenever the *e* precedes a or o; as, io *cúcio*, *ch'io cúcia*, io *sdrúcio*, etc.

2. Other Verbs of the Third Conjugation, most of them from the Latin Verbs in *scere*, have the three Persons of

\* *Pentirsi* is conjugated as a Pronominal Verb: see pp. 101–108.

the Singular, and the Third Person of the Plural of the Present Tenses of the Indicative and Subjunctive Moods, and the Imperative, Irregular—the irregularity being the same for all of them, and is marked in black type in the following

## Examples.

*fióríre, to blossom.*

*impallidíre, to become pale.*

*Indicative.*

*Subjunctive.*

*Indicative.*

*Subjunctive.*

## PRESENT.

## PRESENT.

io *fiórísco.*

ch' io *fiórísca.*

io *impallidísco.*

ch' io *impallidísca.*

tu *fiórísci.*

che tu *fiórísca.*

tu *impallidísci.*

che tu *impallidísca.*

égli *fiórísce.*

ch' égli *fiórísca.*

égli *impallidísce.*

ch' égli *impallidísca.*

nói *fióriámo.*

che nós *fióriámo.*

nói *impallidiámo.*

che nós *impallidiámo.*

vói *fióríte.*

che vói *fióriáte.*

vói *impallidíte.*

che vói *impallidíate.*

églino *fiórís-*

ch' églino *fiórís-*

églino *impallidís-*

ch' églino *impallidís-*

*cono.*

*cano.*

*cono.*

*cano.*

*Imperative.*

*fiórísci.*

*fióriámo.*

*impallidísci.*

*impallidiámo.*

ch' egli *fiórísca.*

ch' egli no *fiórís-*

*impallidísca.*

*impallidíscono.*

*cano.*

Such are *avvizzíre, to wither*; *aggrandíre, to increase*; *affievolíre, to weaken*; *arricchíre, to enrich*; *impoveríre, to become poor*; *arrossíre, to blush*; *svaníre, to disappear*; *puníre, to punish*, and many others.

3. The following Verbs have *both* (the Regular and Irregular) terminations in their Present Tenses; *partíre* and *sortíre* changing their signification, according to their termination; as, *partísco, I divide*; *párto, I depart*, &c.

*Aborríre.*

*to abhor.*

*Muggíre,*

*to bellow.*

*Applaudíre,*

*to applaud.*

*Nutríre,*

*to nourish.*

*Assorbíre.*

*to absorb.*

*Partíre,*

*to depart (o), to divide (isco).*

*Avvertíre,*

*to advise.*

*Períre,*

*to perish.*

*Convertíre,*

*to convert.*

*Pervertíre,*

*to pervert.*

*Divertíre,*

*to divert.*

*Putíre,*

*to stink.*

*Feríre,*

*to wound.*

*Ruggíre,*

*to roar.*

*Garríre,*

*to sing (of birds).*

*Sortíre,*

*to go out (o), to assort (isco).*

*Inghiotíre,*

*to swallow.*

*Sovvertíre,*

*to subvert.*

*Lambíre,*

*to lick.*

*Tossíre,*

*to cough.*

*Languíre,*

*to languish.*

*Mentíre,*

*to lie.*

## EXERCISES ON THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

## EXERCISE XXV.

*Simple Tenses.*

## A.

1. L'acqua bolle, signora. 2. Dormiste voi molto la notte scorsa? Io dormii sette ore. 3. Perchè fuggivate nella strada? Perchè aveva paura che un cane mordesse le mie gambe. 4. A che ora partirete oggi? Alle quattro, od alle cinque. 5. Io sdrucii il mio abito stamattina nella scuola. 6. Questo cagnolino segue sempre mio fratello. 7. Mia sorella partì per Londra ieri sera. 8. Antonio serve nostro padre da venti anni; egli è un onestissimo servo. 9. Io non mangerò oggi, mio caro, perchè sono ammalato. 10. Perchè arrossite, giovinetto? Io arrossisco perchè il maestro non ha lodato il mio esercizio. 11. Un soldato non fugge i nemici del suo paese. 12. Servite il Signor B., ed egli pagherà.

1. I shall depart this evening. 2. My brother sleeps in his room. 3. He ran away from a dog. 4. He blushed, because his master blamed his exercise. 5. Your dog bites. 6. He will depart next Monday at six o'clock with my cousin (*masc.*). 7. That soldier ran away and was blamed by his captain. 8. I slept eight hours last night. 9. I tore my coat yesterday. 10. The water does not yet boil. 11. We shall eat at eight o'clock this evening. 12. The hours fly and do not return.

*Compound Tenses.*

## B.

1. Tuo fratello ha battuto il suo cane per aver morso il cugino. 2. Il maestro ha punito lo scolare, perchè egli non aveva imparato la lezione. 3. Egli ha arricchito tutti i suoi amici col suo danaro. 4. Noi abbiamo seguito il maestro alla passeggiata. 5. I nostri soldati hanno ucciso due mila nemici in battaglia. 6. Io ho inghiottito un osso, ed ora sono ammalato. 7. Noi abbiamo applaudito gli attori al teatro del re ieri sera. 8. Un leone nel giardino ha ruggito tutta la notte. 9. Voi avete dormito dieci-ore, signorino! 10. Mia sorella ha cucito nuove maniche al suo abito vecchio. 11. Egli ha mentito nella sua lettera; io non ho offeso suo cugino. 12. Noi abbiamo punito il servo, perchè egli era infingardo.

1. The master has beaten that lazy pupil. 2. She has swallowed a bone and is now ill. 3. We have slept nine hours last night. 4. You have punished my brother twice. 5. He has enriched his

cousins (*masc.*) with his money. 6. Our soldiers have killed two thousand five hundred and sixty-five enemies. 7. My mother has sewn new sleeves to my coat. 8. They (*masc.*) have applauded the new actress at the king's theatre last Saturday. 9. I should have punished you if you had not learnt your lessons. 10. We would have followed your father if we had had the time. 11. The master will punish all the lazy pupils. 12. He has enriched all my brothers.

## C.

1. Il maestro non ha ancora punito quello scolare infingardo. 2. Ha egli sdrucito il suo abito nuovo? No, signore, egli ha sdrucito il suo abito vecchio. 3. Non dormiste voi nove ore la notte scorsa? No, signore, la scorsa notte io dormii sei ore e mezzo. 4. Non ha il cane morso tuo cugino? Il cane non ha morso mio cugino, ma ha morso il nostro servo. 5. Non ha Ella lodato il mio esercizio? No, signore, io non ho lodato il vostro esercizio, perchè non è buono. 6. Non avreste voi battuto il giovinetto se fosse stato cattivo? Io non batto i giovinetti, ma biasimo la loro infingardaggine. 7. Avrebbe Ella applaudito l'attrice, signor Carlo? Io applaudo le buone attrici. 8. Da quanti anni Giovanni serve in casa vostra? Giovanni ha servito mio padre venticinque anni. 9. Perchè non avete voi seguito i miei consigli? Perchè i vostri consigli non erano buoni. 10. Avrebbe Ella seguito il mio consiglio, se fosse stato buono? Io avrei seguito il suo consiglio. 11. Chi ha tossito? Il Signor B. ha tossito. 12. Perchè impallidisce? Io non ho impallidito.

1. Would you not have punished my lazy brothers? I should not have punished your brothers. 2. Have you not praised my cousin's (*masc.*) exercise? I have praised that exercise. 3. Have you not blamed his laziness? I shall blame and punish his laziness. 4. Have you served a long time in this house, John? I have served in this house fifteen years. 5. Would you not have followed my brothers to the concert, if you had had time? I should not have followed your brothers. 6. Has not your dog bitten my father? My dog has not bitten your father; my dog has bitten my cousin (*masc.*). 7. Have the soldiers killed the enemies of their country? The soldiers have killed all the enemies of their country. 8. Did you not become pale when you received his letter? No, sir, but I blushed. 9. Has he run away from the school? No, sir, he is in the school. 10. Why has Mr. B. enriched his brothers? Because he loved his brothers. 11. Will they (*masc.*) be in London this evening? No, sir, they (*masc.*) will be in London next Wednesday. 12. Would your sister have sewn your coat? She would have sewn my coat if she had the time.

---

## XVIII.—COMPLEMENTS OF VERBS.

1. The *Complement* of a Verb is a word which *completes* the sense of a sentence: as, *il maéstro lóda lo scoláre, the master praises the pupil, the pupil is called the Complement of that sentence.*

2. There are two kinds of Complements, *i. e.*,

(a) The *Direct Complement*, which is put in the accusative case, as in the above example; and,

(b) The *Indirect Complement*, as, *io ho scríto úna léttera a mía mádre, I have written a letter to my mother, to my mother being here the Indirect Complement of the Verb scrivere, to write.*

3. The Direct Complement being the same in Italian as in English, does not require further explanations: *io ámo mío pádre; I love my father; io bévo ácqua, I drink water; io léggo un libro, I read a book, etc.*

4. The *Indirect Complement* in Italian differs greatly from the English, and requires further explanations.

(a) In the sentence

*John gives his brother a hat,*

the Italians *invert* the order of these words,

*John gives a hat to his brother;*

translating

*Giovánni dà uno cappéllò a súo fratéllò.*

In the above example the Direct Complement *un cappéllò* comes immediately *after* the verb *dà*, and *precedes* the Indirect Complement *súo fratéllò*.

As a general rule the Direct Complement is put in the Accusative Case, and the Indirect Complement in the Dative Case; as, *égli mandò mío fratéllò álla pósta, he sent my brother to the post-office; io inségno la língua tedésca a mío fratéllò, I teach the German language to my brother; égli diéde un libro a súo pádre, he gave his father a book.*

(b) If the Direct Complement is a Verb in the Infinitive Mood, it is generally preceded by *a*, or *da*; as,

*La mádre inségna a léggere álla figlia.*

*The mother teaches reading to the daughter.*

*Dà a mangiáre ágli affamáti.*

*Give to eat to the hungry.*

*Dà a bére ágli assetáti.*

*Give to drink to the thirsty.*

(c) If *fáre, to do, to make*, and *lasciáre, to let*, precede a

transitive verb, the signification of the sentence changes with the position of the Indirect Complement; as,

Io féci scrivere úna lèttera a mio fratéllo.  
*I ordered a letter to be written to my brother.*  
 Io féci scrivere a mio fratéllo úna lèttera.  
*I ordered my brother to write a letter.*

#### EXERCISE XXVI.

1. Io ho dato cinque lire al calzolaio. 2. Il maestro ha dato un anello ed una collana a sua moglie. 3. Ha Ella dato uno scudo a quel povero uomo? Io ho dato uno scudo a quel povero uomo e due scudi a quella povera donna. 4. Noi abbiamo ricevute delle arance da vostra zia. 5. Ella riceverà la mia lettera dalla posta domani sera. 6. I suoi scolari, signor maestro, hanno ricevuto tutti i premi dagli esaminatori. 7. Io non ho ancora ricevuto lettere da casa mia. 8. Io ho fatto scrivere un esercizio da mio fratello. 9. Io ho fatto un regalo a mia sorella. 10. Io ho fatto scrivere a mio fratello due lettere. 11. Noi abbiamo dato due arance a nostro cugino. 12. Avete voi ricevuto la mia lettera dalla posta? Io non ho ancora ricevuta la vostra lettera.

1. I have written a letter to my brother. 2. I have not yet written a letter to my cousin (*fem.*); but I have written a letter to my aunt. 3. I shall receive to-morrow two letters from my brothers. 4. I have given Charles all my money. 5. Would you have given John any money, if he had been a good servant? I should have given John ten dollars, if he had been a good servant. 6. I have not yet given my sister a ring. 7. He has not received any oranges from his servant (*masc.*). 8. I have made John write my exercises. 9. Has he given the man a glass of wine? Not yet, sir. 10. Did he give some bread to the poor man? He has given the poor man some bread and also some beer. 11. What language are you teaching your pupils (*masc.*)? I am teaching my pupils (*masc.*) the Italian language. 12. Was he blamed by his master? No, sir, he was praised by his master.

There are in Italian many verbs which require a Complement different from their English equivalent.

We give lists of such verbs, according to the Preposition that follows them and the cases they govern in their Indirect Complement.

#### A. VERBS GOVERNING THE GENITIVE CASE.

The Preposition *di* is the most generally used after verbs as an Indirect Complement; as, *égli raccontò maraviglie di túo zío, he relates wonderful things of thy uncle.*

Most of these verbs are Reflective, or Pronominal, and their Conjugation is given on pp. 101-108.

*Abbisognáre,	<i>to want.</i>	Godére,	<i>to enjoy.</i>
Abbondáre,	<i>to abound.</i>	Impadronírsi,	<i>to take possession</i>
Abusáre,	<i>to abuse.</i>	Incaricársi,	<i>to take charge</i>
Accórgersi,	<i>to perceive.</i>	Informársi,	<i>to enquire.</i>
Annoiársi,	<i>to be annoyed.</i>	Lagnársi,	<i>to complain.</i>
Appagársi,	<i>to be satisfied.</i>	Lamentársi,	
Arrossíre,	<i>to blush.</i>	*Maucáre,	<i>to want.</i>
Avvedérsi,	<i>to perceive.</i>	Maravigliársi,	<i>to marvel.</i>
Burlársi,	<i>to mock.</i>	Moríre,	<i>to die.</i>
*Cambiáre,	<i>to change.</i>	Occupársi,	<i>to be occupied.</i>
Compiacérsi,	<i>to be pleased with.</i>	*Parláre,	<i>to speak.</i>
Contentársi,	<i>to be satisfied.</i>	Pentírsi,	<i>to repent.</i>
*Conveníre,	<i>to agree on.</i>	Proffittáre,	<i>to profit.</i>
Degnársi,	<i>to condescend.</i>	Ragionáre,	<i>to reason.</i>
*Discórrere,	<i>to talk of.</i>	Ricordársi,	<i>to remember.</i>
Dubitáre,	<i>to doubt.</i>	Ripentírsi,	<i>to repent.</i>
Fidársi,	<i>to trust.</i>	*Vívire,	<i>to live.</i>
Giovársi,	<i>to profit.</i>		

## EXERCISE XXVII.

1. Egli abusa della pazienza mia ed abuserà anche della tua confidenza. 2. Quel signore abbonda di risorse. 3. Un proverbio italiano: "Fidarsi è ben, ma non fidarsi è meglio." 4. Il nostro amico B. ha cambiato di casa ieri. 5. La prego compiacersi di ascoltare le sue richieste. 6. Dubita Ella della onestà del suo servo Giovanni? Io non dubito dell'onestà di Giovanni. 7. Ha egli goduto lungo tempo della sua buona fortuna? Egli ha goduto della sua buona fortuna molti anni. 8. Discorrevate voi di mio padre? No, signore, noi discorrevamo del nostro nuovo maestro. 9. Morì egli di febbre, o di mal di cuore? Egli morì di febbre. 10. Profittarono i nostri amici della buona occasione? I nostri amici profittarono di una tale buona occasione. 11. Ha Ella paura di cadere per le scale? No, signore, io non ho paura di cadere. 12. Manca Ella di pane? Sì, io manco di pane e di butirro.

1. I do not doubt his honesty, he is an old servant of my father. 2. He will abuse your confidence. 3. I beg you to be pleased to listen to my complaints. 4. Were you not talking of our friends yesterday evening? No, sir, we were talking of our pupils (*music*). 5. Of what did he die? He died of fever. 6. Will you profit by this good chance? I shall not profit by that chance. 7. Are you afraid of falling? I am afraid. 8. Are you in want of some wine? Yes, sir, and I want also some water. 9. Do you blush for this exercise? Yes, sir, because this exercise is not good. 10. Has he changed his house? Not yet, sir. 11. We shall change house to-morrow. 12. I shall speak of your laziness to your master.

---

\* These verbs govern also other cases.

## B. VERBS GOVERNING THE DATIVE CASE.

The following Verbs require the Preposition *a* after them when meaning:

Acconsentíre,	<i>to consent.</i>	Imparáre,	<i>to learn.</i>
Accostumársi,	<i>to accustom one-self.</i>	Incitáre,	<i>to excite.</i>
Adattársi,	<i>to accommodate oneself.</i>	Inclináre,	<i>to incline.</i>
Adempire,	<i>to fulfil.</i>	Indurre,	<i>to induce.</i>
Affaticársi,	<i>to endeavour.</i>	Insegnáre,	<i>to teach.</i>
Aiutáre,	<i>to help.</i>	Insistere,	<i>to insist.</i>
Applicársi,	<i>to endeavour.</i>	Invitáre,	<i>to invite.</i>
Atténdersi,	<i>to expect.</i>	Méttersi,	<i>to begin.</i>
Avvezzársi,	<i>to accustom one-self.</i>	Offrírsi,	<i>to offer oneself.</i>
Bastáre,	<i>to be sufficient.</i>	Persisterè,	<i>to persist.</i>
Condannáre,	<i>to condemn.</i>	Perveníre,	<i>to get to.</i>
Contribuíre,	<i>to contribute.</i>	Piacérsi,	<i>to please.</i>
Costringere,	<i>to oblige.</i>	Provvedére,	<i>to provide.</i>
Dáre,	<i>to give.</i>	Réggere,	<i>to endure.</i>
Destináre,	<i>to destine.</i>	Riflettére,	<i>to reflect.</i>
Determinársi,	<i>to determine one-self.</i>	Rinunziáre,	<i>to renounce.</i>
Dispórsi,	<i>to prepare oneself.</i>	Risólversi,	<i>to resolve.</i>
Equivalére,	<i>to be equivalent.</i>	Riuscíre,	<i>to succeed.</i>
Esitáre,	<i>to hesitate.</i>	Soccorrere,	<i>to assist.</i>
Espórsi,	<i>to expose one-self.</i>	Sopravvivere	<i>to survive.</i>
Forzáre,	<i>to force.</i>	Spronáre,	<i>to spur.</i>
		Stimoláre,	<i>to stimulate.</i>
		Supplíre,	<i>to suffice.</i>
		Tardáre,	<i>to long.</i>
		Toccáre,	<i>to concern.</i>
		Ubbidíre,	<i>to obey.</i>

## EXERCISE XXVIII.

1. Venticinque lire italiane equivalgono ad una lira sterlina. 2. Dieci centesimi italiani, o due soldi, equivalgono ad un soldo inglese. 3. Una lira italiana equivale a dieci soldi inglesi. 4. Io insegno a mio fratello la lingua inglese ed a mia sorella la lingua francese. 5. Il maestro insegna la musica ai suoi scolari. 6. Provvedete ai vostri bisogni quando siete giovani. 7. Noi abbiamo a tutto provveduto. 8. Egli sopravviverà a suo fratello, la sua salute è ottima. 9. Tocca a Guglielmo il provvedere ai nostri bisogni. 10. Ubbidite ai vostri genitori ed ai vostri maestri e sarete felici. 11. Il maestro ha biasimato lo scolare, perchè non aveva ubbidito ai suoi ordini. 12. Noi ubbidiremo, ed impareremo le nostre lezioni.

1. One sovereign is worth (is equivalent to) twenty-five Italian lire. 2. An English penny is equivalent to ten Italian centesimi. 3. Are you teaching your brother the Italian language? No, sir; I teach my brother the English language. 4. Our master teaches music and the French language to all his pupils (*mas.*). 5. Would



you teach my cousins (*masc.*) the French language? I should teach your cousins (*masc.*) the French language if I had the time. 6. She has taught my sister music and Italian. 7. Our father provides for all our wants. 8. Will he survive his old uncle? He will survive his uncle, because his health is good. 9. Mr. B. survived his grandfather thirty-two years seven months and five days. 10. Obey your masters and your parents and you will be praised. 11. A good pupil (*masc.*) obeys his master's orders. 12. I shall teach Charles music, if he is a good pupil.

### C. VERBS GOVERNING THE ABLATIVE CASE.

The following Verbs require the Prepositions *da, in, per,* etc., after them when meaning :

Allontanáre,	<i>to go away.</i>	Náscere,	<i>to take origin.</i>
Astenérsi,	<i>to abstain.</i>	*Preserváre,	<i>to preserve.</i>
Cadére,	<i>to fall.</i>	Proveníre,	<i>to come from.</i>
*Cominciáre,	<i>to begin.</i>	Sbrigársi,	<i>to get rid of.</i>
Deriváre,	<i>to derive.</i>	Scacciáre,	<i>to turn out.</i>
Dipéndere,	<i>to depend.</i>	Scoppiáre,	<i>to burst.</i>
Dispensáre,	<i>to dispense.</i>	Smascelláre,	<i>to burst (of laugh-</i>
Distínguere,	<i>to distinguish.</i>		<i>ing).</i>
Divídere,	<i>to separate.</i>	*Tiráre,	<i>to blow (of the</i>
*Guardáre,	<i>to take care.</i>		<i>wind).</i>
Liberáre,	<i>to free.</i>		

Those marked \* may also govern the Accusative.

### EXERCISE XXIX.

1. Egli cadde dal terzo piano nella strada. 2. Il bicchiere è caduto dalla tavola sulla tua sedia. 3. Comincia la tua lezione dalla pagina terza. 4. Questa parola deriva dal latino. 5. Da che lingua deriva questo verbo? Codesto verbo è derivato dal greco. 6. Egli non distingue il bene dal male. 7. I buoni scolari sono divisi dai cattivi scolari. 8. Il Reno nasce nelle montagne della Svizzera. 9. La guerra del mille ottocento cinquantanove liberò la Lombardia dal dominio austriaco. 10. Carlo fu scacciato dalla scuola perchè era un cattivo ragazzo. 11. Quando mia sorella parlò, io scoppiai dal pianto. 12. Il vento tira dal levante questa sera.

1. Your watch is fallen from the table. 2. Have (*are*) you fallen on the stairs? No, sir, I have (*am*) not fallen. 3. All my books have (*are*) fallen from my arms. 4. These two words are derived from the Greek. 5. From what language is this verb derived? That verb is derived from the Latin language. 6. Do you distinguish the white colour from the black? I *do* distinguish all colours. 7. What wind blows this evening? The wind this

evening blows from the east. 8. Why was John turned out of school? Because he did not learn his lessons. 9. In what year was Lombardy freed from the Austrian domination? In the year eighteen hundred and fifty-nine. 10. Why has Charles burst out crying? Because his sister is ill. 11. Wherefrom does our lesson begin? From the seventy-seventh page. 12. Is that man fallen in the street? Yes, sir.

#### D. OTHER VERBS WITH MORE THAN ONE COMPLEMENT.

The following Verbs have more than one Complement, and some of them change their signification with the change of their Complement:

Assistere a,	to be present.	Giocare a,	to play at.
Assistere (with acc.),	to help.	Giocare di,	to play for.
Cambiare (with acc.)	to alter.	Mancare (acc.),	to be less.
Cambiare di,	to change.	Mancare di,	to want.
Cercare (acc.),	to look for.	Mancare a	to fail in.
Cercare di,	to try.	Pensare a,	to think of.
Convenire di,	to agree.	Pensare di,	to reflect.
Convenire a,	to be becoming.	Rispondere a,	to answer.
		Rispondere di,	to become surety for.
Crédere (acc.) (of things).	to believe.	Servire (acc.),	to serve.
Crédere a,	to believe.	Servire di,	to be used for.
Crédere in (proper noun),	to believe.	Soddisfare a,	to answer, to content.
Domandare a (person),	to ask.	Soddisfare (acc.),	to satisfy.
Domandare (acc.),	to ask.	Venire di, da,	to come from.
Domandare di,	to enquire after.	Uscire di, da,	to go out from.

#### EXERCISE XXX.

1. Adempiste voi ai vostri doveri? Io adempio i miei doveri. 2. Noi assistemmo alla rappresentazione di Hamlet al teatro del re lunedì scorso. 3. Ha Ella assistito quel povero zoppo? Sì, signore, io ho dato allo zoppo cinque lire. 4. L'aspetto di questa città ha cambiato negli ultimi cinque anni. 5. Ha Ella cambiato di cappello, signor mio? Sì, io ho un cappello nuovo. 6. Chi cerca Ella, signore? Io cerco la Signora B. 7. Che cerca Ella di fare alla porta? Io cerco di aprire la porta per entrare. 8. Crede Ella la storia del soldato? Io non credo al soldato. 9. Carlo crede in Dio ed all' Evangelo. 10. Io domando arance. A chi domanda Ella delle arance? A Giovanni. 11. Di chi domanda Ella, signore? Io domando del signore Z. 12. Giocheremo noi agli scacchi? Sì, signore; ma di che giocheremo? Giocheremo d' una lira.

1. We fulfil our duties, sir. 2. Were you present in the king's theatre at the representation of Hamlet? No, sir, I was not at the theatre last week. 3. Has our master helped that poor man? Our master always helps the poor. 4. Have you altered the appearance of your house? I have not yet altered the appearance of my house. 5. Has Charles changed his coat? Yes, sir; and he has also changed his hat. 6. I am trying to open the door to go in. 7. Do you believe our cousin (*masc.*)? I do not believe your cousin's (*masc.*) story. 8. Do you believe in the Gospel? We believe in the Gospel. 9. What do you ask, sir? I ask for a bottle of wine and some bread and cheese. 10. Shall we play at chess, sir? Yes, sir, but not for money. 11. Are you thinking of your father? I am not thinking of my father, but I think of writing a letter to my cousin (*fem.*). 12. Who has enquired after my brother? Mr. B. has enquired of your brother and of your father

## XIX.—THE PRONOUN (*il Pronóme*).

The Pronouns (*Pronómi*) are used to avoid the repetition of preceding Nouns. They are of six kinds: Personal (*personále*), Demonstrative (*dimostrativo*), Possessive (*possessivo*), Interrogative (*interrogativo*), Relative (*relativo*), and Indefinite (*indefinito*).

### A. Personal Pronouns (*Pronómi Personáli*).

There are two kinds of Personal Pronouns: Absolute (*assolúti*), and Conjunctive (*congiúnti*). The difference between these two kinds of Personal Pronouns is shown in the following

#### Examples.

Conjunctive Pronoun.	{ Give me an orange. Dátemi un' arância
Absolute Pronoun.	{ Give an orange to me, and not to my brother. Dáte un' arância a me, e non a mío fratéllo.

In the first example the idea conveyed by the Verb *dáte*, *give*, bears more upon *arância*, *orange*, than upon *mi*, *to me*: in the second example the contrary takes place, and the Verb lays its stress on the Pronoun *a me*.

The *Conjunctive* Pronoun is generally joined to the Verb, if coming after the Verb, and hence its name.

I. Absolute Personal Pronouns (*Pronómi Personáli Assolúti*)*First Person.*

Singular.		Masculine and Feminine.		Plural.	
Nom.	io,	I.	Nom.	nói,	we.
Gen.	di me,	of me.	Gen.	di nói,	of us.
Dat.	a me,	to me.	Dat.	a nói,	to us.
Acc.	me,	me.	Acc.	nói,	us.
Abl.	da me,	from me.	Abl.	da nói,	from us.
	con me,	with me.		con nói,	with us.
	per me,	by me.		per nói,	by us.
	in me,	in me.		in nói,	in us.
	su me,	upon me.		su nói,	upon us.

*Second Person.*

Singular.		Masculine and Feminine.		Plural.	
Nom.	tu,	thou.	Nom.	vói,	you.
Gen.	di te,	of thee.	Gen.	di vói,	of you.
Dat.	a te,	to thee.	Dat.	a vói,	to you.
Acc.	te,	thee.	Acc.	vói,	you.
Abl.	da te,	from thee.	Abl.	da vói,	from you.
	con te,	from thee.		con vói,	with you.
	per te,	by thee.		per vói,	by you.
	in te,	in thee.		in vói,	in you.
	su te,	upon thee.		su vói,	upon you.

*Third Person.*

Masculine.		Singular.		Feminine.	
Nom.	égli, ei, e', éssó,	he, it.	Nom.	élla, la, éssa,	she, it.
Gen.	di lúi, di éssó,	of him, of it.	Gen.	di léi, di éssa,	of her, of it.
Dat.	a lúi, ad éssó,	to him, to it.	Dat.	a léi, ad éssa,	to her, to it.
Acc.	lúi, éssó,	him, it.	Acc.	léi, éssa,	her, it.
Abl.	da lúi, da éssó,	from him,	Abl.	da léi, da éssa,	from her,
		from it.			from it.
	con lúi, con éssó,	with him,		con léi, con	with her,
		with it.		éssa,	with it.
	per lúi, per éssó,	by him, by it.		per léi, per	by her, by it
				éssa,	
	in lúi, in éssó,	in him, in it.		in léi, in éssa,	in her, in it.
	su lúi, su éssó,	upon him,		su léi, su éssa,	upon her,
		upon it.			upon it.
Plural.					
Nom.	églino, éssi,	they.	Nom.	élleno, ésse,	they.
Gen.	di lóro, di éssi,	of them.	Gen.	di lóro, di ésse,	of them.
Dat.	a lóro, ad éssi,	to them.	Dat.	a lóro, ad ésse,	to them.
Acc.	lóro, éssi,	them.	Acc.	lóro, ésse,	them.

<i>Abl.</i>	da lóro, da éssi, <i>from them.</i>	<i>Abl.</i>	da lóro, da ésse, <i>from them.</i>
	con lóro, con <i>with them.</i>		con lóro, con <i>with them.</i>
	éssi,		esse,
	per lóro, per éssi, <i>by them.</i>		per lóro, per <i>by them.</i>
			esse,
	in lóro, in éssi, <i>in them.</i>		in lóro, in esse, <i>in them.</i>
	su lóro, su éssi, <i>upon them.</i>		su lóro, su esse, <i>upon them.</i>

*Third Person for both Genders and Numbers.*

<i>Gen.</i>	di sè,*	<i>of himself, herself, itself, themselves.</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	a sè,	<i>to himself, herself, itself, themselves.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	sè,	<i>himself, herself, itself, themselves.</i>
<i>Abl.</i>	da sè,	<i>from himself, herself, itself, themselves.</i>
	con sè,	<i>with himself, herself, itself, themselves.</i>
	per sè,	<i>by himself, herself, itself, themselves.</i>
	in sè,	<i>in himself, herself, itself, themselves.</i>
	sopra sè,	<i>upon himself, herself, itself, themselves.</i>

REMARKS

1. Ei, e', are contractions of *égli*, from the Latin *ille*.
2. *Égli* and *Élla* are used only for persons, *éssó*, *éssa*, being used for things and persons also.
3. The English *it*, when referring neither to a person nor to a thing, is not translated: as, *it is true*, *è véro*.
4. The English *self*, *selves*, *own self*, *ownelves*, are rendered in Italian by the words *stéssó*, *medésimo*, *stéssa*, *medésima*, *stéssi*, *medésimi*, *stésse*, *medésime*.

*I have written the letter myself.*

*Io stéssó ho scríto la léttera, or, Io medésimo ho scríto la léttera.*

*Mary herself has asked after you.*

*Maria élla stéssa (or élla medésima) ha domandáto di vói.*

5. Instead of *con me*, *con te*, *con se*, *méco*, *téco*, *séco* are used very often: and, in poetry only, *nósco* and *vósco*, instead of *con nói*, *con vói*.

EXERCISE XXXI.

1. Chi è stato quì? Il Signor B. è stato quì ed ha egli stéssó portato una lettera per vói.
2. Pensi tu a me? Io non penso a te, ma penso ad esse.
3. Manda il danaro a me e non a mio fratello.
4. Perchè Ella non ascolta me? Perchè non ho tempo da perdere.
5. Aprite la porta per me. Perchè non aprite vói stéssó la porta? Perchè le mie mani sono sudicie.
6. Il maestro egli stéssó ha dato a tuo fratello un bel libro ed a te una nuova penna.
7. Io stéssó ho

\* *Sè* takes an accent when it could be mistaken for *se*, *if*.

scritto a lui una lettera ieri sera. 8. Chi ha firmate le cambiali? Ho firmate le cambiali io stesso. 9. Ho dato a lei un cappello nuovo ed a lui un nuovo abito. 10. Ho ricevuto da lei questa mattina un bellissimo regalo, ed io stesso ho scritto a lei una lettera di ringraziamento. 11. Giovanni, portate del vino per questi signori. 12. Egli è molto superbo, egli è pieno di sè.

1. I have given a new hat to him. 2. She has been here, and she herself brought two books for you. 3. Open the box for me, I have no time to lose. 4. The master himself has given a new book to him, and he has also given an exercise to us. 5. Have you given to them my letters? I have given them your letters yesterday. 6. Have you yourself signed the bills of exchange? Yes, sir, I have signed the bills of exchange myself. 7. To whom have you given my pen? To him. 8. Is he proud? Yes, sir, he is (full of himself) very proud. 9. The shoemaker has brought the boots himself. 10. He always speaks of himself. 11. I have been with him myself all the evening. 12. Have you been with them? Yes, sir, I have been with them all the evening.

## 2. Conjunctive Personal Pronouns (*Pronómi Personáli Congiúnti*).

The Conjunctive Personal Pronouns have only the *Dative* and the *Accusative* cases.

### *First Person.*

Masculine and Feminine.			
		Singular.	Plural.
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>mi,</i>	<i>me, to me.</i>	<i>Dat. ci, ne, us, to us.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>mi,</i>	<i>me.</i>	<i>Acc. ci, no, us.</i>

### *Second Person.*

Masculine and Feminine.			
		Singular.	Plural.
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>ti,</i>	<i>thee, to thee.</i>	<i>Dat. vi, you, to you.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>ti,</i>	<i>thee.</i>	<i>Acc. vi, you.</i>

### *Third Person.*

Masculine.		Feminine.	
		Singular.	Plural.
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>gli,</i>	<i>him, to him.</i>	<i>Dat. le, her, to her. Le, to you.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>lo, il,</i>	<i>him.</i>	<i>Acc. la, her. La, you.</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>lóro,</i>	<i>them, to them.</i>	<i>Dat. lóro, them, to them.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>li,</i>	<i>them.</i>	<i>Acc. le, them.</i>

### *Third Person, Masculine and Feminine, Singular and Plural.*

<i>Dat.</i>	<i>si,</i>	<i>to himself, to herself, to itself, to themselves.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>si,</i>	<i>himself, herself, itself, themselves</i>

REMARKS.

1. The Conjunctive Personal Pronouns *precede* the Verb in the Indicative, Conditional, and Subjunctive Moods. They also precede the Verb in the Imperative used *negatively*: as,

Non mi dáre délle bastonáte, *do not give me a thrashing.*

Io ti do un' arancia, *I give you an orange.*

Io vi védo, *I see you.*

Tu gli dàì un regálo, *thou givest him a present.*

Élla si riguárda néllo spécchio, *she looks at herself in the looking-glass*

Égli mi ha dáto un cappéilo, *he has given me a hat.*

Tu le hái dáto úna spílla, *thou hast given her a pin.*

Non mi dáre l' anéllo óra, *do not give me the ring now.*

Ch' égli mi ámi, *that he may love me.*

2. When *two* Conjunctive Personal Pronouns, one in the dative and the other in the accusative, are in the same sentence, they *both* precede the Verb, the dative before the accusative; the *i* of *mi, ti, ci, vi*, being changed into *e*; and *gli* taking an *e* before the accusative with which it is joined: as,

Égli me lo dísse,

*he said it to me.*

Io te lo díssi,

*I said it to thee.*

Églino ce lo díssero,

*they said it to us.*

Élla ve lo dísse,

*she said it to you.*

Io gliélo dirò,

*I shall tell it to him.*

3. *Le, to her*, is never used before *lo, la, li, le, ne*; *gli* taking its place for the sake of euphony: thus,

Io gliélo do, *I give it to her.*

Io gliélo do, *I give it to you; or,*

Io lo do a léi, *I give it to her.*

Io lo do a Léi, *I give it to you*

4. The Conjunctive Personal Pronouns follow the Verb in the Imperative (except when used Negatively), Infinitive, Gerund, and Past Participle, and are joined to the Verb, the Infinitive dropping its final vowel: thus,

Ámo vedérvi,

*I am glad to see you.*

Mostrátemelo,

*show it to me.*

Parlándomi di te,

*speaking to me of thee.*

Vedútomì, disse,

*having seen me, said.*

Dátóle una lettera, disse, *having given her a letter, said . . .*

5. When the Verb is a monosyllable, or has an accent on its last vowel, these pronouns follow the verb and are

joined to it, the consonant of the pronoun being doubled and the accent dropped (except *gli*)\*; thus we say:

<b>Io farò, and faròllo,</b>	<i>I shall do it.</i>
<b>Farògliela leggere, }</b>	<i>I shall have him read it.</i>
<b>Gliela farò leggere, }</b>	
<b>Diròvvelo, and ve lo dirò,</b>	<i>I shall tell you it.</i>
<b>L' amò, or amòlla,</b>	<i>he, she loved her.</i>
<b>Ci dà, or dácci,</b>	<i>he, she gives us.</i>

6. **Lóro, to them,** precedes or follows the verb: as,

<b>Ègli disse lóro,</b>	<i>he said to them.</i>
<b>Ègli lóro ha dáto,</b>	<i>he has given to them.</i>

7. The Dative of the Personal Pronouns is sometimes used instead of the Possessive Adjective: as,

<b>Io gli sónò amíco, }</b>	<i>I am his friend.</i>
<b>Io sónò súo amíco, }</b>	

8. In speaking of parts of the body, or dress, the Italians use the Dative Pronoun instead of the Possessive Adjective: as,

<b>Mi duóle la tésta,</b>	<i>my head aches.</i>
<b>Ti si è sdrucíta la scárpa,</b>	<i>thy shoe is torn.</i>
<b>Si è rótta la gámbo,</b>	<i>he has broken his leg.</i>

### EXERCISE XXXII.

#### A.

1. Io glielo dissi, ed egli non mi credette. 2. Ella lo crederà quando lo vedrà. 3. Ho data la sua lettera alla signorina B., ed ella mi disse di ringraziarla. 4. Mi duole il braccio, l'ho urtato sulla tavola. 5. Cosa vi duole, signorino? Mi duole la testa. 6. Gli siete voi amico? Nossignore, io non gli sono amico. 7. Il maestro biasimò gli scolari e loro disse di imparare le lezioni. 8. Ha Ella detto loro di venire a pranzo da Lei questa sera? Sì, signore. 9. Che cosa Le piacerebbe avere da pranzo? Datemi del pesce e dell'arrosto. 10. Io ti crederei se la storia fosse probabile. 11. Io glielo avrei detto, se lo avessi visto. 12. Amerei vedervi stassera a casa mia, e prego vi venirmi a trovare.

1. I have told it to him, but he did not say anything. 2. I should believe him if he were an honest man. 3. He was speaking to me of you this evening in his house. 4. I shall be with her to-morrow, or Saturday next. 5. Have you found him in my room yesterday evening? Yes, sir, he was looking after you. 6. He (*masc.*) said it to us, but we did not believe him. 7. Show it to me. 8. I have given her two hundred lire and one hundred and fifty-five needles yesterday. 9. My arm aches; it aches

\* See note, p. 20.



more than yesterday evening. 10. Would you speak to her? No, sir. 11. Did the master speak to his pupils? He told them to learn their lessons. 12. Are you his friend? Yes, sir, I am his friend.

## B.

1. Chi ha scritto questo esercizio? Io, signor maestro. 2. Chi ha parlato con Lei? Il servo di mio padre mi ha portato una lettera. 3. È Ella arrivata sola? Nossignore, io sono arrivata con la zia di Carlo. 4. Ascoltatemi, ragazzi: disse il maestro, voi avete a imparare i vostri esercizi voi stessi. 5. Ella lo dividerebbe, se lo avesse, ma ella non l'ha. 6. Ov'è la sua penna d'acciaio, signorino!—Io non l'ho. 7. Ragazzi, accompagnatemi alla passeggiata quest'oggi. 8. Cameriere, portateci da mangiare. 9. Io gli parlerò di Lei, e gliela raccomanderò. 10. Non l'ho ancora pagato, perchè non ho danaro; ma lo pagherò domani. 11. Insegnategli la lingua francese, perchè egli non la conosce. 12. Io gliela insegnerei, se la conoscessi io stesso.

1. Children, come with me to church this evening. 2. I shall myself teach her the Italian language. 3. Would you speak to him? Yes, sir. 4. If I knew the French language, I should teach it to you. 5. I shall recommend you to him, if I see him this evening. 6. Waiter, bring us something to eat, and bring us also a bottle of beer. 7. Where is your book, sir? 8. I have myself spoken to him of your brother. 9. He has brought me a letter of my mother? 10. We shall all be glad to talk to him of you and of your brother. 11. Would you accompany me to the promenade? Yes, sir, we will all accompany you. 12. Does your head ache? My head does not ache this morning, but my hand aches.

## FURTHER REMARKS ON PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

1. When the Personal Pronoun is followed by *che*, the Verb agrees with the Personal Pronoun: as,

<b>Tu</b> che mi <b>âmi</b> ,	<i>thou that lovest me.</i>
<b>Nôî</b> che <b>trovâmmo</b> la strâda,	<i>we that found the way.</i>
<b>Vôî</b> che <b>fôste</b> punîto,	<i>you that were punished.</i>

2. The Pronouns are often omitted, when the sense of the sentence is not obscured: as,

<b>Âmo</b> mío pádre,	<i>I love my father.</i>
<b>Abbi</b> paziénza,	<i>have (thou) patience.</i>
<b>È</b> tẽmpo perdúto,	<i>it is a loss of time.</i>

3. If the Personal Pronoun refers to a *thing*, a verb must

precede it: if the Pronoun refers to a *person*, no verb is needed before it: as,

Cercáte il mío cappello, non pòsso uscìre sènza avérlo.

*Look for my hat; I cannot go out without it (having).*

Cercáte mío figlio, non pòsso uscìre sènza lui.

*Look for my son; I cannot go out without him.*

4. The Conjunctive Pronouns *ne*, of *it*; *ci*, *vi*, to *it*, are often used in the singular, and then refer only to *things* and never to persons: as,

Che cosa *ne* pensáte?

*what do you think of it?*

Che cosa pensáte di lui?

*what do you think of him?*

Che cosa *ci* avéte a far vói?

*what have you to do with it?*

5. *Ne* is sometimes used instead of *ci*, *us*, to *us*: as,

*Ne* dicono, *they tell us*.

*Egli ne ha dato, he has given us.*

But this form of speaking is to be avoided.

6. Before *lui*, *lei*, *loro*, and before *nouns*, *esso* is used to strengthen the expression: as,

Andái con *esso* lui al teatro,

*I went with him to the theatre.*

Quest' ordine fu ricevúto da *esso* ministéro,

*this order has been received from the ministry.*

7. Instead of the accusative masculine *lo*, *il*, is used before words beginning with a consonant (except *z* or *s impura*).

When preceded by *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *gli*, *ci*, *vi*, or *non*, the *i* of *il* is dropped, and both words are contracted thus:

me' l, or *mel* dice, tells it to me.

ve' l, or *vel* dice, tells it to you.

te' l, or *tel* dice, tells it to thee.

se' l, or *sel* dice, tells it to him-

glie' l, or *gliel* dice, tells it to him.

self.

ce' l, or *cel* dice, tells it to us.

no' l, or *nol* dice, does not tell it.

8. Conjunctive Personal Pronouns in the accusative are often affixed to the adverb *ecco*, *here it is*: as,

*Eccovi venúto, here you are come.*

*Eccolo quì! here he is!*

9. In answering questions, the Italians have a different form from the English *Yes, I am*; *Yes, I do*, &c.

(a) If the answer refers to a noun with the *definite article* or a *demonstrative adjective*, then the verb in the answer requires a personal pronoun *agreeing* with the foregoing noun: as,

Siéte vói le zíe di quésto fanciúlló? Sì, nói le siámo.

*Are you the aunts of this boy? Yes, we are.*

Sóno quélli i vóstri stiváli? Sì, li sóno.

*Are those your boots? Yes, they are.*

(b) If the answer refers to an *adjective, verb, or noun* (without definite article or demonstrative adjective), the pronoun *lo* is used: as,

È Ella ammaláta? Sì, lo sónó. *Are you ill? Yes, I am.*  
 Sónó le túe sorélle arriváte? Sì, lo sónó. *Are your sisters arrived? Yes, they are.*  
 Sónó Italiáni colóro? Sì, lo sónó. *Are they Italians? Yes, they are.*

10. When referring to a foregoing noun substantive in the *genitive* case, the English use *some*, or *any*; when they refer to the *dative*, they use *there*; and when they refer to the *ablative* they use *from there, thereby*. In these cases the Italians use for the *genitive* and *ablative* *NE*, and for the *dative* *CI*, or *VI* (changed into *ce* and *ve* when preceding *lo, la, li, le, ne*): as,

Ecco del víno; ne vuóle Élla? *Here is some wine; do you want any?*  
 Ne beverò un bicchiére. *I shall drink a glass (of it).*  
 Va Élla a Lóndra? No, ne véngo. *Are you going to London? No, I come from there.*  
 È mío fratélló nel giardíno? Sì, vi è. *Is my brother in the garden? Yes, he is there.*

## EXERCISE XXXIII.

## A.

1. Egli è un buon ragazzo, ama i suoi genitori. 2. Tu sei mio amico, ti accompagnerò a casa stassera. 3. Ella è tua sorella, ti ama, e scrive i tuoi esercizi per te. 4. Noi gli siamo amici, lo rimprovereremo della sua infingardaggine. 5. Voi siete suo nemico, avete a perdonarlo. 6. Eglino sono dottissimi, mi aiuteranno a scrivere la storia del re. 7. Amano lo studio ed amano anche il divertimento. 8. Dico sempre la verità e ne sono contento e felice. 9. Avete imparate le vostre lezioni quest'oggi? Sì, signore, le abbiamo imparate. 10. Datemi un ago, ne ho gran bisogno. 11. Mangerete voi senza di me? Io mangerò solo questa sera. 12. È tempo perduto l'ascoltarlo.

1. He has five oranges, will he eat one (of them)? 2. You are his friend, talk to him. 3. Did you write this exercise for him? Yes, sir, I have written it for him, he had no time. 4. Have you found my fork? I shall not eat without it. 5. Will you accompany your brother? I shall accompany him. 6. Will she accompany her mother? She will accompany her. 7. Have you forgiven Charles? I have forgiven him. 8. Will you listen to me? I shall not listen to you to-day, because I have no time, but I shall listen to you to-morrow. 9. We have all learnt our

lessons and written our exercises. 10. It is lost time to listen to her. 11. Give me a new hat, I want it very much. 12. I tell the truth and I am happy.

## B.

1. Io credete, signor Carlo? Io non lo credo. 2. Credete voi la sua storia? Io non ne credo una parola. 3. Lo crederà il suo amico? Egli non lo crederà. 4. Glielo nasconderà Ella? Sì, signore, io glielo nasconderò. 5. Ella non ci ha da far nulla, non è affar suo. 6. Io non ci credo, la storia non è probabile. 7. Ci credereste, se la storia fosse probabile? Sissignore, ci crederei. 8. Ha egli parlato? Egli non ha parlato. 9. Ricevei da esso Generale un ordine quest'oggi, e l'ubbidirò. 10. Non è probabile che voi gli parliate ora, egli è occupatissimo. 11. Parlategli. 12. Eccoci tutti arrivati, portateci la cena.

1. I shall speak to him myself, if I have time. 2. Do you speak of my exercises? I speak of them, and I speak also of your lesson. 3. When I spoke to him in Paris, he was ill. 4. I never sing without my brother; look for him. 5. Where have you found him? I found him in your room. 6. Have you seen my hat? It is on the table in my room. 7. I have been punished, and thou also wilt be punished if thou dost not learn thy lesson to-day. 8. I did not believe his story, because it was not probable. 9. I should not have given him my book if I had known that he was a lazy boy. 10. I will speak to your brother. 11. I have not spoken to her. 12. Did you speak to him in his house? I spoke to his mother of him and of you also.

B. Demonstrative Pronouns (*Pronómi Dimostratívi*).

The Demonstrative Pronouns point out the person or thing spoken of, and are the following:—

1. The Pronoun pointing out the *Person*, or *Thing*, NEAR the *person* that *speaks*: as, *quésto cappéllo*, *this hat* (*near me*), *quést' uómo*, *this man here*.

## Masculine.

## Singular.

## Feminine.

Nom. *quésto*, *this*.  
Gen. *di quésto*, *of this*.  
Dat. *a quésto*, *to this*.  
Acc. *quésto*, *this*.  
Abl. *da quésto*, *from this*.

Nom. *quésta*, *this*.  
Gen. *di quésta*, *of this*.  
Dat. *a quésta*, *to this*.  
Acc. *quésta*, *this*.  
Abl. *da quésta*, *from this*.

Masculine.		Plural.	Feminine.		
Nom.	questi,	<i>these.</i>	Nom.	queste,	<i>these.</i>
Gen.	di questi,	<i>of these.</i>	Gen.	di queste,	<i>of these.</i>
Dat.	a questi,	<i>to these.</i>	Dat.	a queste,	<i>to these.</i>
Acc.	questi,	<i>these.</i>	Acc.	queste,	<i>these.</i>
Abl.	da questi,	<i>from these.</i>	Abl.	da queste,	<i>from these.</i>

Questi is also used in the Nominative Singular Masculine for *Persons* only, without the noun.

2. The Pronoun Demonstrative pointing out the *Person* or *Thing* NEAR the person spoken to, or addressed; as cotésto cappéllo, *that hat (near you)*; cotésto uómo, *that man (near you)*.

Masculine.		Singular.	Feminine.		
<i>Nom.</i>	<i>cotésto,</i>	<i>that.</i>	<i>Nom.</i>	<i>cotéstà,</i>	<i>that.</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	<i>di cotésto,</i>	<i>of that.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	<i>di cotéstà,</i>	<i>of that.</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>a cotésto,</i>	<i>to that.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	<i>a cotéstà,</i>	<i>to that.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>cotésto,</i>	<i>that.</i>	<i>Acc.</i>	<i>cotéstà,</i>	<i>that.</i>
<i>Abl.</i>	<i>da cotésto,</i>	<i>from that.</i>	<i>Abl.</i>	<i>da cotéstà,</i>	<i>from that.</i>

Masculine.			Plural.		
Nom.	cotésti,	those.	Nom.	cotéste,	those.
Gen.	di cotésti,	of those.	Gen.	di cotéste,	of those.
Dat.	a cotésti,	to those.	Dat.	a cotéste,	to those.
Acc.	cotésti,	those.	Acc.	cotéste,	those.
Abl.	da cotésti,	from those.	Abl.	da cotéste,	from those.

Costúi or cotestúi (*m.*), costéi or cotestéi (*f.*), and plural for both genders costóro or cotestóro, are used only of *Persons*, without the *noun*, are declined in the same way, and have the same signification.

3. The following Demonstrative Pronoun points out a *Person* or *Thing* far away from the Person who speaks and the Person addressed: as, quel cappéllo, *that hat (there)*, quell' uómo, *that man (there)*.

Masculine.		Singular.	Feminine.	
<i>Nom.</i>	quélllo,* or quell',	quel, <i>that.</i>	<i>Nom.</i>	quélla, <i>that.</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	di quélllo,	<i>of that.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	di quélla, <i>of that.</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	a quélllo,	<i>to that.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	a quélla, <i>to that.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	quélllo,	<i>that.</i>	<i>Acc.</i>	quélla, <i>that.</i>
<i>Abl.</i>	da quélllo,	<i>from that.</i>	<i>Abl.</i>	da quélla, <i>from that.</i>

\* When before a consonant (except *z*, or *s impura*), *quélllo* becomes *quel*; and before a vowel it becomes *quell'*.

Masculine.		Plural.	Feminine.	
Nom.	those.		Nom.	those.
<i>Gen. di quèlli,</i>	<i>of those.</i>		<i>Gen. di quèlle,</i>	<i>of those.</i>
<i>Dat. a quèlli,</i>	<i>to those.</i>		<i>Dat. a quèlle,</i>	<i>to those.</i>
<i>Acc. quèlli,</i>	<i>those.</i>		<i>Acc. quèlle,</i>	<i>those.</i>
<i>Abl. da quèlli,</i>	<i>from those.</i>		<i>Abl. da quèlle,</i>	<i>from those.</i>

*Colúi (m.), coléi (f.), and colóro,* for the plural of both genders, are used only of *Persons*, without the noun, are declined in the same way and have the same signification.

Ciò means *that* in a general sense: as, *Chi ha fátto ciò? Who has done this?*

Ciò che, or *quel che*, is used in a general sense for *that which, what*; as, *I have what I want*, io ho ciò che vóglío, io ho *quel che* vóglío.

Quégli, *that one*, is sometimes used in the *Nominative Singular Masculine* of *Persons* only.

#### EXERCISE XXXIV.

1. Questo è il mio cappello e quello è il tuo. 2. Questa scatola non è mia, essa è del signor B. 3. Questi libri sono essi tuoi? No, signore, codesti libri sono del nostro maestro. 4. Queste sedie sono della madre di Giovanni. 5. Cotesto è un bel bastone; chi te l'ha dato, mio caro? Il mio amico B. me lo ha dato il mese scorso. 6. Cotesta penna non è tua. Mi scusi, signore, questa penna è mia. 7. Sono costoro i vostri amici? Costui è mio amico, ma quegli non lo è. 8. È costei la tua serva? Nossignore, questa è la serva di mio zio. 9. Sono cotesti i libri ricevuti da Londra? Questi libri arrivano da Parigi. 10. Quelle donne partirono ieri sera per la provincia. 11. È colui tuo cugino? Sissignore, e colei che gli è vicina è mia zia. 12. Chi sono coloro? Questi è il mio amico Carlo, e quegli è mio cugino Guglielmo.

1. This is my book and that is the book of Charles. 2. This exercise is more difficult than that. 3. Those houses are smaller than these. 4. These books are my books, and those on the table are thy books. 5. Is this man thy servant (*masc.*)? No, sir, he is not my servant; but he is the servant (*masc.*) of our Italian master. 6. Is that thy cousin (*masc.*)? Yes, sir, that is my cousin. 7. Who is that lady? She is my aunt. 8. Who are those men? This one is my cousin Charles, and that one is my friend William. 9. Are those your friends? Yes, sir, all these gentlemen are my friends. 10. Who is that man? He is my friend John. 11. Are you his friend? Yes, sir, I am. 12. Who is that lady? She is my cousin Mary.

\* *Quèlli* is changed into *que'* or *quei* before a consonant (except *z* or *s impura*).

C. Possessive Pronouns (*Pronómi Possessívi*)

The Possessive Pronouns are the same as the Possessive Adjectives given on page 37. They are never used with a Substantive: they are,

Singular.		Plural.		
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
il mío,	la mía,	i miei,	le mie,	<i>mine.</i>
il tuo,	la tua,	i tuoi,	le tue,	<i>thine.</i>
il suo,	la sua,	i suoi,	le sue,	<i>his, hers.</i>
il nostro,	la nostra,	i nostri,	le nostre,	<i>ours.</i>
il vostro,	la vostra,	i vostri,	le vostre,	<i>yours.</i>
il loro,	la loro,	i loro,	le loro,	<i>theirs.</i>

## EXERCISE XXXV.

1. Questi libri sono i miei e quelle penne sono le tue. 2. Quella casa è la mia e questo giardino è il suo. 3. Voi guardate nel mio giardino ed io guardo nel vostro. 4. Fate voi il vostro dovere ed io farò il mio. 5. Se egli ha imparato la sua lezione noi impareremo la nostra. 6. Se essi hanno scritto i loro esercizi, noi scriveremo i nostri. 7. Queste arance sono esse le loro? Nossignore, codeste arance sono di tua sorella. 8. Noi fummo con i suoi amici al teatro, ed Ella ci fu co' nostri. 9. È questo bastone il suo, od è quello del suo amico Guglielmo? Codesto bastone è il mio. 10. Gli parlerete a casa vostra, o nella sua? Gli parlerò in sua casa. 11. Sono queste le mie penne, o le tue? Esse sono le tue. 12. Hai visto i miei fratelli, od i tuoi nel giardino dello zio? Io vidi i miei.

1. This is my book, and that is yours. 2. Have you not had my pen? No, sir, I have had mine. 3. Are these your oranges, or those of your brother? Those oranges are mine. 4. Have you learnt your lesson? Yes, sir, I have learnt mine; have you learnt yours? 5. Were you at the theatre with your friends last Friday? No, sir, I was with yours. 6. Have they (*masc.*) written their exercises? They (*masc.*) have written theirs. 7. This garden is mine; is that house yours? No, sir, that house is not mine. 8. Are these your pens? No, sir, those pens are not mine. 9. Is this your sister's needle? Yes, sir, that needle is hers. 10. Have you not listened to his advice? No, sir, I have not listened to his advice, but to yours. 11. Have you not yet found my stick? Yes, sir, and I have also found mine. 12. Is this your umbrella? No, sir, that is not mine.

D. Interrogative Pronouns (*Pronómi Interrogatívi*).

The Interrogative Pronouns are—

1. Chi? *who?* is used only of *Persons*, and is of both genders and numbers, being declined only with the Preposition, *without* the Article: as, Chi è costui? *Who is this man?* A chi hái dato il mío bastóne? *To whom have you given my stick?*

When **Chi** is in the *Genitive* with the verb *essere* it denotes possession: as, *Di chi è questo libro?* *Whose book is this?*

**Chi** means also *colui il quale*, as: *Il perder tempo a chi più sa più spiace*, *to lose time displeases most him who knows most.*

2. **Che?** *what?* is used only of things, and is of both genders and numbers, being declined without the article; as, *Di che paese è Ella?* *Of what country are you?*

3. **Quale**, *which*, discriminates between several *things*, or *persons* of the same kind, and is used for both genders, being declined without the article: as, *Quale di queste arance mangerete?* *Which of these oranges will you eat?*

Masculine and Feminine.  
Singular and Plural.

<i>Nom.</i> <b>chi?</b>	<i>who?</i>	<i>Nom.</i> <b>che?</b>	<i>what?</i>
<i>Gen.</i> <b>di chi?</b>	<i>whose?</i>	<i>Gen.</i> <b>di che?</b>	<i>of what?</i>
<i>Dat.</i> <b>a chi?</b>	<i>to whom?</i>	<i>Dat.</i> <b>a che?</b>	<i>to what?</i>
<i>Acc.</i> <b>chi?</b>	<i>whom?</i>	<i>Acc.</i> <b>che?</b>	<i>what?</i>
<i>Abl.</i> <b>da chi?</b>	<i>from whom?</i>	<i>Abl.</i> <b>da che?</b>	<i>from what?</i>

Masculine and Feminine.

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>Nom.</i> <b>quale?</b>	<i>which?</i>	<i>Nom.</i> <b>quali?</b>	<i>which?</i>
<i>Gen.</i> <b>di quale?</b>	<i>of which?</i>	<i>Gen.</i> <b>di quali?</b>	<i>of which?</i>
<i>Dat.</i> <b>a quale?</b>	<i>to which?</i>	<i>Dat.</i> <b>a quali?</b>	<i>to which?</i>
<i>Acc.</i> <b>quale?</b>	<i>which?</i>	<i>Acc.</i> <b>quali?</b>	<i>which?</i>
<i>Abl.</i> <b>da quale?</b>	<i>from which?</i>	<i>Abl.</i> <b>da quali?</b>	<i>from which?</i>

EXERCISE XXXVI.

1. Chi sono questi signori? Questi signori sono miei amici. 2. Chi è costui? Costui è il servo del medico. 3. Chi sono coloro? Coloro sono i corrieri del re. 4. Chi è quella signora? Quella signora è mia zia. 5. Di chi è questo giardino? Questo giardino è il mio. 6. A chi hai dato il mio cappello? Ho dato il tuo cappello al mio servo. 7. Da chi hai ricevuta cotesta lettera? Io ho ricevuta questa lettera da mio padre. 8. Che è questo? Questo è un fucile. 9. Da che proviene questa malattia? Questa malattia proviene da un' indigestione. 10. Quale di questi due sigari prenderete? Io prenderò questo. 11. Quale di questi quadri prenderete? Io comprerò quello. 12. Quale di queste penne è la vostra? Questa è la mia.

1. Who are those ladies? They (*fem.*) are my sisters. 2. Who is this woman? That woman is the servant of my aunt. 3. Whose is this gun? That gun belongs (*is*) to Charles. 4. To whom have you given my letter? I have given it to your father. 5. From whom comes this present? It comes from your cousin (*masc.*) 6. Whose house is this? It is mine. 7. Of whom are you thinking



(*dative*)? I am thinking of (*to*) my sister. 8. Is he ill? He is ill with (*of*) fever. 9. Which of these apples will you eat? I shall eat this. 10. Which of these books is yours? That is mine. 11. From what country do you come? From England. 12. In what country have you been last year? I have been in France.

### E. Relative Pronouns (*Pronómi Relatívi*).

The Relative Pronouns are *che*,\* and *il quále*, (not to be mistaken for the Interrogative Pronouns). They are declined thus :

(a) 1. *Che*, *who*, *which*, for *Persons* only.

Singular.		Masculine and Feminine.		Plural.	
Nom. <i>che</i> ,		<i>who, which.</i>		Nom. <i>che</i> ,	<i>who, which.</i>
Gen. <i>di cúí</i> ,		<i>whose.</i>		Gen. <i>di cúí</i> ,	<i>whose, of which.</i>
Dat. <i>a cúí</i> ,		<i>to whom.</i>		Dat. <i>a cúí</i> ,	<i>to which.</i>
Acc. <i>che, cúí</i> ,		<i>whom, which.</i>		Acc. <i>che, cúí</i> ,	<i>which.</i>
Abl. <i>da cúí</i> ,		<i>from whom, from which.</i>			

2. *Che*, *what*, for *Things* only, is declined thus for both genders :

Singular.		Plural.	
Nom. <i>che</i> ,	<i>what.</i>	Nom. <i>che</i> ,	<i>which.</i>
Gen. <i>di che</i> ,	<i>of what, whereof.</i>	Gen. <i>di che</i> ,	<i>of which.</i>
Dat. <i>a che</i> ,	<i>to what.</i>	Dat. <i>a che</i> ,	<i>to which.</i>
Acc. <i>che</i> ,	<i>what.</i>	Acc. <i>che</i> ,	<i>which.</i>
Abl. <i>da che</i> ,	<i>from what.</i>	Abl. <i>da che</i> ,	<i>from which.</i>

(b) *Il quále*, *that*, *who*, *which*, is used for *Persons* and *Things*, and declined thus :

Singular.	
Masculine.	Feminine.
Nom. <i>il quále</i> ,	<i>la quále,</i>
Gen. <i>del quále</i> ,	<i>délla quále,</i>
Dat. <i>al quále</i> ,	<i>álla quále,</i>
Acc. <i>il quále</i> ,	<i>la quále,</i>
Abl. <i>dal quále</i> ,	<i>dálla quále,</i>
	<i>that, who, which.</i>
	<i>of that, whose, of which.</i>
	<i>to that, to whom, to which.</i>
	<i>that, whom, which.</i>
	<i>from that, from whom, from which.</i>
Plural.	
Nom. <i>i quáli</i> ,	<i>le quáli,</i>
Gen. <i>de' quáli</i> ,	<i>délle quáli,</i>
Dat. <i>a' quáli</i> ,	<i>álle quáli,</i>
Acc. <i>i quáli</i> ,	<i>le quáli,</i>
Abl. <i>da' quáli</i> ,	<i>dálle quáli,</i>
	<i>that, who, which.</i>
	<i>of that, whose, of which.</i>
	<i>to that, to whom, to which.</i>
	<i>that, whom, which.</i>
	<i>from that, from whom, from which.</i>

\* *Che* is a conjunction when relating to a verb, or adverb; and is a pronoun when referring to a noun, or another pronoun.

## REMARKS.

1. Che is more generally used than *il quále*.
2. Il che is used, when relating to the *whole* of some preceding sentence: as,

Egli ferì Cárlo, **il che** mi obbligò ad arrestárllo.  
*He wounded Charles, which obliged me to arrest him.*

3. The English forms *whose father*, *whose friend*, are rendered by *il pádre di cùi*, *l'amíco di cùi*, or by *il cùi pádre*, *il cùi amíco*, the expression *il di cùi* being erroneous.

4. The Relative Pronoun must always be translated in Italian, even when omitted in English: as,

L' uomo **che** avete vedúto. *The man you have seen.*  
 La lezióne, **che** vói avéte imparáta. *The lesson you have learnt.*

## EXERCISE XXXVII.

1. L' amico, che tu hai visto, è mio cugino. 2. La signora, che era con tua madre, è mia zia. 3. La persona, della quale parli non è onesta. 4. Il servo, di cui parli è un onestissimo uomo. 5. La donna, a cui hai dato la lettera è la cameriera di mio zio. 6. L' uomo, che hai visto nella strada, ha comprato il mio giardino. 7. Coloro che amano lo studio, imparano le loro lezioni. 8. Di che parlavate stamattina con mio padre? Io parlava della morte del nostro comune amico B. 9. Maria, la quale hai visto ieri sera in casa dell' architetto, è mia sorella. 10. Le allieve, le quali hanno imparate le loro lezioni, avranno un regalo. 11. Gli uomini, i quali amano la virtù, sono felici. 12. I maestri, da' quali siete educati, meritano il vostro rispetto.

1. The Italian language, which you are learning, is not difficult. 2. The boy who was with me this morning is my cousin (*masc.*). 3. The pupil (*fem.*) who has learnt her lesson will have a present. 4. The man, whom you have seen in my house, is our servant (*masc.*). 5. Those who love virtue are always happy. 6. The young man with whom I was speaking is the brother of Charles. 7. The boy, whose father was in your house this morning, is a good boy. 8. The master, who teaches you the English language, deserves your respect. 9. The house of which you speak is very old. 10. The pupil (*masc.*) to whom I have given my pen is a bad boy. 11. The lady, whom you have seen with my mother, is her sister. 12. Of what were you speaking with my brother? I was speaking with him of his exercise.

---

F. Indefinite Pronouns (*Pronómi Indefiníti*).

The Indefinite Pronouns are :

(Sing. only.) { Altri (m.), another.  
Altrúi, (no nom.), other's.  
Niénte, } nothing (with non if following a verb).  
Núlla, }

Sing. L' un l' áltro, l' úna l' áltra, }  
Plur. Gli úni gli áltri, le úne le áltre, } one another.

Entrámbi (indecl.), }  
Sing. L' úno e l' áltro, l' úna e l' áltra, } both.  
Plur. Gli úni e gli áltri, le úne e le áltre, }

Sing. Tútto, tútta, }  
Plur. Tútti, tútte, } all.

Áltro, a,	something else.	Qualcúno, qualcúna,	} some one.	
Alcúno, a, i, e,	somebody, a few.	Qualchedúno, qualchedúna,		
Ognúno, a,	every one.	dúna,	} somebody.	
Alquánto (indecl.),	some, a little.	Talúno,		
Chiúnque,	} whosoever.	Certúno, certúna,	} some . . . some.	
Chicchessía,		Parécchi, e (pl. only),		} as much . . . as.
Chicchesisívoglia,		Quále—quále,		
Chi che si sia,		Tánto . . . quánto,		
Qualsisía,		Tánti . . . quánti,		
Qualsivóglia,				

## REMARKS.

1. Altri . . . áltri, quále . . . quále, chi . . . chi, quésti . . . quégli, mean *the one . . . the other*, and are used only of persons, as, 'Altri piánge áltri ríde, quále piánge quále ríde, chi piánge chi ríde, quésti piánge quégli ríde, *the one cries, the other laughs*.

2. Altrúi has no nominative, is used only of persons, is declined *without* the article, and sometimes even without the preposition : as

Restituisci ciò che dévi altrúi, *Give back what you owe to others.*

L' altrui means the *property* of other people, and is regularly declined.

3. Núlla and niénte are sometimes used as substantives ; as,

Mílle scúdi sóno un núlla per lúi,  
*A thousand dollars are a nothing for him.*

4. Alcúno, with a negation, means *nobody* ; as,

Non vídi alcúno, *I saw nobody.*

5. Qualsisía and qualsivóglia make in the plural qualsi-síano, qualsivógliano.

## EXERCISE XXXVIII.

1. Non desiderare l'altrui, dice il Signore Dio. 2. Ogni uomo è mortale, ed ogni persona ha i suoi difetti. 3. Nulla fa paura all'uomo valoroso. 4. Egli stima un niente lo spendere mille lire. 5. Que' due fratelli si amano l'un l'altro. 6. L'uno e l'altro erano nella scuola questa mattina, io li vidi entrambi. 7. Gli uni e gli altri erano col maestro alla passeggiata. 8. Alcuno mi lodava, ed alcuno mi biasimava. 9. Caro padre, datemi alquanto danaro, perchè ne ho bisogno. 10. Chiunque impara la sua lezione è un buono scolare. 11. Qualsiasi le vostre ragioni io non vi permetto di essere ozioso. 12. Tante teste quanti cervelli (*proverb*).

1. As many opinions as there are heads. 2. Whosoever studies shall have a present. 3. Whosoever learns his lessons will have a book for nothing. 4. Every one was at his house last evening. 5. We were all at his dinner at his new house in town. 6. Some one will be happy to eat this dinner with me. 7. The one likes wine, the other beer. 8. Every one thinks of his family on this day. 9. We shall all be with you at dinner to-morrow evening. 10. I have spoken with nobody at the theatre, there was nobody. 11. He has as many houses as gardens in this town. 12. Both (*masc.*) have learnt their lessons, and both (*masc.*) will have a present next Thursday.

XX.—PASSIVE VERBS (*Vérbi Passívi*).

The Passive of all Transitive Verbs is formed by adding the Past Participle of that Verb to the Auxiliary *essere*, to be.

The Past Participle of all Verbs conjugated with the verb *essere*, must agree in gender and number with the subject of this verb; as,

Luígi è státo,	<i>Louis has been.</i>
Maria è státa,	<i>Mary has been.</i>
I nóstri fratélli sóno státi,	<i>our brothers have been.</i>
Le nóstre sorélle sóno státe,	<i>our sisters have been.</i>

## ÉSSERE AMÁTO.

INDICATIVE MOOD (*Módo Indicativo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Témpo Présente*).

Singular.		Plural.	
io sóno amáto, a,	<i>I am loved.</i>	nóí siámo amáti, e,	<i>we are loved.</i>
tu séi amáto, a,	<i>thou art loved.</i>	vóí siéte amáti, e,	<i>you are loved.</i>
égli è amáto, }	<i>he is loved.</i>	églino sóno amáti, }	<i>they are loved.</i>
élla è amáta, }	<i>she is loved.</i>	élleno sóno amáto, }	

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfétto*).

Singular.		Plural.	
io éra amáto, a,	<i>I was loved.</i>	nói eravámo amá-	<i>we were loved.</i>
tu éri amáto, a,	<i>thou wast loved.</i>	ti, e,	
égli éra amáto, }	<i>he was loved.</i>	vói eraváte amá-	<i>you were loved.</i>
élla éra amáta, }	<i>she was loved.</i>	ti, e,	
		églino érano amáti, }	<i>they were loved.</i>
		élleno érano amáte, }	<i>loved.</i>

PAST DEFINITE (*Passáto Definíto*).

io fúi amáto, a,	<i>I was loved.</i>	nói fúmmo amá-	<i>we were loved.</i>
tu fósti amáto, a,	<i>thou wast loved.</i>	ti, e,	
égli fu amáto, }	<i>he was loved.</i>	vói fóste amáti, e,	<i>you were loved.</i>
élla fu amáta, }	<i>she was loved.</i>	églino fúrono amáti, }	<i>they were loved.</i>
		élleno fúrono amáte, }	<i>loved.</i>

FUTURE TENSE (*Futúro*).

io sarò amáto, a,	<i>I shall be loved.</i>	nói sarémo amá-	<i>we shall be loved.</i>
tu sarái amáto, a,	<i>thou wilt be loved.</i>	ti, e,	
égli sarà amáto, }	<i>he will be loved.</i>	vói saréte amáti, e,	<i>you will be loved.</i>
élla sarà amáta, }	<i>she will be loved.</i>	églino saránno amáti, }	<i>they will be loved.</i>
		élleno saránno amáte, }	<i>they will be loved.</i>

PAST INDEFINITE TENSE (*Passáto Indefiníto*).

Masculine.		Feminine.	
io sóno státo amáto,	io sóno státa amáta,	<i>I have been loved.</i>	
tu sei státo amáto,	tu sei státa amáta,	<i>thou hast been loved.</i>	
égli è státo amáto,	élla è státa amáta,	<i>he, she, has been loved.</i>	
nói siámo státi amáti,	nói siámo státe amáte,	<i>we have been loved.</i>	
vói siéte státi amáti,	vói siéte státe amáte,	<i>you have been loved.</i>	
églino sóno státi amáti,	élleno sóno státe amáte,	<i>they have been loved.</i>	

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

io éra státo amáto,	io éra státa amáta,	<i>I had been loved.</i>
tu éri státo amáto,	tu éri státa amáta,	<i>thou hadst been loved.</i>
égli éra státo amáto,	élla éra státa amáta,	<i>he, she had been loved.</i>
nói eravámo státi amáti,	nói eravámo státe amáte,	<i>we had been loved.</i>
vói eraváte státi amáti,	vói eraváte státe amáte,	<i>you had been loved.</i>
églino érano státi amáti,	élleno érano státe amáte,	<i>they had been loved.</i>

PAST ANTERIOR (*Passáto Rimóto*).

io fúi státo amáto,	io fúi státa amáta,	<i>I had been loved.</i>
tu fósti státo amáto,	tu fósti státa amáta,	<i>thou hadst been loved.</i>
égli fu státo amáto,	élla fu státa amáta,	<i>he, she had been loved.</i>
nói fúmmo státi amáti,	nói fúmmo státe amáte,	<i>we had been loved.</i>
vói fóste státi amáti,	vói fóste státe amáte,	<i>you had been loved.</i>
églino fúrono státi amáti,	élleno fúrono státe amáte,	<i>they had been loved.</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR (*Futuro Anteriore*).

Masculine.	Feminine.	
io sarò státo amáto, tu sarái státo amáto,	io sarò státa amáta, tu sarái státa amáta,	<i>I shall have been loved thou wilt have been loved. [loved.]</i>
égli sarà státo amáto, nói sarémo státi amáti,	élla sarà státa amáta, nói sarémo státe amáte,	<i>he, she, will have been we shall have been loved. [loved.]</i>
vói saréte státi amáti, églino saránno státi amáti,	vói saréte státe amáte, élleno saránno státe amáte,	<i>you will have been they will have been loved.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD (*Imperativo*).

síi amáto, ch' égli sía amáto, che nói siámo amáti, siáte vói amati, ch' églino síano amáti,	síi amáta, ch' élla sía amáta, che nói siámo amáte, siáte vói amáte, ch' élleno síano amáte,	<i>be (thou) loved. let him, her, be loved. let us be loved. be (ye) loved. let them be loved.</i>
--	--	--

CONDITIONAL MOOD (*Condizionale*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

io saréi amáto, tu sarésti amáto, égli sarébbe amáto, nói sarémmo amáti, vói saréste amáti, églino sarébbbero amáti,	io saréi amáta, tu sarésti amáta, élla sarébbe amáta, nói sarémmo amáte, vói saréste amáte, élleno sarébbbero amáte,	<i>I should be loved. thou wouldst be loved. he, she, would be loved we should be loved. you would be loved. they would be loved.</i>
---	---	---

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).*First Form.*

io saréi státo amáto, tu sarésti státo amáto, égli sarébbe státo amáto, nói sarémmo státi amáti, vói saréste státi amáti, églino sarébbbero státi amáti,	io saréi státa amáta, tu sarésti státa amáta, élla sarébbe státa amáta, nói sarémmostáte amáte, vói saréste státe amáte, élleno sarébbbero státe amáte,	<i>I should have been loved. thou wouldst have been loved. he, she, would have been loved. we should have been loved. you would have been loved. they would have been loved.</i>
--	---	--

*Second Form.*

io fóssi státo amáto, tu fóssi státo amáto, égli fósse státo amáto,	io fóssi státa amáta, tu fóssi státa amáta, égli fósse státa amáta,	<i>I should have been loved. thou wouldst have been loved. he, she, would have been loved.</i>
---	---	--

*Second Form.*

Masculine.

Feminine.

nói fóssimo státi amáti,	nói fóssimo státe amáte,	<i>we should have been loved.</i>
vói fóste státi amáti,	vói fóste státe amáte,	<i>you would have been loved.</i>
églino fóssero státi amáti,	élleno fóssero státe amáte,	<i>they would have been loved.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (*Soggiuntivo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presente*).

ch'io sía amáto,	ch'io sía amáta,	<i>that I may be loved.</i>
che tu sía amáto,	che tu sía amáta,	<i>that thou mayst be loved.</i>
ch'égli sía amáto,	ch'èlla sía amáta,	<i>that he, she may be loved.</i>
che nós siámo amáti,	che nós siámo amáte,	<i>that we may be loved.</i>
che vói siáte amáti,	che vói siáte amáte,	<i>that you may be loved.</i>
ch'églino síano amáti,	ch'èlleno síano amáte,	<i>that they may be loved.</i>

IMPERFECT TENSE (*Imperfetto*).

ch'io fóssi amáto,	ch'io fóssi amáta,	<i>that I might be loved.</i>
che tu fóssi amáto,	che tu fóssi amáta,	<i>that thou mightst be loved.</i>
ch'égli fósse amáto,	ch'èlla fósse amáta,	<i>that he, she, might be loved.</i>
che nós fóssimo amáti,	che nós fóssimo amáte,	<i>that we might be loved.</i>
che vói fóste amáti,	che vói fóste amáte,	<i>that you might be loved.</i>
ch'églino fóssero amáti,	ch'èlleno fóssero amáte,	<i>that they might be loved.</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passato*).

ch'io sía státo amáto,	ch'io sía státa amáta,	<i>that I may have been loved.</i>
che tu sía státo amáto,	che tu sía státa amáta,	<i>that thou mayst have been loved.</i>
ch'égli sía státo amáto,	ch'èlla sía státa amáta,	<i>that he, she, may have been loved.</i>
che nós siámo státi amáti,	che nós siámo státe amáte,	<i>that we may have been loved.</i>
che vói siáte státi amáti,	che vói siáte státe amáte,	<i>that you may have been loved.</i>
ch'églino síano státi amáti,	ch'èlleno síano státe amáte,	<i>that they may have been loved.</i>

PLUPERFECT TENSE (*Più che Perfétto*).

Masculine.	Feminine.	
ch' io fóssi státo amáto,	ch' io fóssi státa amáta,	that I might have been loved.
che tu fóssi státo amáto,	che tu fóssi státa amáta,	that thou mightst have been loved.
ch' égli fósse státo amáto,	ch' élla fósse státa amáta,	that he, she, might have been loved.
che nói fóssimo státi amáti,	che nói fóssimo státe amáte,	that we might have been loved.
che vói fóste státi amáti,	che vói fóste státe amáte,	that you might have been loved.
ch' églino fóssero státi amáti,	ch' élleno fóssero státe amáte,	that they might have been loved.

INFINITIVE MOOD (*Infínito*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

S. éssere amáto,	S. éssere amáta,	to be loved.
P. éssere amáti,	P. éssere amáte,	to be loved.

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

S. éssere státo amáto,	S. éssere státa amáta,	to have been loved.
P. éssere státi amáti,	P. éssere státe amáte,	to have been loved.

GERUND (*Gerúndio*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

S. esséndo amáto,	S. esséndo amáta,	being loved.
P. esséndo amáti,	P. esséndo amáte,	being loved.

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

S. esséndo státo amáto,	S. esséndo státa amáta,	having been loved.
P. esséndo státi amáti,	P. esséndo státe amáte,	having been loved.

PARTICIPLES (*Participi*).PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

S. státo amáto,	státa amáta,	been loved.
P. státi amáti,	státe amáte,	been loved.

## REMARKS.

1. Present Participles (*Participi*) are not used in the passive form.

2. The *Passive voice* of the third person only can also be expressed in Italian with the *Active Form* accompanied by the pronoun *si*; as,

Cóme è pronuciáta quéstá paróla? } *how is this word pronounced?*  
 Cóme si pronúncia quéstá paróla? }



The Verb is thus made *reflective* with the accusative *si*.  
*Si* corresponds also to the English *people, they, etc.*; as,

*Si dice che il re è mórtó. It is said that the king is dead.*

*Si mángia quì? Do people eat here? (Is it an eating-house?)*

All compound tenses, when with *si*, must be formed with the verb *essere*; as, *si è détto, it has (is) been said.*

## EXERCISE XXXIX.

## A.

1. Lo scolare è stato lodato dal suo maestro e la scolara è stata biasimata. 2. Il ladro fu arrestato nella strada. 3. Eglino erano arrivati a Londra allo stesso albergo, nel quale io era stato. 4. Gli scolari saranno biasimati se non imparano le loro lezioni. 5. Le allieve furono lodate dal loro maestro perchè impararono tutte le loro lezioni. 6. Ella sarebbe ancora ammalata, se non avesse seguito gli ordini del medico. 7. Tutto il vino è stato bevuto, non ne è stato lasciato nulla. 8. Egli fu liberato dalla prigione perchè fu trovato innocente di tale delitto. 9. Noi saremmo rovinati se queste cambiali non fossero pagate. 10. Da chi fu comprata quella casa? Quella casa e quel giardino furono comprati dal signor B. 11. Quanti soldati furono feriti in quella battaglia? Ne furono feriti due mila e trecento. 12. Da quanti amici fu vostro padre visitato ieri sera? Egli fu visitato da undici amici.

1. By whom have you been praised? I have been praised by my master. 2. Who blamed your brother? My brother was blamed by our master. 3. By whom have you been visited yesterday? I have been visited by my aunts. 4. Have you been ill? Yes, sir; I have been ill ten days. 5. By whom has he been forgiven? By the king. 6. Who has asked for these newspapers? Those newspapers have been asked for by your uncle. 7. This book has been brought by your cousin Mary. 8. Has the fire been lighted again? Yes, sir, the fire has been lighted again by the servant (*fem.*) at seven o'clock this morning. 9. By whom has this letter been brought? That letter has been brought by the servant (*masc.*) of the doctor. 10. Who has bought that picture? That picture has been bought by Mr. B. 11. Who loves you? I am loved by my father and by my mother. 12. From whom have you received that present? That present has been received from my mother.

## B.

1. Non fu Ella visitata dal signor zio questa mattina? No, signore, io fui visitato da mio zio ieri sera. 2. Non furono le sue sorelle biasimate dal loro maestro? Sì, signore, elleno furono biasimate perchè non avevano imparato le lezioni. 3. Da chi Le fu mandato questo cappello? Questo cappello mi fu mandato dal cappellaio. 4. Da chi fu cantata quella nuova canzone? Essa fu cantata da mia cugina. 5. La nuova canzone non fu cantata da

me, ma da mio fratello. 6. Noi non siamo stati invitati al ballo della signora contessa. 7. Fu Ella invitata a pranzo dal signor conte? Sissignore, io fui invitato dal conte due volte. 8. Furono le sue cugine invitate a ballare? Elleno furono invitate a ballare cinque, o sei volte. 9. È stata ammalata sua madre? Nossignore, mia madre non è stata ammalata. 10. Saremo noi puniti? Voi sarete puniti se non avrete imparato le vostre lezioni. 11. A che ora è Ella arrivata a Parigi? Io sono arrivato a Parigi ieri sera alle otto. 12. Da chi fu lasciato questo biglietto? Codesto biglietto fu lasciato per Lei dal servo del conte.

1. By whom *has* this bottle of wine been drunk? It *has* been drunk by Mr. Charles. 2. *Has* the thief been arrested? Yes, sir, he *has* been arrested. 3. Did you arrive this morning? No, sir, I *have* arrived yesterday evening. 4. Who has found my stick? Your stick *has* been found by your servant (*masc.*). 5. Who *has* sung the new song? The new song *has* been sung by me. 6. *Have* you been invited to dinner? Yes, sir, I *have* been invited by the countess. 7. Who *has* brought this box? That box *has* been brought for you by the hatter. 8. *Has* the fire been lighted again? The fire *has* not been lighted again. 9. I should have been praised, if I had learnt my lessons. 10. He would have learnt his lesson, if he *had* not been lazy. 11. Charles will be punished this morning for his laziness. 12. Mr. William is not yet returned from England.

## XXI.—NEUTER VERBS (*Vérbi Néutri*).

The Neuter Verbs are those which denote either a *state of rest*; as, dormire, *to sleep*; or an *intransitive action*, an action not passing to an object: as, cadére, *to fall*. Some are conjugated with the auxiliary *éssere*, and some with the auxiliary *avére*.

1. Some Neuter Verbs used with the auxiliary *avére*: as,

aderíre,	<i>to adhere.</i>	dimoráre,	<i>to reside.</i>
aspiráre,	<i>to strive.</i>	†discéndere,	<i>to bring down.</i>
assistere,	<i>to assist.</i>	dormíre,	<i>to sleep.</i>
balláre,	<i>to dance.</i>	†fuggíre,	<i>to shun.</i>
cammináre,	<i>to walk.</i>	†geláre,	<i>to freeze (of the weather).</i>
cédere,	<i>to yield.</i>	gridáre,	<i>to shout.</i>
cenáre,	<i>to sup.</i>	†giúgnere,	<i>to add together.</i>
cessáre,	<i>to cease.</i>	godére,	<i>to rejoice.</i>
contravveníre,	<i>to contravene.</i>	†guaríre,	<i>to cure.</i>
†conveníre,	<i>to be agreeable</i>	impallidíre,	<i>to turn pale.</i>
†créscere,	<i>to increase.</i>	incontráre,	<i>to meet.</i>
danzáre,	<i>to dance.</i>	invecchiáre,	<i>to grow old.</i>
degeneráre,	<i>to degenerate.</i>	mangiáre,	<i>to eat.</i>
desináre,	<i>to dine.</i>		

marciáre,	to march.	†salíre,	to get up (some- thing).
mentíre,	to lie.	sbadigliáre,	to yawn.
†moríre,	to kill.	†scéndere,	to get down (some- thing).
naufragáre,	to shipwreck.	†scórrere,	to peruse.
nidificáre,	to build a nest.	seguíre,	to follow.
nuotáre,	to swim.	sognáre,	to dream.
†passáre,	to pass.	sonnacchiáre, }	to slumber.
passeggiáre,	to take a walk.	sonneggiáre, }	
†partíre,	to divide.	sorridere,	to smile.
peccáre,	to sin.	spiácere,	to displease.
†piácere,	to please.	sternutáre,	to sneeze.
piángere,	to cry.	†suonáre,	to play (an instru- ment).
pranzáre,	to dine.	tacére,	to be silent.
reguáre,	to reign.	tardáre,	to tarry.
ridíre,	to say again.	vegliáre,	to watch.
†risanáre,	to cure.	viaggiáre,	to travel.
†ritornáre,	to return (some- thing).		
riposáre,	to rest.		

2. Some Neuter Verbs used with the auxiliary *éssere* :

as,

accórrere,	to run to.	períre,	to perish.
andáre,	to go.	perveníre,	to arrive.
approdáre,	to go ashore.	†piácere,	to be pleased.
arriváre,	to arrive.	procédere,	to proceed.
avveníre,	to happen.	prorómpere,	to burst forth.
cadére,	to fall.	rimanére,	to remain.
comparíre,	to appear.	†risanáre,	to become healthy again.
†conveníre,	to agree.	†ritornáre,	to return.
córrere,	to run.	riuscíre,	to succeed.
†créscere,	to grow.	riveníre,	to come back.
†discéndere,	to go down.	†salíre,	to go up.
diveníre,	to become.	saltáre,	to jump.
entráre,	to enter.	scadére,	to expire (of a bill).
†fuggíre,	to run away.	scappáre,	to run away.
†geláre,	to freeze.	†scéndere,	to go down.
giacére,	to lie down.	scoppiáre,	to burst.
†giúgnere,	to arrive.	†scórrere,	to elapse.
†guaríre,	to heal.	soggiácere,	to be subdued.
interveníre,	to intervene.	spiácere,	to be displeased.
íre,	to go.	spiráre,	to die.
marcíre,	to rot.	†suonáre,	to strike (of clocks and bells).
†moríre,	to die.	uscíre,	to go out.
náscere,	to be born.	veníre,	to come.
parére,	to seem.	vívire,	to live.
†passáre,	to pass.		
†partíre,	to start.		

## REMARKS.

1. Several of the above Verbs are conjugated with both auxiliaries, changing their signification with the change of the auxiliary verb. They are marked thus †.

2. If any Neuter Verb can have a Passive Voice, it takes the Auxiliary *essere*, as; Io fui assistito da te, *I was helped by thee*.

## EXERCISE XL.

## A.

1. Noi abbiamo assistito alla rappresentazione della nuova commedia del signor R. 2. Le nostre sorelle hanno ballato tutta la notte al palazzo del conte. 3. Egli ha camminato dieci miglia in due ore. 4. Avete voi cenato? Noi non abbiamo ancora cenato, ma ceneremo alle undici. 5. Ha Ella danzato? Sissignore, io ho danzato due volte con mia cugina. 6. Egli ha degenerato dai suoi antenati. 7. Ha egli dimorato in questa strada? Nossignore, egli ha dimorato nella strada vicina. 8. Ha il servo disceso le mie scatole? Egli non le ha ancora discese. 9. Perchè ha Ella fuggito la sua compagnia? Perchè essa era disonorevole. 10. Il tempo è stato cattivissimo la notte scorsa. Ha gelato. 11. Chi ha gridato? Il ragazzo ha gridato, perchè ha avuto paura. 12. I soldati hanno marciato venticinque miglia in un giorno.

1. Have you assisted at the representation of the new comedy? Yes, Sir. 2. Have you walked seven miles? No, sir, I have walked six miles. 3. Have you danced with my cousin (*fem.*)? Yes, sir, I have danced with her three times. 4. Have you danced? I have not yet danced. 5. Where did you live last year? Last year I lived in Paris. 6. Has the servant (*masc.*) brought down my hat? He has not brought down your hat, but he has brought down your stick. 7. Has it frozen last night? Yes, sir, last night it has frozen. 8. The friend of Charles has walked twenty miles in four hours. 9. My little brother has shouted, because he was afraid. 10. We have all danced last night at the house of your cousin (*fem.*). 11. What have you brought down? I have brought down all your books and newspapers. 12. Shall you dance this evening? No, sir, I shall not dance this evening.

## B.

1. Io sono accorso a lui, quando egli gridava. 2. Io sono andato con tuo fratello alla posta a cercare le nostre lettere. 3. I marinari sono approdati alla costa italiana, perchè il tempo era cattivo. 4. Noi siamo arrivati alle cinque e siamo partiti alle nove da Parigi. 5. Il tuo amico è caduto per le scale. 6. Noi siamo discesi per incontrarti. 7. Egli è entrato nella nostra camera questa mattina per portarci la colazione. 8. Perchè siete voi fuggito? Perchè aveva paura di essere bastonato. 9. Siete voi guarito, amico mio? Io sono guarito da due giorni. 10. Chi è ammalato? Il medico è ammalato. 11. Chi è passato per la strada? I soldati sono passati per la strada. 12. Che ora è suonata? È suonata la mezzanotte.

1. I have gone with your father to the promenade. 2. Who has come ashore? The sailors have come ashore. 3. They (*masc.*) have

come down to have their lessons. 4. I have arrived at seven o'clock with all your friends. 5. Have you not yet recovered from your illness? I recovered from my illness yesterday. 6. Why have they (*masc.*) run away? They (*masc.*) have run away because they were afraid of your dog. 7. Is he ill? No, sir, he is not ill. 8. Were you passing in this street at ten o'clock this morning? No, sir; I have passed through this street at eleven o'clock. 9. Have my sisters run to her? Yes, sir, and they (*fem.*) found her ill. 10. We shall not depart this evening, but to-morrow morning. 11. Who has entered your room? My friend Charles has entered my room with his dog. 12. Has she fallen? Yes, sir, she has fallen on the staircase.

## XXII.—REFLECTIVE VERBS (*Vérbi Pronomináli*).

All Reflective Verbs are conjugated with a *second* Pronoun (besides the *subject*), which is put in the *accusative*, and sometimes in the *dative*; the action of the subject being *reflected* or returning upon itself: as,

Io mi sóno ingannáto, *I have been mistaken.*  
 Elleno si scrívono, *they (fem.) write to each other.*

Many English Neuter Verbs are rendered in Italian with a Reflective Verb: thus,

io mi rallégro, *I rejoice (myself).*

When the Reflective Pronoun is in the *accusative* the Compound Tenses of the Reflective Verbs are conjugated with the auxiliary *éssere*, and the Past Participle agrees with the *subject*; as,

tu ti séi ammaláto, *thou hast fallen ill.*

When the Reflective Pronoun is in the *Dative*, the Reflective Verbs take either *avére*, or *éssere*, and the Past Participle remains unchanged; as,

Elleno si háanno invíato de' regáli, *They (f.) sent presents to each other.*

### *Conjugation of the Reflective Verb Levársi (to rise).*

#### INDICATIVE MOOD (*Indicativo*).

##### PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

Io mi lévo,	<i>I rise (myself).</i>
tu ti lévi,	<i>thou risest (thyself).</i>
égli si léva,	<i>he rises (himself).</i>
nói ci levíamo,	<i>we rise (ourselves).</i>
vói vi leváte,	<i>you rise (yourselves).</i>
églino si levano,	<i>they rise (themselves).</i>

IMPERFECT (*Imperfétto*).

io mi leváva,	<i>I rose (myself).</i>
tu ti levávi,	<i>thou didst rise (thyself).</i>
égli si leváva,	<i>he rose (himself).</i>
nói ci levávamo,	<i>we rose (ourselves).</i>
vói vi levaváte,	<i>you rose (yourselves).</i>
églino si levávano,	<i>they rose (themselves).</i>

PAST DEFINITE (*Passáto Defínito*).

io mi levái,	<i>I rose (myself).</i>
tu ti levásti,	<i>thou didst rise (thyself).</i>
égli si levò,	<i>he rose (himself).</i>
nói ci levámmo,	<i>we rose (ourselves).</i>
vói vi levásté,	<i>you rose (yourselves).</i>
églino si levárono,	<i>they rose (themselves).</i>

FUTURE (*Futúro*).

io mi leverò,	<i>I shall rise (myself).</i>
tu ti leverái,	<i>thou wilt rise (thyself).</i>
égli si leverà,	<i>he will rise (himself).</i>
nói ci leverémo,	<i>we shall rise (ourselves).</i>
vói vi leveréte,	<i>you will rise (yourselves).</i>
églino si leveránno,	<i>they will rise (themselves).</i>

PAST INDEFINITE (*Passáto Indefínito*).

io mi sóno leváto, a,	<i>I have risen (myself).</i>
tu ti séi leváto, a,	<i>thou hast risen (thyself).</i>
égli si è leváto, a,	<i>he has risen (himself).</i>
nói ci siámo leváti, e,	<i>we have risen (ourselves).</i>
vói vi siéte leváti, e,	<i>you have risen (yourselves).</i>
églino si sóno leváti, e,	<i>they have risen (themselves).</i>

PLUPERFECT (*Più che Perfétto*).

io mi éra leváto, a,	<i>I had risen (myself).</i>
tu ti éri leváto, a,	<i>thou hadst risen (thyself).</i>
égli si éra leváto, a,	<i>he had risen (himself).</i>
nói ci eravámo leváti, e,	<i>we had risen (ourselves).</i>
vói vi eraváte leváti, e,	<i>you had risen (yourselves).</i>
églino si éráno leváti, e,	<i>they had risen (themselves).</i>

PAST ANTERIOR (*Passáto Rimóto*).

io mi fúi leváto, a,	<i>I had risen (myself).</i>
tu ti fósti leváto, a,	<i>thou hadst risen (thyself).</i>
égli si fu leváto, a,	<i>he had risen (himself).</i>
nói ci fúmmo leváti, e,	<i>we had risen (ourselves).</i>
vói vi fóste leváti, e,	<i>you had risen (yourselves).</i>
églino si fúrono leváti, e,	<i>they had risen (themselves).</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR (*Futúro Anterióre*).

io mi sarò leváto, a,	<i>I shall have risen (myself).</i>
tu ti sarái leváto, a,	<i>thou wilt have risen (thyself).</i>
égli si sarà leváto, a,	<i>he will have risen (himself).</i>
nói ci sarémo leváti, e,	<i>we shall have risen (ourselves).</i>
vói vi saréte leváti, e,	<i>you will have risen (yourselves).</i>
églino si saránno leváti, e,	<i>they will have risen (themselves).</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD (*Imperatívo*).

leváti,	<i>rise (thou) (thyself).</i>
ch'égli si lévi,	<i>let (him) rise (himself).</i>
leviámoci,	<i>let (us) rise (ourselves).</i>
levátevi,	<i>rise (ye) (yourselves).</i>
ch'églino si lévino,	<i>let (them) rise (themselves).</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD (*Condizionále*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

io mi leveréi,	<i>I should rise (myself).</i>
tu ti leverésti,	<i>thou wouldst rise (thyself).</i>
égli si leverébbe,	<i>he would rise (himself).</i>
nói ci leverémmo,	<i>we should rise (ourselves).</i>
vói vi leveréste,	<i>you would rise (yourselves).</i>
églino si leverébbero,	<i>they would rise (themselves).</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).*First Form.*

io mi saréi leváto, a,	<i>I should have risen (myself).</i>
tu ti sarésti leváto, a,	<i>thou wouldst have risen (thyself).</i>
égli si sarébbe leváto, a,	<i>he would have risen (himself).</i>
nói ci sarémmo leváti, e,	<i>we should have risen (ourselves).</i>
vói vi saréste leváti, e,	<i>you would have risen (yourselves).</i>
églino si sarébbero leváti, e,	<i>they would have risen (themselves).</i>

*Second Form.*

io mi fóssi leváto, a,	<i>I should have risen (myself).</i>
tu ti fóssi leváto, a,	<i>thou wouldst have risen (thyself).</i>
égli si fósse leváto, a,	<i>he would have risen (himself).</i>
nói ci fóssimo leváti, e,	<i>we should have risen (ourselves).</i>
vói vi fóste leváti, e,	<i>you would have risen (yourselves).</i>
églino si fóssero leváti, e,	<i>they would have risen (themselves).</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (*Soggiuntivo*).PRESENT TENSE (*Presénte*).

ch'io mi lévi,	<i>that I may rise (myself).</i>
che tu ti lévi,	<i>that thou mayst rise (thyself).</i>
ch'égli si lévi,	<i>that he may rise (himself).</i>
che nós ci leviámo,	<i>that we may rise (ourselves).</i>
che vói vi leviáte,	<i>that you may rise (yourselves).</i>
ch'églino si lévino,	<i>that they may rise (themselves).</i>

IMPERFECT (*Imperfétto*).

ch' io mi levássi,	<i>that I might rise (myself).</i>
che tu ti levássi,	<i>that thou mightst rise (thyself).</i>
ch' egli si levásse.	<i>that he might rise (himself).</i>
che noi ci levássimo,	<i>that we might rise (ourselves).</i>
che vói vi leváste,	<i>that you might rise (yourselves).</i>
ch' églino si levássero,	<i>that they might rise (themselves).</i>

PAST TENSE (*Passáto*).

ch' io mi sía leváto, a,	<i>that I may have risen (myself)</i>
che tu ti sía leváto, a,	<i>that thou mayst have risen (thyself);</i>
ch' egli si sía leváto, a,	<i>that he may have risen (himself).</i>
che noi ci síamo leváti, e,	<i>that we may have risen (ourselves).</i>
che vói vi síate leváti, e,	<i>that you may have risen (yourselves).</i>
ch' églino si síano leváti, e,	<i>that they may have risen (themselves).</i>

PLUPERFECT (*Più che Perfétto*).

ch' io mi fóssi leváto, a,	<i>that I might have risen (myself).</i>
che tu ti fóssi leváto, a,	<i>that thou mightst have risen (thyself).</i>
ch' egli si fósse leváto, a,	<i>that he might have risen (himself).</i>
che noi ci fóssimo leváti, e,	<i>that we might have risen (ourselves).</i>
che vói vi fóste leváti, e,	<i>that you might have risen (yourselves).</i>
ch' églino si fóssero leváti, e,	<i>that they might have risen (themselves).</i>

INFINITIVE MOOD (*Infinito*).PRESENT (*Presénte*).

levársi,	<i>to rise (oneself).</i>
----------	---------------------------

PAST (*Passáto*).

éssersi leváto	} <i>to have risen (oneself, themselves).</i>
éssersi leváta	
éssersi leváti	
éssersi leváte	

GERUND (*Gerúndio*).PRESENT (*Presénte*).

levándomi,	<i>rising (myself).</i>
levándoti,	<i>rising (thyself).</i>
levándosi,	<i>rising (himself, herself).</i>
levándoci,	<i>rising (ourselves).</i>
levándovi,	<i>rising (yourselves).</i>
levándosi,	<i>rising (themselves).</i>

PAST (*Passáto*).

esséndomi leváto, a,	<i>having risen (myself).</i>
esséndoti leváto, a,	<i>having risen (thyself).</i>
esséndosi leváto, a,	<i>having risen (himself, herself).</i>
esséndoci leváti, e,	<i>having risen (ourselves).</i>
esséndovi leváti, e,	<i>having risen (yourselves).</i>
esséndosi leváti, e,	<i>having risen (themselves).</i>



PARTICIPLES (*Participi*).PRESENT (*Presénte*).

(not used.)

PAST (*Passáto*).

Singular.

Mas. levátosi,	}	risen (himself, herself).
Fem. levátasi,		

Plural.

Mas. levátisi,	}	risen (themselves).
Fem. levátesi,		

## REMARKS.

1. When the Reflective Verb is conjugated negatively, the Negative is always placed before the Reflective Pronoun. Thus, in *Rallegrársi*, to rejoice, the Indicative Present is as follows :

io non mi rallégro,	<i>I do not rejoice (myself).</i>
tu non ti rallégri,	<i>thou dost not rejoice (thyself).</i>
égli non si ralléggra,	<i>he does not rejoice (himself).</i>
nói non ci rallegriámo,	<i>we do not rejoice (ourselves).</i>
vói non vi ralleggráté,	<i>you do not rejoice (yourselves).</i>
églino non si rallégrano,	<i>they do not rejoice (themselves).</i>

2. The Reflective Verb is conjugated Interrogatively, as follows :

mi rallégro io ?	<i>do I rejoice (myself) ?</i>
ti rallégri tu ?	<i>dost thou rejoice (thyself) ?</i>
si ralléggra égli ?	<i>does he rejoice (himself) ?</i>
ci rallegriámo nós ?	<i>do we rejoice (ourselves) ?</i>
vi ralleggráté vói ?	<i>do you rejoice (yourselves) ?</i>
si rallégrano églino ?	<i>do they rejoice (themselves) ?</i>

3. The Reflective Verb used Interrogatively with a Negative, is conjugated as follows :

non mi rallégro io ?	<i>do I not rejoice (myself) ?</i>
non ti rallégri tu ?	<i>dost thou not rejoice (thyself) ?</i>
non si ralléggra égli ?	<i>does he not rejoice (himself) ?</i>
non ci rallegriámo nós ?	<i>do we not rejoice (ourselves) ?</i>
non vi ralleggráté vói ?	<i>do you not rejoice (yourselves) ?</i>
non si rallégrano églino ?	<i>do they not rejoice (themselves) ?</i>

4. Many Verbs, which in Italian are Reflective, are Intransitive in English :

Accórgersi,	} to perceive.	Alzársi,	to rise.
Avvedérsi,		Ammogliársi,	to take a wife.
Addomentársi,		Annoiársi,	to get tired.
Affrettársi,		Appoggiársi,	to lean.

Approssimársi,	} <i>to approach.</i>	Ingegnársi,	<i>to endeavour.</i>
Accostársi,		Innamorársi,	<i>to fall in love.</i>
Avvicinársi,	} <i>to surrender.</i>	Lamentársi,	<i>to complain.</i>
Arréndersi,		Levársi,	<i>to rise.</i>
Astenérsi,	<i>to abstain.</i>	Maravigliársi,	<i>to marvel.</i>
Attristársi,	<i>to become sad.</i>	Maritársi,	<i>to get a husband.</i>
Avanzársi,	<i>to advance.</i>	Offéndersi,	<i>to take offence.</i>
Avviársi,	<i>to start.</i>	Oppórsi,	<i>to oppose.</i>
Bagnársi,	<i>to bathe.</i>	Pentírsi,	<i>to repent.</i>
Compiacérsi,	<i>to be pleased.</i>	Querelársi,	<i>to complain.</i>
Contentársi,	<i>to be satisfied.</i>	Rallegrársi,	<i>to rejoice.</i>
Crucciársi,	} <i>to get angry.</i>	Ricordársi,	<i>to remember.</i>
Adirársi,		Riposársi,	<i>to rest.</i>
Arrabbiársi,	} <i>to delight.</i>	Rompersi,	<i>to break.</i>
Dilettársi,		Sbrigársi,	<i>to make haste.</i>
Dimenticársi,	<i>to forget.</i>	Sentírsi,	<i>to feel.</i>
Dolérsi,	<i>to grieve.</i>	Scordársi,	<i>to forget.</i>
Fidársi,	<i>to trust.</i>	Spicciársi,	<i>to hasten.</i>
Imbarcársi,	<i>to embark.</i>	Svegliársi,	<i>to awake.</i>
Impadronírsi,	<i>to take possession.</i>	Vantársi,	<i>to boast.</i>
Infastidírsi,	<i>to get weary.</i>	Vergognársi,	<i>to be ashamed.</i>

## EXERCISE XII.

## A.

1. Io mi rallegro con te della tua buona fortuna. 2. Grazie mille, mio caro, te ne sono obbligatissimo. 3. Egli non si accorgeva che noi non avevamo sedie. 4. Noi ci siamo avveduti della perdita che abbiamo subita! 5. A che ora ti addormentasti la notte scorsa? Io mi addormentai a mezzanotte. 6. Giovanni, affrettati a portarmi il cappello, perchè io ho da sortire. 7. Quando io entrai nella camera, tutti si alzarono e mi salutarono. 8. Si è Carlo ammogliato? Nossignore, Carlo non si è ancora ammogliato, ma Emma si è maritata. 9. Si è Ella annoiata questa sera, signor mio? Io non mi annoio in sua compagnia. 10. Su che si appoggia quel povero vecchierello? Egli si appoggia sul bastone per non cadere. 11. Approssimatevi, ragazzi, ed io vi detterò le vostre lezioni. 12. Egli mi si accostò per domandarmi che cosa io ne pensava.

1. Why do you rejoice, boys? Because we shall have a present. 2. Did your sister rejoice to receive a present? Yes, sir, she rejoiced. 3. We should all rejoice if we had a present. 4. Do you perceive that you are wrong? No, sir, I do not perceive it; but I think that I am right. 5. Did they (*masc.*) perceive their loss last night? No, sir; they (*masc.*) perceived their loss this morning. 6. At what time (*hour*) did your little brother fall asleep? He fell asleep at half-past eight o'clock. 7. Did the hatter make haste to bring you your hat? Yes, sir, the hatter brought it to me this morning. 8. Will you go out to-day? Yes, sir, I shall go out, but I shall not make haste. 9. Why did you get up (*have you risen*)? To salute you, sir. 10. On what day will he be married? He will be mar-

ried next Saturday. 11. Will your cousin Mary also get married on that day? No, sir, she will get married on the fifth of May. 12. Why do you come near me (*approach*)? To ask you what you think of it.

## B.

1. Perchè vi astenete dal vino? Perchè questo vino è cattivo: io non me ne asterrei se fosse buono. 2. Perchè si sono attristate le tue sorelle? Perchè elleno furono biasimate dal loro maestro di musica. 3. L'esercito nemico si è avanzato ed i nostri soldati furono obbligati di arrendersi. 4. Io fui obbligato ad avanzarmi per parlargli. 5. Si avviò Ella alle cinque, od alle sei? Io mi avviai alle cinque e mezzo. 6. Il mio maestro non si contentò del mio esercizio, e me ne ha dettato un altro. 7. Perchè ti sei tu adirato col servo? Perchè egli non ha portato le mie lettere alla posta. 8. Il padre era crucciato col figlio, perchè questi era infingardo. 9. Non si è suo fratello arrabbiato? Nossignore, mio fratello non s'è arrabbiato. 10. Io mi diletto a suonare il pianoforte—e ne ho uno bellissimo. 11. La tua canzone ci diletto tutti. 12. Avete imparato la vostra lezione? Me la imparai ieri sera, signor maestro; ma ora me ne sono dimenticato.

1. Have you forgotten your lesson? No, sir, I have learnt it, and I remember it. 2. Why do you abstain from this beer? Because it is not good. 3. Has the army advanced? Yes, sir, our army has advanced. 4. At what hour did your sisters start for the promenade? They (*fem.*) started at three o'clock. 5. Was your father angry with you? No, sir, my father was not angry with me, but was angry with my little brother. 6. We were all angry with our servant (*fem.*) because our coffee was cold. 7. Would you be angry with the hatter if he were not to bring you your hat this evening? I should not be angry with him. 8. In what do you take pleasure? We all take pleasure in playing (*to play*) the piano. 9. Has she forgotten to speak Italian? She has not forgotten to speak Italian, but she has forgotten to speak French. 10. Will you forget this lesson? I shall not forget this lesson, sir. 11. On what did you lean? I supported myself on this stick. 12. Will you forget my advice? No, sir, I shall remember it.

## C.

*dice, says.*

1. Vi fidate voi del vostro servo? Io non me ne fido. 2. Di chi ti fidi tu? Di nessuno. 3. Un proverbio italiano dice "Fidarsi è ben, ma non fidarsi è meglio." 4. Noi c'imbarchammo per l'America il venti giugno e vi arrivammo il ventotto a mezzogiorno. 5. Egli si è imbarcato in una difficilissima intrapresa. 6. Su che nave s'imbarcherà Ella? Io m'imbarcherò sul battello a vapore "Il Colombo." 7. Que' ragazzi si sono impadroniti de' miei libri. 8. Noi ci siamo infastiditi di avere l'arrosto ogni giorno. 9. Ragazzi, riposatevi se siete stanchi. 10. Noi non ci riposiamo, perchè non siamo stanchi. 11. Vi sentite voi male? Nossignore,

io mi sento bene. 12. Perchè vi vantate d'una tale azione? Vergognatevi.

1. Have you forgotten my advice? No, sir, we have not forgotten your advice. 2. Does she trust her servants (*fem.*)? Yes, sir, she trusts her servants (*fem.*), and everybody. 3. Why do you trust him? Because he is an honest man. 4. Would you trust him if he were a thief? No, sir, I should not trust him if he were a thief. 5. Why did you embark in such a difficult undertaking? This undertaking is not difficult. 6. On what ship will they (*masc.*) embark? They (*masc.*) will embark on "The Columbus." 7. Shall we take possession of his money? No, sir; we should be wrong. 8. Why do you not rest? Because I am not tired. 9. Would you rest, if you were tired? Yes, sir, I should rest if I were tired. 10. Of what do you boast? I do not boast, sir. 11. Are you ashamed of not having (*not to have*) learnt your lesson? Yes, sir, I am ashamed of it. 12. Do you feel well? No, sir, I do not feel well; I feel ill.

### XXIII.—IMPERSONAL VERBS (*Vérbi Impersonáli*).

Impersonal Verbs are either *really* impersonal, *i. e.*, they have no other form but the third person, or they are *used* as Impersonal, although they may be conjugated like other Verbs.

1. Impersonal Verbs, *really* so, are:—

accáde,	} <i>it happens.</i>	grándina,	<i>it hails.</i>
avviéne,		lampéggia,	<i>it lightens.</i>
didiáccia,	} <i>it thaws.</i>	névica,	<i>it snows.</i>
dimóia,		pióve,	<i>it rains.</i>
g'la,	} <i>it freezes.</i>	tuóna,	<i>it thunders.</i>
ghiáccia,			

2. Verbs *used* impersonally are:

básta,	<i>it is enough.</i>	páre,	<i>it seems.</i>
bisógna,	<i>it is necessary.</i>	piáce,	<i>it pleases.</i>
conviéne,	<i>it is proper.</i>	sémбра,	<i>it seems.</i>
rinoréce,	<i>it pains.</i>	s' inténde,	<i>it is understood.</i>
occórre,	<i>it is wanted.</i>	duóle,	<i>it is painful.</i>

Besides these, many other Verbs are *formed* impersonally with the third person singular of *fáre*, *éssere*, and *avére*: thus,

fa bel témpo,	<i>it is fine weather.</i>	fa sóle,	<i>it is sunny.</i>
fa cattívo témpo,	<i>it is bad weather.</i>	fa vénto,	<i>it is windy.</i>
fa cáldo,	<i>it is hot.</i>	fa úmido,	<i>it is damp.</i>
fa chiáro di lúna,	<i>it is moonlight.</i>	è témpo,	<i>it is time.</i>
fa fréddo,	<i>it is cold.</i>	è méglío,	<i>it is better.</i>
fa pólvére,	<i>it is dusty.</i>	v' ha témpo,	<i>there is time, etc.</i>

The irregular Verb *dovére* (see p. 146) is used for the English *must, to be obliged*: the following verb being put in the Infinitive *without* a preposition, as: *Io dévo scrivere, I must write*; *tu dévi venire, thou shalt be obliged to come*.

*Bisógna* is often used instead of *dovére* and does not take a preposition before the Infinitive, if used in a general sense, as: *bisógna vivere, one must live*. If however there is a noun or pronoun subject of the sentence, the verb following *bisogna* must be put in the Subjunctive, as: *bisógna che nói viviámo, we must live*. *Avére da* is used also for *must*, as: *ho da dargli úno scúdo, I must give him a dollar*.

*Bisognare* means *to want* if conjugated as a pronominal verb, as: *mi bisógna un cappéllo nuóvo, I want a new hat*.

3. The Compound Tenses of the Impersonal Verbs take the Auxiliary *avére* when the verb is transitive, as: *ha suonáto mezzanótte, it has struck midnight*; and the Auxiliary *éssere* or *avére* when the verb is *really* impersonal, as; *è piovúto la nótte scórsa, it has rained last night*; *ha nevicáto óggi, it has snowed to-day*.

4. *There is, there are, there will be, etc.*, are rendered with *ci* or *vi è, vi sóno, vi sarà, etc.*

5. All Impersonal Verbs are used only in the third person: thus,

*Pióvere, to rain.*

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

<i>Present</i>	<i>pióve,</i>	<i>it rains.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>piovéva,</i>	<i>it was raining.</i>
<i>Past Def.</i>	<i>pióvve,</i>	<i>it did rain.</i>
<i>Future</i>	<i>pioverà,</i>	<i>it will rain.</i>
<i>Past Indef.</i>	<i>è piovúto,</i>	<i>it has rained.</i>
<i>Pluperf.</i>	<i>éra piovúto,</i>	<i>it had been raining.</i>
<i>Past Ant.</i>	<i>fu piovúto,</i>	<i>it had rained.</i>
<i>Fut. Ant.</i>	<i>sarà piovúto,</i>	<i>it will have rained.</i>

#### CONDITIONAL MOOD.

<i>Present</i>	<i>pioverébbe,</i>	<i>it would rain.</i>
<i>Past 1st Form</i>	<i>sarébbe piovúto,</i>	<i>it would have rained.</i>
<i>Past 2nd Form</i>	<i>fósse piovúto,</i>	<i>it would have rained</i>

(No Imperative.)

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

<i>Present</i>	<i>ch'égli pióva,</i>	<i>that it may rain.</i>
<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>ch'égli piovésse,</i>	<i>that it might rain.</i>
<i>Past</i>	<i>ch'égli sía piovúto,</i>	<i>that it may have rained.</i>
<i>Pluperfect</i>	<i>ch'égli fósse piovúto,</i>	<i>that it might have rained.</i>

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

*Present* **piovere,** to rain. | *Past* **essere piovuto,** to have rained.

## GERUND.

*Present* **piovendo,** raining.  
*Past* **essendo piovuto,** having rained.

## PARTICIPLES.

*Present* (Not used.)  
*Past, Sing.* **piovuto,** *Fem.* **piovuta,** rained.  
*Plur.* **piovuti,** **piovute,** rained.

**Bisognare,** to be necessary.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present* **bisogna,** it is necessary.  
*Imperfect* **bisognava,** it was necessary.  
*Past Def.* **bisognò,** it was necessary.  
*Future* **bisognerà,** it will be necessary.  
*Past Indef.* **è bisognato,** it has been necessary.  
*Pluperfect* **era bisognato,** it had been necessary.  
*Past Ant.* **fu bisognato,** it had been necessary.  
*Fut. Ant.* **sarà bisognato,** it will have been necessary.

## CONDITIONAL MOOD.

*Present* **bisognerebbe,** it would be necessary.  
*Past 1st Form* **sarebbe bisognato,** it would have been necessary.  
*Past 2nd Form* **fosse bisognato,** it would have been necessary.

(No Imperative by itself.)

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present* **ch'égli bisogni,** that it may be necessary.  
*Imperf.* **ch'égli bisognasse,** that it might be necessary.  
*Past* **ch'égli sia bisognato,** that it may have been necessary.  
*Pluperf.* **ch'égli fosse bisognato,** that it might have been necessary.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

*Present* **bisognare,** to be necessary.  
*Past* **essere bisognato,** to have been necessary.

## GERUND.

*Present* **bisognando,** being necessary.  
*Past* **essendo bisognato,** having been necessary.

## PARTICIPLES.

*Present* (Not used.)  
*Past* *Sing.* **bisognato,** *Fem.* **bisognata,** been necessary.  
*Plur.* **bisognati,** **bisognate,** been necessary.

## EXERCISE XLII.

## A.

1. Piove? Nossignore, non piove. 2. Ha piovuto ieri sera a Londra? Ieri sera non ha piovuto in Londra, ma ha piovuto a Parigi. 3. Che è accaduto? Nulla, signore. 4. Ha gelato la notte scorsa? Sissignore, la scorsa notte ha gelato. 5. Questa mattina gela. 6. Grandina? Non grandina, ma nevica. 7. Lampeggia? Oggi non lampeggia, ma lampeggiò ieri. 8. Ha nevicato tutta la notte. 9. È egli piovuto? Nossignore, non ha piovuto. 10. È tuonato e lampeggiato tutto il giorno. 11. La neve è didiacciata. 12. Tuona, ma non lampeggia.

1. What has happened? The boy has fallen. 2. Does it rain? It does not rain, sir. 3. Did it rain this morning? Yes, sir, this morning it did rain. 4. Is it freezing? It does not freeze. 5. Did it freeze this morning? This morning it did freeze. 6. Did it hail? Yes, sir. 7. Is it hailing? No, sir, it does not hail. 8. Has it been snowing? Yes, sir, it has snowed, and it is freezing. 9. Does it thunder? It thunders and lightens. 10. Is the snow melted? The snow is not melted; it is frozen. 11. What will happen? Nothing will happen. 12. What has happened yesterday? I have been punished by my father.

## B.

1. Basta, basta, non pariate più, capisco. 2. Vi basta una tazza di caffè? Sì, una tazza mi basta. 3. Che cosa vi bisogna? Mi bisognano danari. 4. Le bisogna un'ombrello? Nossignore, mi bisogna un bastone. 5. A me non bisogna nulla. 6. Se Ella parte per Parigi, Le bisognerà un abito nuovo. 7. Ciò non mi conviene. 8. La sua malattia mi rincresce. 9. Che cosa Le occorre? Mi bisogna un bicchier d'acqua. 10. Che cosa Le pare di questa casa? Mi pare ch'essa sia umida. 11. Le piace avere un'arancia? A me non piace aver un'arancia; ma mi piacerebbe avere una tazza di tè. 12. A me sembra ch'egli abbia ragione.

1. What do you want? I want a new hat. 2. What does she want? She wants an umbrella. 3. What did they (*masc.*) want? Two bottles of wine. 4. Will you want anything? No, sir, thanks; I shall not want anything. 5. Does his misfortune pain you? Yes, sir, it pains me. 6. The illness of my cousin (*fem.*) pains me. 7. Is this sufficient? Yes, this is sufficient. 8. It seems that this coat is not new. 9. It seems to me that she is wrong. 10. This is not proper. 11. One cup of tea is sufficient for me. 12. Is one bottle of wine sufficient for you? Yes, sir, thanks.

## C.

1. Fa caldo questa mattina. 2. Oggi fa freddo. 3. Nel giardino a mezzanotte fa chiaro di luna. 4. Nella strada fa polvere. 5. Fa caldo perchè fa sole. 6. Io non passerò oggi perchè fa

vento. 7. Fa umido questa sera? Nossignore, non ra umido, è bel tempo, è una notte stellata. 8. È meglio studiare che divertirsi. 9. V'ha tempo a tutto. 10. Bel proverbio italiano è questo: Chi ha tempo non aspetti tempo. 11. Amo passeggiare al chiaro di luna, non fa freddo. 12. Pare che gelerà. Nossignore, a me pare che piovàrà.

1. Is it cold? No, sir, it is hot. 2. It is moonlight; I shall take a walk. 3. I shall not take a walk; it is dusty. 4. Why is it hot? Because the sun shines. 5. Is it damp? No, sir, it is fine weather. 6. It is better to learn your lesson than to play. 7. This starry night is beautiful; I shall take a walk. 8. Is there time? There is no time. 9. It seems that it will rain. 10. Do you want a bottle of wine, or a cup of coffee? I want a cup of tea. 11. It seems that this room is damp. 12. A cup of coffee and some bread and butter will be sufficient for me.

## XXIV.—ADVERBS (*Avvérbî*).

The Adverbs are used to modify verbs, adjectives, or other adverbs, and are invariable.

There are eight different kinds of Adverbs in Italian; they are:

(a.) Adverbs of time,	<i>avvérbî di témpo.</i>
(b.) Adverbs of place,	<i>avvérbî di luógo.</i>
(c.) Adverbs of manner,	<i>avvérbî di módo.</i>
(d.) Adverbs of quantity,	<i>avvérbî di quantità.</i>
(e.) Adverbs of affirmation,	<i>avvérbî affermativi.</i>
(f.) Adverbs of negation,	<i>avvérbî negativi.</i>
(g.) Adverbs of doubt,	<i>avvérbî di dúbbio.</i>
(h.) Adverbial expressions,	<i>módi avverbiali.</i>

The Adverbs are either *naturally* so, as: *óra, now*; *sémpre, always*: or are *formed* from adjectives or participles, as *facilménte, easily*; *passionataménte, passionately*; *piáno, quietly*, etc.

### REMARKS.

1. Adverbs are formed from Adjectives ending in *e* (not preceded by *l* or *r*) by adding *ménte*: as

ADJECTIVES.		ADVERBS.	
<i>costánte,</i>	<i>constant.</i>	<i>costanteménte,</i>	<i>constantly.</i>
<i>felíce,</i>	<i>happy.</i>	<i>feliceménte,</i>	<i>happily.</i>
<i>dóloe,</i>	<i>sweet.</i>	<i>doloeménte,</i>	<i>sweetly.</i>



2. Adjectives ending in *e* preceded by *l* or *r* drop the final *e* and take *mente* to become Adverbs : as,

ADJECTIVES.		ADVERBS.	
<i>facile</i> ,	<i>easy</i> .	<i>facilménte</i> ,	<i>easily</i> .
<i>difficile</i> ,	<i>difficult</i> .	<i>difficilménte</i> ,	<i>with difficulty</i> .
<i>particoláre</i> ,	<i>particular</i> .	<i>particolarménte</i> ,	<i>particularly</i> .
<i>esterióre</i> ,	<i>external</i> .	<i>esteriorménte</i> ,	<i>externally</i> .

3. Adjectives ending in *o* are changed into Adverbs by adding *mente* to their feminine singular : as,

ADJECTIVES.		ADVERBS.	
<i>pígro</i> ,	<i>lazy</i> .	<i>pígraménte</i> ,	<i>lazily</i> .
<i>modéstó</i> ,	<i>modest</i> .	<i>modestaménte</i> ,	<i>modestly</i> .
<i>sággio</i> ,	<i>wise</i> .	<i>saggiaménte</i> ,	<i>wisely</i> .

4. Some masculine Adjectives are also used as Adverb without undergoing any modification : as, *présto*, *quickly* ; *fisso*, *fixedly*, etc.

5. Only the first and second of the Ordinal Numbers can become adverbs : as, *primieraménte*, *first* ; *secondariaménte*, *secondly*. Thirdly, fourthly, etc., are translated : in *térzo luógo*, in *quárto luógo*, etc.

6. Adverbs form their Comparatives and Superlatives like the Adjectives, the adverbial ending *ménte* being added : as,

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative Relative.	Superlative Absolute
<i>feliceménte</i> ,	<i>più feliceménte</i> ,	<i>il più feliceménte</i> ,	<i>felicissimaménte</i> .
<i>facilménte</i> ,	<i>più facilménte</i> ,	<i>il più facilménte</i> ,	<i>facilissimaménte</i> .

7. The following real Adverbs form their Comparatives and Superlatives irregularly.

Positive.	Comparative.	Relative.	Superlative.	Absolute.
béne, <i>well</i> ,	méglio, <i>better</i> ,	il méglio, <i>best</i> .	beníssimo,	} <i>very</i> } <i>well</i> .
			ottimaménte,	
mále, <i>badly</i> ,	péggio, <i>worse</i> ,	il péggio, <i>worst</i> .	malíssimo,	} <i>very</i> } <i>badly</i> .
			pessimaménte,	
mólto, <i>very</i> ,	più, <i>more</i> ,	il più, <i>most</i> .	moltíssimo,	<i>very much</i> .
póco, <i>little</i> ,	méno, <i>less</i> ,	il méno, <i>least</i> .	pochíssimo,	<i>very little</i> .

8. *Béne*, *mále* and *póco* sometimes take the augmentative and diminutive terminations *one* and *ino* : as *malóne*, *very badly* ; *beníno*, *pretty well* ; *pochíno*, *very little*.

9. Adverbs may be repeated in order to increase their

meaning: as, or *óra*, *just presently*, etc., or be made superlative a second time, even when they are already really superlative: as, *assái*, *very*; *assáissimo*, *very much*.

10. Adjectives are used adverbially when they modify the *subject* rather than the *verb*: as, *égli era fisso a guardárlu*, *he was looking at him fixedly*.

#### A. ADVERBS OF 'TIME (*Avvérbí di Témpo*).

Quándo,	<i>when.</i>	tárdi,	<i>late.</i>
da quándo,	<i>since when.</i>	già,	} <i>already.</i>
sémpre,	<i>always.</i>	di già,	
mái,	} <i>with</i> } <i>never.</i>	talóra,	} <i>sometimes.</i>
giammái,		talvólta,	
óggi,	<i>to-day.</i>	póco dópo,	<i>a little after-</i>
dománi,	<i>to-morrow.</i>		<i>wards.</i>
ormái,	} <i>now.</i>	póco fa,	} <i>a little while ago.</i>
oramái		póco prima,	
spéssu	} <i>often.</i>	póco avánti,	
sovénte		pocánzi,	
prima,	<i>before.</i>	pocóra,	} <i>until now.</i>
dópo,	<i>afterwards.</i>	finóra,	
allóra,	<i>then.</i>	sinóra,	} <i>whenever.</i>
pói,	} <i>afterwards.</i>	qualóra,	
póscia,		di buón' óra,	<i>early.</i>
posdománi,	<i>the day after to-</i>	per óra,	<i>for the present.</i>
	<i>morrow.</i>	testè,	<i>lately.</i>
iéri,	<i>yesterday.</i>	d' óra in pói,	} <i>henceforth.</i>
iéri l' áltro,	} <i>the day before yes-</i>	d' óggi in pói,	
l' altriéri,		d' allóra in pói,	<i>from that time.</i>
avantiéri,	<i>terday.</i>	d' óra in óra,	<i>from hour to hour.</i>
présto,	<i>soon, quick.</i>	non più,	<i>no longer.</i>
tósto,	<i>soon.</i>	appéna,	} <i>as soon as.</i>
adésso,	} <i>now.</i>	cóme prima,	
óra,		non prima,	<i>not before.</i>
or óra,	<i>presently.</i>	súbito che,	} <i>as soon as.</i>
súbito,	<i>immediately.</i>	tósto che,	
avánti,	<i>before.</i>	di rádo,	<i>seldom.</i>

Già often means *of course*: as, *Già, Élla mi véde*, *of course, you see me*.

Già with a negative means *rather not*: as, *Io non crédo già tútto ciò ch' égli díce*, *I do not believe all that he says*.

Già, when preceding a noun, means *former*: as, *il già re di Nápoli*, *the former King of Naples*.

#### EXERCISE XLIII.

1. Quando è Ella arrivata a Londra? Io arrivai a Londra ieri l'altro. 2. Avantiéri io era a Parigi, oggi sono a Londra e domani

sarò a Manchester. 3. È ormai tempo di cominciare la lezione. 4. Io sono spesso con tuo fratello; egli è sovente al mio negozio. 5. Il dottore prima lo credeva seriamente ammalato; e dopo non credè seria la sua malattia. 6. Bisogna far presto, perchè ho fretta. 7. Io sarò tosto con Lei. 8. Desidera Ella essere subito servita? Servitemi appena avrete finito di servire quel signore. 9. È ormai tardi, bisognerà partire subito. 10. D' ora in poi io sarò studiosissimo. 11. Ella è arrivata poco dopo noi. 12. Noi eravamo testè con la madre e le sorelle di Guglielmo.

1. I have often been with Mr. S. 2. When did you arrive? We arrived yesterday. 3. You are late. Yes, sir; I am late. 4. Is she in a hurry? Yes, madam, she is in a hurry, because she has to go out at once. 5. We shall play after we shall have had our lessons. 6. I shall come as soon as I shall have finished my exercise. 7. Were you in London yesterday? I was in London the day before yesterday; and yesterday I was at Brighton. 8. Henceforth I shall always learn my lessons. 9. He is now a very studious young man. 10. He is often with my cousin Charles. 11. You were not at the school yesterday. No, sir; I was in Brighton. 12. You should learn your lessons first, and then play.

### B. ADVERBS OF PLACE (*Avvérbí di luógo*).

Óve,	}	<i>where.</i>	déntro,	}	<i>inside.</i>
dóve,			fuóri,		<i>outside.</i>
ónde,	}	<i>whence.</i>	indiétro,	}	<i>behind.</i>
dónde,			là su,		}
quí,	}	<i>here.</i>	lassù,	}	
quà,			là giù,		
là.	}	<i>there.</i>	laggiù,	}	<i>everywhere.</i>
colà,			da per tútto,		
quà e là,	}	<i>to and fro.</i>	altróve,	}	<i>elsewhere.</i>
vi, ívi,			innánzi,		<i>before.</i>
ci,	}	<i>here.</i>	abbáссо,	}	<i>down.</i>
sópra,			costì,		
su,	}	<i>upon.</i>	costà,	}	<i>there.</i>
giù,			quíndi,		<i>thence.</i>
quínci,	}	<i>hence.</i>	quassù,	}	<i>above here.</i>
diétro,			quaggiù,		<i>down here.</i>
sótto,	}	<i>underneath.</i>	su e giù,	}	<i>up and down.</i>
davánti,			di dóve,		<i>whence.</i>

NOTE.—*Davánti* is only used of place, *avánti* is only used of time, except when meaning *forward*, *along*, when it is an interjection.

### EXERCISE XLIV.

1. Dove siete, Carlo? Io son quí. 2. Chi è là? Tuo cugino è là con suo fratello. 3. Io sono stato quà tutta la mattina ad aspet-

tarvi. 4. Noi siamo stati quà e là a cercarlo. 5. Portate su i libri che son giù nella libreria. 6. Io sono stato molte volte su e giù per le scale e sono stanco. 7. Che cosa c'è dentro questa scatola? C'è un cappello nuovo per mia sorella Rosina. 8. Andate abbasso nella cucina a chiamare la serva. 9. Sarete quassù domattina? Nossignore, domattina noi saremo altrove. 10. Donde arrivate? Io arrivo da Parigi. 11. Il suo canino è sotto la tavola. 12. Da per tutto si trovano buoni e cattivi ragazzi.

1. Where were you this morning? I was down in the library. 2. Who was here an hour ago? Mr. S. was here with his servant (*masc.*). 3. Who is waiting there? The servant (*masc.*) of the doctor. 4. We have been looking for you everywhere. 5. Have you been up there? Not yet, sir. 6. What is inside that box? There is a present for my father. 7. What is underneath my chair? My dog is under your chair. 8. Have you been downstairs? Yes, sir, to call the servant (*masc.*). 9. Have you been at the theatre last evening? No, sir; we have been elsewhere. 10. Whence does she arrive? She arrives from London. 11. Call your dog from under the table. 12. I shall wait for the doctor here, in his library.

### C. ADVERBS OF MANNER (*Avvérbí di módo*).

<i>cóme,</i>	<i>how.</i>	<i>púre,</i>	<i>yet, also.</i>
<i>già,*</i>	<i>indeed.</i>	<i>fórsa,</i>	<i>perhaps.</i>
<i>si,</i>	}	<i>péggio,</i>	<i>worse.</i>
<i>così,</i>		<i>volentieri,</i>	<i>willingly.</i>
<i>perchè,</i>	<i>why.</i>	<i>quási,</i>	<i>almost.</i>
<i>béne,</i>	<i>well.</i>	<i>méglio,</i>	<i>better.</i>
<i>mále,</i>	<i>badly.</i>	<i>a málincuóre,</i>	<i>unwillingly.</i>

### EXERCISE XLV.

1. Come si pronuncia questa parola, signor maestro? Essa si pronuncia così. 2. Come si chiama suo fratello? Mio fratello si chiama Francesco. 3. Questo esercizio non è così buono come quello di ieri: e perchè? Perchè non ho avuto molto tempo a scriverlo. 4. Perchè non avete imparata la lezione? Perchè sono stato al teatro ieri sera. 5. Non è bene andare al teatro prima di imparare la lezione. 6. Dov'è sua cugina? Ella è forse a Milano oggi. 7. Noi impariamo volentieri la musica e la lingua italiana. 8. Mia sorella impara a malincuore il disegno. 9. Io passerò volentieri con Lei, se Ella mi permetterà di accompagnarla. 10. Dopo tutto questo, che cosa ne pensate? Io ne penso male, mio caro. 11. Io pure lo credo onesto. 12. Egli è quasi rovinato.

1. Do you learn willingly the French language? No, sir, I learn it unwillingly. 2. What do you learn willingly? The Italian

\* See remarks on page 114.

language. 3. He is not as studious as his brother. 4. Why were you not here this morning? I was elsewhere with my father. 5. Allow me to come with you, sir. Willingly. 6. He has had almost a whole bottle of wine, and now he is ill. 7. Is this well? No, sir, that is bad. 8. How is that lady called? She is called Mrs. Large. 9. How do you pronounce these words? These words are pronounced so. 10. I go with him willingly. 11. I always learn my lessons willingly. 12. He will be here this evening with all his friends.

#### D. ADVERBS OF QUANTITY (*Avvérbí di quantità*).

<i>mólto,</i>	<i>much.</i>	<i>tánto . . quánto,</i>	<i>as much . . as.</i>
<i>póco,</i>	<i>little.</i>	<i>ancóra,</i>	<i>still, more.</i>
<i>méno,</i>	<i>less.</i>	<i>a póco a póco,</i>	<i>little by little.</i>
<i>tróppo,</i>	<i>too much.</i>	<i>a sufficiénza,</i>	<i>sufficiently.</i>
<i>tánto,</i>	<i>so much.</i>	<i>vía più,</i>	} <i>much more.</i>
<i>abbastánza,</i>	<i>enough.</i>	<i>vie più,</i>	
<i>più,</i>	<i>more.</i>	<i>a bizzéffe,</i>	<i>plenty.</i>
<i>quánto,</i>	<i>how much.</i>	<i>assái,</i>	<i>much, many.</i>

*Assái* means *many* when followed by *di*: as,

*assái di bélle canzóni ha túo cugíno,*  
*thy cousin has many beautiful songs.*

It means *much, very* when used without the preposition: as,

*assái bélle canzóni ha túo cugíno,*  
*very beautiful songs has thy cousin.*

#### EXERCISE XLVI.

1. Quanto costa questo libro? Esso costa due scellini. 2. Quanto Le costarono i suoi cavalli? Essi mi costarono duecento cinquanta lire sterline. 3. Questa casa costa meno di quella. 4. Non comprerò quest'abito, perchè costa troppo. 5. Quattro lire sterline per un bell'abito non sono troppo. 6. È tanto tempo da che ho avute tue nuove che mi era dimenticato dove abitavi. 7. Tanto costa quest'abito quanto quell'altro. 8. Ne avete abbastanza? Sì, signore. 9. Ha Ella vino a sufficienza? Sì, grazie, ne ho abbastanza. 10. Hanno que' signori di assai bei cavalli? Quei signori hanno cavalli assai, ma non assai belli. 11. In quella tua lettera ci erano errori a bizzeffe. 12. Poco a poco imparerò a scrivere e leggere bene.

1. How much does this looking-glass cost? Twenty-five pounds. 2. That one costs less than this one. 3. These cost as much as those. 4. Would they cost less if they (*masc.*) were old? They (*masc.*) would cost much less. 5. Have you forgotten where I live? Yes, sir, because it is a very long time since I had news of you.

6. Have you enough wine? Yes, sir, thanks; I have enough. 7. I shall learn the Italian language well, but little by little. 8. This is too much; that is sufficient. 9. Can he write Italian well? Not very well. 10. How much have you paid for this horse? I paid ninety-five pounds and ten shillings. 11. That was too much. 12. It was as much as you have paid for your old horse.

### E. ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION (*Avvérbí d' affermazióne*).

sì,	<i>yes.</i>	davvéro,	<i>truly.</i>
in fátti,	<i>in fact.</i>	appúnto,	} <i>yes, so.</i>
cérto, di cérto,	} <i>certainly.</i>	per l' appúnto,	
certaménte,		già,	<i>of course.</i>
sicuraménte,		mái sí,	<i>certainly, yes.</i>

### EXERCISE XLVII.

1. Egli lo avrebbe certamente aiutato, ma non ne aveva i mezzi. 2. Crede Ella tutto ciò che egli narra? Io lo credo di certo. 3. Il ballo all'ambasciata di Spagna fu davvero magnifico. 4. Ci era Ella, signor Conte? Sì, signore. 5. Già s'intende Ella è da per tutto. 6. Ella s'inganna davvero, mio caro, se crede tali storielle. 7. È stata Ella dal Signor B.? Per l'appunto, e l'ho trovato a casa col maestro di musica. 8. Io sarò felicissimo di essere al suo pranzo domani sera di certo. 9. Io appunto La cercava. 10. Ella già mi cerca sempre. 11. In fatti è così. 12. Ella si trova a casa di rado. Per l'appunto.

1. It is of course understood that I shall be at your house at eight o'clock this evening. 2. We shall certainly be there with all our friends (*masc.*). 3. Will you be there also? Yes, sir. 4. Will your friend (*fem.*) be at the theatre to-morrow night? Certainly she will be there. 5. Is Mr. S. very rich? Yes, sir, he is extremely rich. 6. Has he related to you his new fib? Yes, sir. 7. Do you believe his story? Certainly, I do. 8. Of course you believe everything. 9. Have you already had your dinner? Yes, sir. 10. Have they (*masc.*) been with our friends (*masc.*) at the concert? Yes, madam. 11. Is he mistaken? Certainly. 12. Would you be happy if you were now with your parents? Certainly.

### F. ADVERBS OF NEGATION (*Avvérbí di negazióne*).

no,	<i>no.</i>	nemméno,	} <i>nor . . either.</i>
non,	<i>not.</i>	nè mánco,	
non . . mái,	<i>never.</i>	nè . . nè,	<i>neither.</i>
non . . già,	<i>scarcely.</i>	non mica,	<i>not at all.</i>
non . . più,	<i>no more.</i>	neppure,	<i>not even.</i>
neánche,	<i>not even.</i>	non ancóra,	<i>not yet.</i>
non . . púnto,	<i>not at all.</i>		

## REMARKS.

1. **Non** precedes the verb in Italian (see p. 56): as,

Io non ámo,      *I do not love.*      |      Io non vóglío,      *I will not, &c.*

2. **Non** is strengthened by the addition of **míca**, **púnto**, which follow the verb, whilst **non** precedes the verb: as.

non ámo púnto il víno,      *I do not like wine at all.*  
non lo crédo míca,      *I do not believe it at all.*

3. After verbs conveying ideas of *negation*, or *hindrance*, **non** is used in the accessory sentence; as the *consequence* is just what is *denied* or *hindered* from taking place: thus,

Égli néga che la dóнна non sía mórtá.  
*He denies that the woman is (not) dead.*  
Proibirò che Cárlo non gli cáda víttima.  
*I shall forbid Charles to fall his victim.*

4. When a negative verb is used with **non**, this must be repeated in the accessory sentence: as,

Non négo ch' égli non m' ámi.  
*I do not deny that he does (not) love me.*

5. After a verb expressing *doubt*, **non** is required.

(a) If the accessory sentence is *not* in the negative, the second verb is put in the *subjunctive* with **non**: as,

Témo che non muóia,      *I fear he may die.*  
Dúbito che non vénga,      *I fear he might come.*

(b) If the accessory sentence is used *negatively*, then the second verb must be used in the *future* with **non**: as,

Témo che non morrà,      *I fear he will not die.*  
Dúbito che non verrà,      *I fear he might not come.*

6. **Nè . . . nè** require *non* before the verb which precedes them: as,

Égli non béve nè ácqua nè víno,      *He drinks neither water nor wine.*

7. If the *first part* of the sentence includes a comparative of augmentation or diminution, without a negative, then the **non** may be used in the second part of that sentence, the verb being changed from the *Subjunctive* to the *Indicative Mood*: as,

Égli è più ricco che noi pensássimo.  
Égli è più ricco che noi non pensavámo.  
*He is richer than we thought.*

## EXERCISE XLVIII.

1. Io non ho ancora veduto tuo zio; ma lo visiterò oggi, o domani. 2. Siete voi stato dal dottore? Non ancora. 3. Io non sono mai stato al teatro. 4. Io non gli presterò nemmeno un soldo; egli non me lo renderebbe mai. 5. Io non lo credo mica cattivo, egli ha buon cuore. 6. Gli crede Ella? Io non gli credo punto. 7. Egli mi ha molto offeso, io non lo riceverò a casa mia. 8. Il maestro punirà lo scolare, non già ch'egli non l'ami, ma soltanto per correggerlo. 9. Io dubito molto che le tue sorelle non arrivino. 10. Egli nou ha nè modestia nè bontà. 11. Quell' uomo è più povero che io non credeva. 12. Io non credeva ch'egli mi amasse tanto.

1. Have you been at the house of Mr. S.? Not yet, sir. 2. Do you believe him? No, sir. 3. Why do you not believe him? Because he is a bad boy. 4. Have you seen Mr. B.? I have never seen him. 5. Has she seen Mrs. B.? She has not yet seen her. 6. Is he a good boy? He has neither modesty nor goodness. 7. Do you like wine? I like neither wine nor beer. 8. Do you love him? I do not love him at all. 9. Do you doubt of his goodness? I do not doubt of his goodness for me. 10. Will you lend him some money? I shall not lend him anything, not even a penny. 11. Would you lend him money if he were an honest man? I never lend money. 12. Has he offended you? He has not offended me at all.

G. ADVERBS OF DOUBT (*Avvérbí di dúbbio*).

<i>fórze,</i>	<i>perhaps.</i>	<i>púre,</i>	<i>but yet.</i>
<i>probabilménte,</i>	<i>probably.</i>	<i>quási,</i>	<i>nearly.</i>
<i>possibilménte,</i>	<i>possibly.</i>	<i>se,</i>	<i>if.</i>
<i>quási quási,</i>	<i>very nearly.</i>		

## EXERCISE XLIX.

1. Sareste voi contento se aveste un regalo? Forse lo sarei e forse no. 2. Sarete voi invitati al pranzo del duca? Probabilmente. 3. Noi saremo probabilmente al teatro della regina domani sera. 4. Se io avessi danaro abbastanza comprerei quel giardino. 5. Ella avrebbe un regalo da sua madre, se fosse una studiosa giovinetta. 6. Elleno imparerebbero subito la lingua italiana, se la studiassero. 7. Io mi era quasi quasi ammalato per aver mangiati troppo maccheroni. 8. Carlo ha ora quasi diciassette anni. 9. Egli racconta molte storie, e pure io non gli credo. 10. S' Ella fosse mia amica, io La consiglierei di imparar bene le sue lezioni. 11. Possibilmente noi ci saremo tutti. 12. Se ciò fosse probabile, io crederei che fosse accaduto.

1. Were you invited to the ball of the earl? We were not invited to his ball; but perhaps we shall be invited at his dinner next



week. 2. Will you be, next Friday, at the Queen's Theatre? I shall probably be there. 3. You would learn much, if you studied much. 4. She is nearly eighteen years old. 5. She is very nearly as old as my sister Rosina. 6. He would be a good boy if he learnt his exercises well. 7. I should pay this bill of exchange if I had the money. 8. If we had money, we should buy all those houses. 9. She is nearly fifteen years old, yet she is not so tall as my cousin Emma. 10. If he had money he would eat macaroni at each one of his dinners. 11. This would certainly happen, if you were a bad boy. 12. Probably it is so.

### H. ADVERBIAL EXPRESSIONS (*Módi arverbiali*).

Adverbial expressions are formed with the help of some preposition.

The terminations *one* and *oni* added to a few substantives, *without* an augmentative signification, form also adverbial expressions.

Some adverbial expressions in the different classes of adverbs are given above; we subjoin some others most commonly used:

bocconi,	}	procumbent.	a buón mercáto,	cheaply.
boccóne,		astride.	da cápo,	from the begin-
cavalecióni,		hanging down.		ning.
ciondolóni,		creeping on all	a bócca,	by word of
carpóne,		four.	mouth.	
rotolóni,		rolling about.	per sólito,	usually.
tastóne,		groping about.	da sénno,	in earnest.
a mente,	}	by heart.	di témpo in témpo,	} now and then.
a memória,			di quándo in	
a vóce,		by word of	quándo,	
a víva vóce,		mouth.	fíno a quándo,	until when.
a bello stúdio,	}		a bell' ágio,	} at leisure.
a pósta,		purposely.	con cómodo,	
a bella pósta,			ad ónta,	in spite of.
a caso,		by chance.	oggidì,	} now-a-days.
per caso,		al giòrno d'óggi,		
ad álta vóce,	aloud.	all' incírcia,	about.	
a destra,	}	on the right.	a un diprésso,	} at the utmost.
a diritta,			al più al più,	
a sinistra,		on the left.	a soqquádro,	all at once.
a máncia,			ad un trátto,	
in brève,		cioè,	that is to say.	
álta rinfúsa,		vále a díre,		
a propósito,		da bánda,	aside.	
a gára,		in dispárte,		
appúnto,		da bánda a bánda,	through and	
fuór di misúra.		da pártte a pártte,	through.	
		extremely.		

da sólo a sólo,	} <i>tête-à-tête.</i>	in véce,	<i>instead.</i>
a quattr' occhi,		ógni qual vólta,	<i>whenever.</i>
di mála vóglia,	} <i>unwillingly.</i>	per esémpio,	<i>for instance.</i>
malvolentieri,		per ischérzo,	<i>in jest.</i>
di buon grádo,	} <i>willingly.</i>	per l' appúnto,	<i>exactly.</i>
di buona vóglia,		per lo più,	<i>mostly.</i>
di máno in máno,	<i>gradually.</i>	per témpo,	<i>early, in time.</i>
di nuóvo.	<i>again.</i>	il più présto	<i>as soon as pos-</i>
di nascósto,	} <i>by stealth.</i>	possíbile,	<i>sible.</i>
di soppiátto,		in módo che,	<i>in such a way.</i>
in avveníre,	<i>for the future.</i>	su dúe piédi,	<i>at once.</i>
in fine,	} <i>in short.</i>	tánto più,	<i>so much the</i>
in sómma,			<i>more.</i>
in un bátter d'óc-	} <i>in a moment.</i>	tra pécó,	} <i>soon.</i>
chio,		a moménti,	
in un áttimo,			

As we said in Remark 4, p. 113, some Adjectives are also used as Adverbs, thus ·

piáno,	<i>slowly, quietly.</i>	cantár fálsó,	<i>to sing badly.</i>
fórte,	<i>loudly, strongly.</i>	vedér chiáro,	<i>to see clear.</i>
cáro,	<i>dear (of value).</i>	tenérsi dirítto,	<i>to stand upright.</i>
buóno,	<i>agreeably (of taste).</i>	scríver dirítto,	<i>to write straight.</i>
trovár buóno,	<i>to find convenient.</i>	sentír buóno,	<i>to smell nicely.</i>
		sentír cattívo,	<i>to smell badly.</i>

## EXERCISE L.

1. Noi eravamo a cavalcioni l' uno sull' altro. 2. Egli era carpono per trovare una spilla. 3. Carlo mandò tuo fratello rotoloni con un pugno al petto. 4. Era così scuro, che noi camminavamo a tastone. 5. Io ho la mia lezione a memoria. 6. Ella imparò a mente tutto un salmo. 7. Voi reciterete la lezione a viva voce, appena l'avrete imparata. 8. Noi lo insultammo a bello studio. 9. A proposito, cameriere, a che ora si pranza quì? Per solito quì si mangia alle sei, signore. 10. Io ho da parlarvi a quattr' occhi. 11. Io vi ubbidirò di buon grado. 12. Io lo incontro ogni qual volta passo per quella strada.

1. He was sent sprawling with a blow on his chest. 2. It is so dark that we must grope about. 3. I have learnt it by heart. 4. We have all learnt it by heart. 5. Have you learnt this psalm? Yes, sir, I have learnt it by heart. 6. We meet you whenever we pass through this street. 7. He sought him on purpose. 8. I shall willingly obey my master. 9. By the by, give me a cup of coffee and some bread and butter. 10. He wants to speak to you privately. 11. I met him as soon as I went out. 12. We dine here generally at five o'clock.

XXV.—PREPOSITIONS (*Preposizioni*).

In Italian there are two kinds of Prepositions: 1. Simple and *real* Prepositions governing the noun *directly*: as, *io vengo da Londra, I come from London*; 2. Compound Prepositions, that is, Adverbs used as Prepositions, and usually followed by one of the *real* Prepositions.

The *real* Prepositions are:

di,	<i>of.</i>	da,	<i>of, from, by.</i>
a, ad,	<i>at, to.</i>	per,	<i>for, by, through</i>
con,	<i>with.</i>	in,	<i>in, within.</i>
fra, infra, } tra,	<i>amongst.</i>	su,	<i>on, upon.</i>

## A. PREPOSITIONS GOVERNING THE GENITIVE.

The following prepositions govern the Genitive case, and are followed by the preposition *di*.

fuóri,	<i>outside.</i>	senza,*	<i>without.</i>
al di là,	<i>beyond.</i>	verso,*	<i>towards.</i>
al di quà,	<i>this side.</i>	appiè,	<i>at the foot.</i>
a fórza,	<i>by much.</i>	a dispétto, } ad ónta, }	<i>notwithstanding.</i>
per mézzo,	<i>by means.</i>	a favóre,	<i>in favour.</i>
a cáusa, } a motivo, } a ragióne, }	<i>on account.</i>	cóntro,*	<i>against.</i>
in luógo, } in véce, }	<i>instead.</i>	diétro,*	<i>behind.</i>
davánti,	<i>before.</i>	dópo,*	<i>after.</i>
déntro,*	<i>inside.</i>	presso,*	<i>near.</i>
		sóttó,*	<i>underneath.</i>

## EXERCISE LI.

1. Fuori di questa città ci è un gran parco. 2. Il castello del conte L. è al di là del fiume Arno. 3. A forza di studiare s' impara. 4. Egli era davanti di questa tavola, un' ora fa. 5. Egli è stato nominato governatore per mezzo della mia raccomandazione al ministro. 6. Io fui punito a causa di lui. 7. Egli è stato punito in luogo di me. 8. La sorella fu lodata invece del fratello. 9. Il fiume scorre appiè del monte. 10. Ad onta de' miei buoni consigli, egli si è rovinato. 11. Chi è dietro di me? Nessuno. 12. Ho spedita una lettera di cambio a favore di Carlo.

1. My house is outside the town. 2. We were walking this morning on the other side of the river, when we met your two brothers. 3. By much study you will become learned. 4. He has been named captain by means of my recommendation. 5. We have all been punished on account of his little brother. 6. The river runs at the foot of the mountain. 7. He was near me this

\* Contro, dietro, dopo, presso, sotto, senza, verso, dentro, take *di* only before a Personal Pronoun.

morning when we had our Italian lesson. 8. In whose favour is this bill of exchange? It is in favour of Mr. B. 9. You will be punished instead of me. 10. She did not learn her lesson, in spite of the good advice of her aunt. 11. He will not have any dinner on account of his illness. 12. His castle is on this side of the river.

### B. PREPOSITIONS GOVERNING THE DATIVE.

The following prepositions are followed by the preposition a.

fino,	}	<i>till.</i>	oltre,	}	<i>besides.</i>
sino,			innanzi,		<i>before.</i>
dirimpetto,	}	<i>opposite.</i>	dinanzi,	}	
in cóntro,			davánti,		
in faccia,	}	<i>about.</i>	in rispétto,	}	<i>concerning.</i>
in óirca,			in riguárdo,		
circa,	}	<i>amidst.</i>	in quáto,	}	<i>behind.</i>
in mézzo,			diétro,		
a mézzo,	}	<i>inside.</i>	vicino,	}	<i>near.</i>
déntro,			addósso,		
attórno,	}	<i>around.</i>	confórme,	}	<i>conformably.</i>
accáto,			circa,		
alláto,	}	<i>near.</i>	cóntro,	}	<i>against.</i>
accósto,			dattórno,		
préssó,	}		davánti,	}	<i>before.</i>
appréssó,			éntro,		

### EXERCISE III.

1. Fino a che ora mi aspetterete? Fino alle sei. 2. Egli abita dirimpetto all'ospedale. 3. La sua casa era in faccia alla mia. 4. Egli obliò i suoi doveri in mezzo a tante delizie. 5. Cercate il mio cappello dentro a quell'altra camera. 6. Gli adulatori sono sempre attorno agli uomini ricchi. 7. Oltre a queste due case, egli ha grandi proprietà in provincia. 8. In rispetto a questo affare, bisognerà pensarci. 9. Egli si gittò addosso a me come un cane arrabbiato. 10. Aspettate sino a domani, e sarete pagato. 11. Io non aspetterò neanche sino a stasera, io ho bisogno di danaro immediatamente. 12. C'erano al teatro oltre a mille persone.

1. Up to what time did she wait for me? She waited for you till four o'clock. 2. We live opposite the new church. 3. He lived opposite our house last year. 4. He has always around him many flatterers. 5. Inside this box there is a new hat for you. 6. I thank you very much for your goodness to me. 7. Besides that hat, I have brought you a ring and a watch. 8. As for this affair, I have to speak about it with my friends. 9. The dog went at him like a mad one. 10. I shall wait for him until seven o'clock. 11. We shall not wait here, but at our house, until three o'clock. 12. There were there over three thousand people.

## C. PREPOSITIONS GOVERNING THE ACCUSATIVE.

The following prepositions govern the Accusative, as well as other cases, if included in the other lists of pp. 123-124.

avánti,	<i>before.</i>	lúngo,	<i>along.</i>
círca,	<i>about.</i>	préssò,	<i>near.</i>
cóntro, } cóntra, }	<i>against.</i>	secóndo,	<i>agreeably.</i>
dópo,	<i>after.</i>	sénza,	<i>without.</i>
giústa,	<i>according.</i>	sóptra,	<i>upon.</i>
innánzi,	<i>before.</i>	sóttò,	<i>underneath.</i>
sálvo, } eccétto, }	<i>except.</i>	vérso,	<i>towards.</i>
déntro,	<i>inside.</i>	duránte,	<i>during.</i>
mediánte,	<i>by means of.</i>	malgrádo,	<i>notwithstanding.</i>
		óltre,	<i>besides.</i>
		diétro,	<i>behind.</i>

All Adjectives and Participles used as Prepositions govern the Accusative case: *as, rasénte, along; sálvo, except; nonostante, notwithstanding; mediánte, by means; etc.*

## EXERCISE LIII.

1. Non si combatte contro il fato. 2. Egli è offeso contro me e contro mio padre senza ragione. 3. Mediante le mie raccomandazioni egli tu nominato a quel posto lucrativo. 4. Noi possediamo oltre mille lire di rendita. 5. Durante la tempesta il vascello s'affondò. 6. Tutti si affogarono, senza eccezione. 7. Egli uscì di casa malgrado i miei ordini. 8. Noi camminammo lungo il fiume tutta la mattina. 9. La sua casa è situata presso la mia. 10. Noi fummo tutti a pranzo dal signor Guglielmo, eccetto te e tua sorella. 11. Giusta la relazione del giornale, sembra che la guerra sia finita. 12. La sua carrozza passò rasente la nostra.

1. He fought against us in the war of eighteen hundred and seventy. 2. They (*masc.*) are without money now. 3. She was near me at dinner, and we talked of you. 4. He has many other houses besides this one. 5. Where were you just now? I was amongst the trees in your garden. 6. He talked during the concert; the music did not please him. 7. We went along the river for a long walk. 8. Notwithstanding his illness, he is still very strong. 9. They (*masc.*) will dine without us, because we shall not be there in time. 10. Agreeably to his letter, I shall lend him a few pounds. 11. She has been for a walk, in spite of the orders of her mother. 12. We shall not go for a walk against your orders.

## D. PREPOSITIONS GOVERNING THE ABLATIVE.

Very few prepositions govern the Ablative and are followed by *da*. These are *fino da, since; lúngi, discósto da, far from.*

**Infuóri**, *except*, is always preceded by the word it governs : thus,

**Da me infuóri** non c' éra nessuno.

*Except me, there was nobody.*

NOTE.—The preposition is sometimes omitted in Italian in the following cases :—

(a) When words are joined together : as, caposcuóla, capocáccia, capopárte, instead of cápo DÉLLA scuóla, *head or founder of the school* (of arts); cápo DÉLLA cáccia, *head of the hunt*; cápo DÉLLA pártte, *leader of the party*. In the plural, only the first word is modified : capiscuóla, capicáccia, capipárte.

(b) In cása Strózzi, *in the house of Strozzi*; véngo da cása Palmiéri, *I come from the house of Palmieri*, &c.

(c) The preposition **A** is omitted in the dative of the personal pronouns *mí, tí, ci, vi, le, gli, loro, si* (see p. 78).

(d) The preposition **IN** is often omitted in ablatives referring to time : as, lo vídi la státe scórsa, *I saw him last summer*; égli arrivò a Péscia dal Signór Fióri il cínque agósto, *he arrived at Pescia at Mr. Fiori's, August 5th* : instead of *nélla státe, nel quíno giòrno*, &c.

## XXVI.—CONJUNCTIONS (*Congiunzioni*).

Conjunctions are of two kinds in Italian, i. e., *copulative* when used to *join* words or sentences, and *disjunctive* when employed to *separate* them.

### A. COPULATIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

†perchè,	so that, because.	†acciocchè,	} in order that.
poichè,	} since	†finchè,	
giacchè,		perocchè,	} because.
posciachè,		perciocchè,	
†se,	if.	†prima che,	sooner.
†che,	that.	†quand' anche,	though.
e,	and.	†se anche,	even if.
o . . . e,	as well as.	di maniera che,	} so that.
cóme,	as.	di módo che,	
finchè,	till.	dúnque,	so, therefore.
appéna,	} scarcely.	non . . . se non,	except.
a péna,		però,	though.
†suppostochè,	provided.	quíndi,	therefore.
anche,	also.	dacchè,	because, since.
cosicchè,	so that.	méntr che,	whilst.
†conciossiachè,	} in case that.	†fíno a tánto che,	until.
†avvegnachè,		tuttavía,	} nevertheless.
†ánzi che,	} before.	tútta vólta,	
†avánti che,		secóndo che,	according as.
ónde,	so that.	cioè,	that is, i. e.
micchè,	so that.		

## B. DISJUNCTIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

o,	or.	neppure,	} not even.
o . . . o,	either . . . or.	nemméno,	
se,	whether.	senza che,	} without that.
ovvéro,	} or.	nulladiméno,	} nevertheless.
ossia,		nullaméno,	
oppúre,	} although.	niénte di méno,	} but.
† benchè,		ma,	
† abbenchè,		eziandío,	} but also.
† sebbéne,		ma áncó,	
† ancorchè,	} provided.	† nonostánte che,	} notwithstanding.
† quantúnque,		† per quánto che,	} however.
† purchè,	provided.	perciò,	} nevertheless.
nè . . . nè,	neither . . . nor.	altresi,	} besides.
ánzi púre,	even.	per áltro,	} however.

All those marked with † require the following verb in the subjunctive.

Púre, *yet*, is used to mean also *however*, *even*; pur troppo, means *only too*: as,

égli è pur troppo véro,      *it is only too true.*

Perchè means *why* and *because*, and it is not to be mistaken for *per . . . che*, which means *however*.

## EXERCISE LIV.

*Copulative Conjunctions.*

## A.

1. Egli è un cittadino ricco e possente. 2. Giacchè Ella è così buona, La prego prestarmi il suo libro. 3. Io Le presterò volentieri e i miei libri e quanto altro Ella desidera. 4. Tuo padre non solo mi prestò un libro, ma prestommi anche delle pitture perchè le copiassi. 5. Bisogna ch'egli studii se desidera essere premiata. 6. Noi eravamo appena usciti di casa che lo incontrammo con le sue sorelle. 7. Io non lo visiterei, quand' anche fossi invitato a casa sua. 8. Ragazzi, non siate cattivi, se non volete essere puniti. 9. Se anche egli fosse tanto ricco quanto Cresò, io non lo crederei uomo onesto. 10. Poichè Ella è qui, giuochiamo una partita alle carte. 11. Io sono però sicuro di perdere. 12. Egli mi salutò appena io entrai nella sua camera.

1. He was in my room whilst we were speaking of you. 2. Provided you are a good boy, you will be praised. 3. We had scarcely begun our dinner, when he came in with all his friends (*masc.*). 4. I shall be with you as soon as I shall have finished this letter. 5. He is a studious boy as well as an obedient one. 6. He was idle,

therefore he was punished by his father. 7. She is now eighteen years old, and she is also the tallest of all my sisters. 8. We met him as we were coming out of the concert. 9. Sooner than be idle, I would study and learn something. 10. Whilst you are here, I shall speak to you about that affair. 11. He ran away in order that his master might not punish him. 12. He is a tall and a strong man.

*Disjunctive Conjunctions.*

**B.**

1. Desidera della carne o del pesce? Datemi o carne o pesce, è lo stesso per me. 2. Sono questi soldati inglesi, o francesi? Essi non sono nè inglesi nè francesi, ma sono italiani. 3. Desiderano quei signori della birra oppure del vino? Quei signori desiderano e birra e vino. 4. Purchè impariate le vostre lezioni, avrete oggi una bella arancia ciascuno. 5. Non lo crederei neppure se lo vedessi con gli occhi miei. 6. Io lo consigliai di finirla, nondimeno egli continuò a lamentarsi. 7. Per quanto ch'egli ami me, egli non mi amerà mai quanto io lo amo. 8. Egli era arrabbiatissimo, senza che egli avrebbe seguito il mio consiglio. 9. Carlo è molto povero, egli non ha nemmeno uno scellino. 10. O mi ubbidite, o vi scaccerò di casa mia. 11. Giovanni era non solo stupido, ma anche ostinato. 12. Sebbene tuo zio sia vecchissimo, egli ha ottima salute.

1. Although she is very young, she is a very good and studious girl. 2. Do you want this book or that? Give me either this one or that one. 3. Although I advised him well, he would not follow my advice. 4. Provided you are diligent you will have a present. 5. This story is only too true, although so difficult to believe. 6. Whether true or not, it is a nice story. 7. Do you want tea or coffee? I want neither tea nor coffee, but I want some wine. 8. Why have you been punished? Because I have not learnt my French lesson. 9. However old he may be, he is not yet a hundred years old. 10. I want not only books, but also pen and ink. 11. I am not very well, but nevertheless I shall be at your ball next week. 12. He would have a prize if he were studious, but he is very idle.

**XXVII.—INTERJECTIONS (*Interiezioni*).**

ah!	ah!	oibò!	fie.
áhi!	alas!	possibile!	good gracious!
eh!	} hallo!	avánti!	forward!
éhi!		evvíva!	} hurrah!
ohimè!	woe is me!	víva!	
olà!	oh!	zitto!	hush!
orsù!	courage!	ánimo!	courage!



guái!	woe!	béne!	well!
per Bácco!	} good heavens!	benóne!	very well!
córpo di Bácco!		aiúto!	help!
oh!	} oh!	brávo!	well done!
ohè!		all' értà!	up!
deh!	alas!	affè!	indeed!
fuóri!	begone!	su su!	come, come!
vía!	away!	chi va là!	who goes there!

## REMARKS.

1. Brávo and zitto agree, like adjectives, in gender and number with the person spoken to: as,

Brávo! Cárlo, hái cantáto benissimo,  
*Well done, Charles, thou hast sung very well.*  
 Bráva! signóra Émma, Élla bálla a maravíglia,  
*Well done! Madam Emma, you dance beautifully.*  
 Zítti! ragázzì, non fáte rumóre,  
*Hush! children, do not make any noise.*  
 Signoríne, per carità státevi zítte!  
*Young ladies, for heaven's sake, keep quiet.*

2. In interjective sentences the adjective must precede the *personal pronoun*, which is put in the accusative: thus,

Áhi! mísera te!                      Oh! póveri lóro!  
*Oh! wretch that thou art!*              *Alas! poor people!*

3. When an adjective is with a *name*, this is preceded by *di*; the adjective coming first: as,

Oh, quéllo zótico di Cárlo!              Oh, quélla sciócca di María!  
*Oh, that boor Charles!*              *Oh, that foolish Mary!*

4. When an appellative noun is used with the name of a person, the former is preceded by *di* with the article: as,

Quel cáro vécchio del signór Raffaélle!  
*That dear old man, Mr. Raphaël!*  
 Quélla buóna dónna délla signóra B.!  
*That good woman, Mrs. B.!*

5. Guái! woe! takes a dative: as,

Guái a te, se non mi ubbidísci!  
*Woe to thee, if thou dost not obey me!*  
 Guái ai codárdi!  
*Woe to the cowards!*

6. After interjections expressing *grief*, the pronoun *may* also be put in the dative, the adjective preceding it: as,

Oh! póvero a me, quánto sóno infelíce!  
*Oh! poor me, how unhappy I am!*

## EXERCISE LV.

1. Oh, che bella maschera, ma non ha cervello! 2. Oh, che belle pitture! 3. Ehi, fermati, ti ho da parlare. 4. Ehi, ehi, dove corri? Corro dal medico. 5. Zitto, non far rumore, che il bambino non si svegli. 6. È egli possibile! Così è pur troppo! 7. Avanti, avanti, ho bisogno di voi. 8. Viva l'Italia, viva la libertà! 9. Animo dunque, soldati, e battete il nemico! 10. Guai a quel soldato che volgerà le spalle al nemico. 11. Corpo di Bacco! questa sì che è bella! 12. All'erta, sentinella! All'erta sto!

1. Oh, poor me, I am ruined! 2. Oh, what a beautiful picture! 3. Hallo, stop, I have to speak to you. 4. Is this possible? Yet, it is so. 5. England for ever! 6. Hurrah for the Queen! 7. Woe to those who shall run away! 8. Courage, soldiers, let us beat our enemies! 9. Make haste, Charles, I have need of you. 10. Woe to you, if you are a bad boy! 11. Hush, baby, hush! 12. Oh, what a tall man!

XXVIII.—IRREGULAR VERBS (*Vérbi Irregolári*).

Irregular Verbs may be divided into three classes. They follow in most, though not in all, cases the Perfects and Supines of the Latin verbs from which they are derived.

The FIRST CLASS includes all those verbs which have their irregularities in common with other verbs, so that they can be classed together in different groups, according to their irregularities. In each group we give only the irregularities of one Verb, the other Verbs of the same group being understood to be conjugated in the same way.

The SECOND CLASS includes all those Verbs, the irregularities of which cannot be subjected to any rule. This Class also includes Verbs which have only the Past Participle irregular.

The THIRD CLASS contains all the Defective Verbs.

## THE FIRST CLASS.

The following Verbs, almost all belonging to the Second Conjugation, have the first and third persons of the Singular, and the third person of the Plural irregular in the Past Definite and also an irregular Past Participle.

## VERBS IRREGULAR IN THE PAST DEFINITE AND PAST PARTICIPLE.

1. *Past Def.* in *si.* *Past Part.* in *ss.***Mettere**, *to put* \* (*Lat.* mitto, misi, missum).

## PAST DEFINITE.

io <b>misi.</b>	noi mettémmo.
tu mettésti.	voi mettéste.
egli <b>mise.</b>	egline <b>miserò.</b>

## PAST PARTICIPLE.

Masc.	Fem.
<b>méss.</b>	<b>méssa.</b>
<b>méssi.</b>	<b>méss.</b>

So also the compounds :

commettere,	<i>to commit.</i>	rimettere,	<i>to remit.</i>
omettere,	<i>to omit.</i>	dimettere,	<i>to dismiss.</i>
ammettere,	<i>to admit.</i>	scommettere,	<i>to bet.</i>
permettere,	<i>to permit.</i>	sottomettere,	} <i>to submit.</i>
promettere,	<i>to promise.</i>	sommettere,	
compromettere,	<i>to compromise.</i>		

## EXERCISE LVI.

1. Ella mise il tuo cappello invece del suo nella scatola. 2. Dove hai tu messi i miei libri? Io li ho messi nella libreria. 3. Eglino misero tutti i loro abiti nelle loro camere. 4. Il giudice ammise l'innocenza del prigioniero e lo liberò. 5. Egli ha commesso de' gravi errori. 6. Quell' uomo ha commessi molti delitti. 7. Mio padre non mi permise di visitarlo. 8. Io gli promisi un bel regalo, se egli mi avesse aiutato. 9. Ella si è compromessa seriamente col governo per i suoi errori politici. 10. Io Le ho sottomesse tutte le mie ragioni. 11. La porta della mia camera è chiusa. 12. Che cosa ha Ella scommesso? Io non ho scommesso nulla.

1. He promised me that he would pay this bill of exchange next week. 2. He compromised himself with his government. 3. Did you bet anything? I never bet. 4. I put my hat on that chair, when I came in. 5. Where has she put my books? She has put your books on the table. 6. Has he submitted to you his reasons? Not yet. 7. Has the judge admitted his innocence? Yes, and he has set him at liberty. 8. Charles has committed a very serious mistake, and he will be punished for it. 9. We shall submit our reasons to the judge, and he will set us at liberty. 10. Why did you compromise yourselves? We have not compromised ourselves. 11. Would you allow me to go out? Not before you have had your lesson. 12. His mother did not permit him to visit us.

\* All the Tenses are omitted in which the Verb follows the Regular Conjugation.

2. *Past Def.* in *si.* *Past Part.* in *to.*Vólgere, *to turn* (*Lat.* *volvo, volvi, volutum*).

PAST DEFINITE.		PAST PARTICIPLE.	
		Masc.	Fem.
io vól <i>si</i> .	nói volgém <i>mo</i> .	vól <i>to</i> .	vól <i>ta</i> .
tu volgést <i>i</i> .	vói volgést <i>e</i> .	vól <i>ti</i> .	vól <i>te</i> .
égli vól <i>se</i> .	églino vól <i>sero</i> .		

So also :

accórgersi,	<i>to perceive.</i>	piángere,	<i>to weep.</i>
aggiúngere,	<i>to adjoin.</i>	píngere,	} <i>to paint.</i>
assórgere,	<i>to rise.</i>	dipíngere,	
assúmere,†	<i>to assume.</i>	porgere,	<i>to offer.</i>
attíngere,	<i>to attain.</i>	presúmere,†	<i>to presume.</i>
cíngere,* }	<i>to gird.</i>	púngere,	<i>to prick.</i>
cígnere,		raggiúngere,	<i>to rejoin.</i>
compiángere,	<i>to pity.</i>	respíngere,	<i>to push back.</i>
compúngere,	<i>to afflict.</i>	riassúmere,†	<i>to reassume.</i>
congiúngere,	<i>to join.</i>	rifrángere,	<i>to refract.</i>
consúmere,†	<i>to consume.</i>	risórgere,	<i>to rise again.</i>
contórcere,	<i>to contort.</i>	ritíngere,	<i>to dye again.</i>
convíncere,	<i>to convince.</i>	ritórcere,	<i>to turn again.</i>
desúmere,†	<i>to assume.</i>	scíngere,	<i>to untie.</i>
disgiúngere,	<i>to disjoin.</i>	sconvólgere,	<i>to turn round.</i>
distingúere,	<i>to distinguish.</i>	scórgere,	<i>to perceive.</i>
distórcere,	<i>to distort.</i>	smúngere,	<i>to dry up.</i>
divèllere,	<i>to uproot.</i>	soggiúngere,	<i>to add.</i>
divólgere,	} <i>to unfold.</i>	sommérgere,	<i>to submerge.</i>
disvólgere,		sórgere,	<i>to rise.</i>
emérgere,	<i>to emerge.</i>	sospíngere,	<i>to push forward.</i>
estíngere,	<i>to extinguish.</i>	spíngere,	<i>to push.</i>
estóllere,	<i>to extol.</i>	stíngere,* }	<i>to discolour.</i>
fíngere,	<i>to feign.</i>	stígnere,	
frángere,* }	<i>to break.</i>	stórcere,	<i>to distort.</i>
frágnere,		svéllere,	<i>to root up.</i>
giúngere,* }	<i>to arrive.</i>	svólgere,	<i>to untwist.</i>
giúgnere,		tíngere,* }	<i>to colour.</i>
immérgere,	<i>to immerse.</i>	tígnere,	
indúlgerè,	<i>to indulge.</i>	tórcere,	<i>to twist.</i>
infrángere,	<i>to break.</i>	travólgere,	} <i>to turn over.</i>
infríngere,	<i>to infringe.</i>	stravólgere,	
insórgere,	<i>to revolt.</i>	úngere,	<i>to anoint.</i>
intíngere,	<i>to dip.</i>	víncere,	<i>to win.</i>
invólgere,	<i>to complicate.</i>	vólgere,	<i>to turn.</i>
múngere,	<i>to milk.</i>		

Presúmere has also the Past Definite in *presuméi*.

\* The Tenses of these Verbs are formed from this Infinitive only.

† The *m* is changed into *n* in the Irregular terminations.

EXERCISE LVII.

1. Io gli risposi che sarei stato felicissimo di riceverlo a casa mia.  
 2. Il generale cinse la spada e montò a cavallo. 3. Mia sorella giunse da Milano ieri sera. 4. Perchè ha tuo fratello pianto? Egli ha pianto perchè il maestro lo ha biasimato. 5. Noi lo abbiamo raggiunto prima che egli fosse entrato al teatro. 6. Dopo aver tanto parlato, egli soggiunse anche queste parole. 7. Egli fu compianto da tutti nella sua disgrazia. 8. Tuo fratello finge di non capire. 9. Chi ha dipinto questo bel quadro? Il nostro amico P. lo ha dipinto pochi anni fa. 10. Le mie mani sono unte d'olio. 11. Egli si è molto distinto agli esami. 12. Egli ha risoluto di migliorarsi.

1. We replied to him that we had no money. 2. Where did you rejoin him? We rejoined him near his house. 3. What did he say next (*soggiungere*)? He next said that he was right. 4. With what have they (*fem.*) anointed their hands? They (*fem.*) have anointed their hands with oil. 5. He feigns to be asleep. 6. He greatly distinguished himself at his last examination. 7. The king distinguished that captain amongst all others. 8. He has resolved to learn the French language as soon as possible. 9. He painted that picture when he was twenty-seven years old. 10. By whom has this beautiful picture been painted? By my friend P. 11. All my friends pitied me in my misfortune. 12. The baby has cried all night.

3. *Past Def.* in ssi. *Past Part.* in sso.

Deprimere, to depress (*Lat.* deprimō, depressi, depressum).

PAST DEFINITE.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

		Masc.	Fem.
io depresso.	noi deprimémmo.	depresso.	depressa.
tu depressisti.	vói depresséste.	depressi.	depressa.
egli depressé.	églino depressé- sero.		

So also:

concedere,	to concede	imprimere,*	to impress.
succedere,	to succeed.	opprimere,*	to oppress.
affiggere,	to affix.	sconnettere,	to disjoin.
crocifiggere,	to crucify.	sopprimere,*	to suppress.
deprimere,*	to depress.	percuotere,	to beat.
esprimere,*	to express.	scuotere,	to shake.
comprimere,*	to compress.	incutere,	to inspire.

\* The *i* is changed into *e* in the Irregular terminations.

discútère,	<i>to discuss.</i>	rimuóvere,	<i>to remove.</i>
riscuótere,	<i>to collect money.</i>	smuóvere,	<i>to move.</i>
annéttere,	<i>to annex.</i>	néttere,	<i>to join.</i>
connéttere,	<i>to connect.</i>	promuóvere,	<i>to promote.</i>
rifléttere,	<i>to refract.</i>	reprímere,*	<i>to repress.</i>
muóvere,	<i>to move.</i>	fléttere,	<i>to bend.</i>
commuóvere,	<i>to touch.</i>	preffiggere,	<i>to prefix.</i>

Concédere and succédere have also the regular forms.  
 Verbs ending in uótere and uóvere drop the u in their Past Definite and Past Participle : as, io percóssi, móssso, etc.  
 Rifléttere is regular when meaning *to reflect*.

## EXERCISE LVIII.

1. Il re ha concesso al generale la grazia del soldato condannato a morte. 2. Le leggi in Roma erano affisse al Campidoglio. 3. Cristo fu crocifisso pe' nostri peccati. 4. Chi ha crocifisso Nostro Signore? I Giudei Lo crocifissero. 5. Come esprimere la mia gioia a tal nuova? 6. I popoli oppressi un dì o l'altro si vendicano de' loro oppressori. 7. Egli fu percosso per di dietro da un assassino. 8. Io non ho ancora riscosso la rendita di queste case. 9. La sua immagine è riflessa nello specchio. 10. Io non ho ancora riflettuto abbastanza alla tua offerta. 11. Il suo eloquente discorso ci ha tutti commossi. 12. Io fui promosso capitano sul campo di battaglia pel mio valore.

1. That captain was promoted on the battlefield. 2. The king granted a free pardon to the prisoner. 3. He was struck by a man in the street. 4. That law was affixed to the Capitol. 5. That people was oppressed by a bad king. 6. He was crucified for our sins. 7. He expressed his joy with a loud voice. 8. Have they (*masc.*) collected the rent of your house and of the house of your cousin (*masc.*)? Not yet, sir. 9. I was moved by his eloquent speech. 10. Have you reflected sufficiently about it? Yes, sir, and I shall follow your advice. 11. What is reflected by that looking-glass? My own image. 12. He has struck my little brother with his stick.

## 4. Past Def. in ssi. Past Part. in tto.

Scrivere, *to write* (*Lat. scribo, scripsi, scriptum*).

## PAST DEFINITE.

## PAST PARTICIPLE.

		Masc.	Fem.
io scríssi.	nói scrivémmo.	scritto.	scritta.
tu scrivésti.	vói scrivéste.	scritti.	scritte.
egli scrísse.	églino scríssero.		

So also :

cuocere,†	to cook.	érgere,	to erect.
ricuocere,†	to cook again.	erigere,	to erect.
costruire,	to construct.	friggere,	to fry.
scrivere,	to write.	leggere,	to read.
affliggere,	to afflict.	negligere,†	to neglect.
infliggere,	to inflict.	reggere,	to govern.
instruire,	to instruct	struggere,	to dissolve.
correggere,	to correct.	distruggere,	to destroy.
dirigere,*	to direct.	trafiggere,	to transfix.
tradurre,	to translate.	struggersi,	to long.
condurre,	to conduct.	indurre,	to induce.
condursi,	to behave.	addurre,	to bring.
produrre,	to produce.	ridurre,	to reduce.
figgere,	to fix.	sedurre,	to seduce.
configgere,	to nail down.	dedurre,	to deduct.
eliggere,	to elect.	protéggere,	to protect.

Érgere has the Past Definite and Past Participle from *eréggere*.

Addurre, indurre, tradurre, sedurre, dedurre, condurre, ridurre, and produrre form their Regular Tenses from their *old* infinitives, in *cere*, *addúcere*, *indúcere*, *sedúcere*, *tradúcere*, *condúcere*, etc., of which they are a contraction, thus, io addúco, égli sedúce, che églino condúcano, etc.

The Past Participle of verbs ending in *cere* or *urre* ends in *otto*, as *tradótto*, *cótto*, *ridótto*, *indótto*.

#### EXERCISE LIX.

1. Il maestro ha corretti i nostri esercizi. 2. Egli è ridotto alla miseria. 3. Io addussi tutte le mie ragioni, ed egli affermò che io aveva torto. 4. Noi fummo protetti da lui. 5. Chi ti protesse? Mio cugino. 6. La città intera fu distrutta dai nemici. 7. Avete voi negletto i vostri doveri? Nossignore, noi non li negligiamo mai. 8. Tuo cugino si è condotto molto male in questo affare. 9. Molte statue furono erette al primo re d'Italia in diverse città della penisola. 10. Gli eressero una statua perchè fu grande oratore. 11. Chi Le ha scritto? Il libraio mi ha scritto e mi ha mandato il suo conto. 12. È fritto il pesce? Il pesce non è ancora fritto, signore; bisognerà aspettare ancora un poco.

1. Who has corrected this exercise? The master has corrected it. 2. To what has he been reduced by his laziness! 3. I brought before him many good reasons, and he affirmed that I was wrong. 4. We were protected by the general. 5. Who protected you? My

\* The *i* is changed into *e* in the Irregular terminations.

† The *u* is omitted in the Irregular terminations.

brother protected me. 6. What did the enemies destroy? They destroyed the whole town. 7. Why do you neglect your lessons? I have never neglected them. 8. How did he behave himself? He behaved himself very well. 9. Why did they erect a statue to him? Because he had been a great man. 10. Have they erected a statue to the king? They have erected him many statues. 11. Who has written this letter? That letter has been written by my cousin (*fem.*). 12. I wrote my lesson last evening.

### 5. *Past Def.* in *bbi.* *Past Part.* in *iuto.*

**Crescere, to grow** (*Lat. crescere*).

PAST DEFINITE.		PAST PARTICIPLE.	
		Masc.	Fem.
io crebbi.	noi crescémmo.	cresciúto.	cresciúta.
tu crescesti.	vói crescéste.	cresciúti.	cresciúte.
egli crebbe.	églino crebbero.		

So also :

conoscere,	to know ( <i>physical knowledge</i> ).	rincrescere	to regret.
decreocere,	to decrease.	increrecere,	to regret.
riconoscere,	to recognise.	accrescere,	to augment, to increase.
sconoscere,	to mistake.		

### EXERCISE LX.

1. Conosce Ella il signor B.? Sissignore, io l'ho conosciuto molti anni fa a casa di tua zia. 2. Io conobbi tuo fratello per mezzo della signora B. 3. Ella è cresciuta molto dall'anno scorso. 4. Ella crebbe poco l'anno passato. 5. Quel ragazzo non cresce molto presto. 6. Io non lo riconobbi, perchè egli era mutato moltissimo. 7. Mi rincresce molto non aver danari per aiutarlo. 8. Gli rincrebbe di ritornare alla scuola. 9. Io l'ho riconosciuto appena egli entrò nella camera. 10. L'avaro accrebbe le sue ricchezze con l'usura. 11. La sua paga fu accresciuta di cento lire all'anno. 12. A tutti quanti rincrebbe tale nuova.

1. I do not know Mr. B., but my brother has known him a long time. 2. I knew that gentleman in Paris, when I was there with my father. 3. We all knew him when he lived in the house opposite. 4. They (*masc.*) recognised me as soon as I entered the room. 5. I did not recognise your sister, because she had grown very much. 6. She recognised me at once, however, and asked me for news of my family. 7. I regret very much not to have anything, or I should help you willingly. 8. She regretted to go to school again. 9. You have grown very little since last year. 10. My sister has not grown at all the last month. 11. My father has increased his money, and is very happy. 12. He is a miser, he increases his wealth through usury.



6. *Past Def. in ulsi. Past Part. in ulso.*

**Espèllere, to expel** (*Lat. expello, expuli, expulsum*)

PAST DEFINITE.		PAST PARTICIPLE.	
		Masc.	Fem.
io espúlsi.	nói espellémmo.	espúlso.	espúlsa.
tu espellésti.	vói espelléste.	espúlsi.	espúlse.
égli espúlse.	églino espúlsero.		

So also :

impèllere,	to excite.	ripèllere,	to repel.
repèllere,	to repel.	espèllere,	to expel.

EXERCISE LXI.

1. Egli fu espulso perchè era un allievo disobbediente ed ozioso. 2. Io lo espulsi di casa mia, perchè era uno stupido servitore. 3. La tempesta di ieri sera ha divelto molti alberi nel nostro giardino. 4. Egli fu irresistibilmente impulso a partire pel campo di battaglia e difendere il suo paese. 5. I nostri soldati repulsero il nemico e lo sconfissero completamente. 6. La sua petizione fu ripulsa dal re. 7. Voi sarete tutti espulsi da questa scuola se non sarete buoni ragazzi. 8. Carlo fu espulso senza colpa sua: la colpa era tutta di Enrico. 9. Amor di patria lo impulse a tale azione valorosa. 10. Un ignobile motivo li impelleva, quando commisero tale delitto. 11. Il generale ripulse con sdegno la proposta di arrendersi al nemico. 12. Io mi lascerò impellere soltanto da nobili motivi.

1. He was expelled from school this morning. 2. You will also be expelled, if you are disobedient. 3. They (*masc.*) will not expel us from our house. 4. Who expelled thy brother from school? The master expelled him. 5. Has he been expelled from his school? No, sir, he has not been expelled. 6. Will they (*masc.*) be expelled? They (*masc.*) will be expelled if they (*masc.*) are lazy and disobedient. 7. By whom will they (*masc.*) be expelled? By their master. 8. Who repulsed the enemies? Our soldiers repulsed the enemies and beat them. 9. What incited him to so noble a deed? Love of his country. 10. My petition has been repulsed by the king. 11. The wind has uprooted several trees in their garden. 12. That tree has been uprooted last night.

7. *Past Def. in ppi. Past Part. in tto.*

**Rómpere, to break** (*Lat. rumpo, rupi, ruptum*).

PAST DEFINITE.		PAST PARTICIPLE.	
		Masc.	Fem.
io rúppi.	nói rompémmo.	róttö.	róttä.
tu rompésti.	vói rompéste.	rótti.	rótte.
égli rúppe.	églino rúppero.		

So also the compounds :

corrómpere,	to corrupt.		prorómpere,	to burst forth.
dirómpere,	to rush out.			

### EXERCISE LXII.

1. La serva ha rotto un bicchiere. 2. Che cosa ha Ella rotto? Io non ho rotto nulla. 3. Io ruppi il mio bastone contro un sasso. 4. Dopo cena, eglino ruppero tutti i bicchieri e tutti i piatti, essendosi ubbriacati. 5. Questo vetro è rotto, bisognerà metterne uno nuovo. 6. Egli si corrippe in compagnia di quel cattivaccio. 7. Se foste suo amico, egli vi corromperebbe. 8. Egli si è rotta la gamba nello scendere le scale. 9. Da chi fu rotta questa bottiglia? Essa fu rotta da Carlo. 10. Egli proruppe in insulti contro di me. 11. Piove alla dirotta! 12. Chi rompe, paga.

1. He broke a glass and two cups. 2. She has broken that looking-glass last evening. 3. Who breaks has to pay. 4. I have never broken anything. 5. They (*masc.*) broke all the glasses after dinner, they were drunk. 6. Why did you break this plate? I did not break it, Charles has broken it. 7. Is my stick broken? Yes, sir, it has been broken by your brother. 8. He was drunk and burst forth in insults against me and against everybody. 9. Why do you pay this money to me? Because I have broken your umbrella. 10. Who broke the glass in that window? I broke it, and I shall pay for a new one. 11. How did you break it? With a stone. 12. Why did that man break all the glasses in the windows of that house? He broke them without any reason, but only because he was drunk.

8. *Past Def.* in *si*. *Past Part.* in *sto*.

Chiédere, *to ask* (*Lat.* quaero, quaesivi, quaesitum).

PAST DEFINITE.		PAST PARTICIPLE.	
		Masc.	Fem.
io chiési.	nói chiedémmo.	chiéstó.	chiéstá.
tu chiedésti.	vói chiedéste.	chiéstí.	chiésté.
égli chiése.	églino chiéséro.		

So also :

richiédere,	to ask again.		rispóndere,	to reply.
nascóndere,	to hide.		corrispóndere,	to correspond.

### EXERCISE LXIII.

1. Io chiesi al maestro della carta per scriverci i miei esercizi. 2. Ella Le chiese il suo parere. 3. Che cosa Le hanno chiesto i suoi amici? Eglino mi chiesero di accompagnarli al teatro. 4. Io non Le chiederei mai ciò che Ella non ha. 5. Io ho richiesto Carlo di

portarmi questa lettera alla posta. 6. Che cosa le hanno richiesto quei forestieri? Essi mi chiesero di indirizzarli al migliore albergo della città. 7. Io domandai ad Enrico di darmi un libro da leggere, ed egli mi rispose che non ne aveva. 8. Io non ho ancora risposto alla sua lettera, e spero che mi scuserà del ritardo. 9. Io ho corrisposto con un negoziante a Venezia per la compra di alcuni specchi. 10. Che cosa Le ha egli risposto? Egli mi ha risposto che non ne aveva da vendere. 11. Perchè si nascondono que' ragazzi? Essi si nascondono per non essere puniti. 12. Tuo fratello si è nascosto dietro la porta.

1. What did you ask that man? I asked him to show me the way (*indirizzarmi*) to the house of Mr. B. 2. Have you answered the letter of your cousin (*fem.*)? I have not yet answered it, but I shall answer it to-morrow. 3. I have written to the merchant in Paris in order to buy some looking-glasses, and he has not yet answered me. 4. I did correspond with him last month; but now I no longer answer his letters. 5. Have you read this letter? Yes, and I have also answered it. 6. Who is hidden behind the door? Nobody is hidden there. 7. Where is your brother hidden? He is hidden under the table. 8. Why does he hide himself? Because he is afraid of being punished. 9. With whom are you corresponding? I am corresponding with one of my friends (*masc.*) in America. 10. What did they (*masc.*) ask you? They asked me to accompany them to the house of their father. 11. Who asked you for a book? The new pupil (*masc.*) asked me for a book. 12. I shall not reply to this letter.

## THE SECOND CLASS.

## A. VERBS IRREGULAR IN THE PAST PARTICIPLE ONLY.

INFINITIVE.		PAST PARTICIPLE.
Assistere,	<i>to assist,</i>	assistito.
persistere,	<i>to persist,</i>	persistito.
insistere,	<i>to insist,</i>	insistito.
resistere,	<i>to resist,</i>	resistito.
assolvere,*	<i>to absolve,</i>	assolto.
risolvere,	<i>to resolve,</i>	risolto.
féndere,*	<i>to split,</i>	féssso.
sussistere,	<i>to subsist,</i>	sussistito.
esistere,	<i>to exist,</i>	esistito.
esaurire,*	<i>to exhaust,</i>	esáuato.
aprire,	<i>to open,</i>	aperto.
concepire,*	<i>to conceive,</i>	concétto.
coprire,	<i>to cover,</i>	copérto.
contéssere,	<i>to weave,</i>	contéstto.

\* These Verbs have also a *regular* Past Participle. *Assoluto* means *absolute*, and *assolto*, *absolved*.

<i>cómpiere,*</i>	<i>to finish,</i>	<i>compíto.</i>
<i>desístere,</i>	<i>to desist,</i>	<i>desistíto.</i>
<i>infléttere,</i>	<i>to bend,</i>	<i>infléssò.</i>
<i>esígere,</i>	<i>to exact,</i>	<i>esátto.</i>
<i>scíndere,</i>	<i>to separate,</i>	<i>scíssò.</i>
<i>apparíre,</i>	<i>to appear,</i>	<i>appárso.</i>
<i>scalfíre,</i>	<i>to scratch,</i>	<i>scalfítto.</i>
<i>seppellíre.*</i>	<i>to bury,</i>	<i>sepolto.</i>
<i>offríre,</i>	<i>to offer,</i>	<i>offértò.</i>
<i>soffríre,</i>	<i>to suffer,</i>	<i>soffértò.</i>
<i>sólvere,</i>	<i>to solve,</i>	<i>solúto.</i>
<i>spándere,*</i>	<i>to spread,</i>	<i>spántò.</i>
<i>redímere,</i>	<i>to redeem,</i>	<i>redéntò.</i>
<i>súggere,</i>	<i>to suck,</i>	<i>succhiátò.</i>
<i>tosare,*</i>	<i>to shear,</i>	<i>tóso.</i>
<i>vívire,†</i>	<i>to live,</i>	<i>vissúto.</i>
<i>rescíndere,</i>	<i>to cut off,</i>	<i>rescísso.</i>

## EXERCISE LXIV.

1. Le pecorelle furono tutte tostate lo scorso maggio. 2. Il suo amico ha succhiata la ferita e così lo ha salvato. 3. Noi abbiamo sofferto molto durante il nostro viaggio a causa delle continue tempeste. 4. Ella mi ha offerto la sua casa; ma io preferisco vivere all'albergo. 5. Egli fu sepolto ieri al cimitero del nord. 6. Egli ha meschiato l'acqua ed il vino. 7. Alla fine egli ha desistito dall'annoiarmi. 8. Chi mi ha aperta la porta? Io ve l'ho aperta, signor maestro. 9. Quell'ospedale ha esistito da più di tre secoli e mezzo. 10. Noi abbiamo risoluto di essere buoni e studiosi fanciulli per il futuro. 11. Il prete lo ha assolto di tutti i suoi peccati. 12. Noi lo abbiamo tutti assistito co' nostri consigli e col nostro danaro.

1. Have the sheep been sheared this year? They have not yet been sheared. 2. Who sucked his wound? His brother; and thus he saved his life. 3. Have you suffered much during the winter? Yes, I suffered very much through the great cold. 4. What did he offer you? He offered me his house; but I preferred to live at the hotel. 5. Did you offer him any money? Yes, sir, and he would not take it. 6. Where has he been buried? He has been buried in the northern cemetery. 7. What has she poured here? She has poured water and wine. 8. What have you poured into my glass? Only some wine. 9. Have you opened the door? Yes, sir, and Mr. B. wants to speak to you. 10. What has she resolved? She has resolved to study the Italian language. 11. I have assisted him

\* These Verbs have also a *regular* Past Participle.

† *Vivere* has, besides its regular forms, an irregular Past Definite, like *scrivere*, p. 134, 4, and an irregular Future, like *cadere*, p. 142, 3.

with my advice and with my money. 12. She has at last desisted from annoying her.

## B. VERBS IRREGULAR IN DIFFERENT TENSES.

NOTE.—We give in full all Persons or Tenses which are Irregular, the Regular Persons and Tenses being omitted.

### 1. *Andáre, to go* (*Lat. vadere*).

#### PRESENT INDICATIVE.

io *vádo*, or *vo*. *égli va*.  
tu *vái*. *églino vánno*.

#### SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

*ch'ío váda*. *ch'égli váda*.  
*che tu váda*. *ch'églino vádano*.

#### FUTURE.

io *andrò*. *nói andrémo*.  
tu *andrái*. *vói andréte*.  
*égli andrà*. *églino andránno*.

#### CONDITIONAL.

io *andréi*. *nói andrémmo*.  
tu *andrésti*. *vói andréste*.  
*égli andrébbe*. *églino andrébbero*.

#### IMPERATIVE.

*va, go*.

All the compounds of *andáre* are conjugated in the same way, except *riandáre*, when meaning *to examine*, which is regular.

### EXERCISE LXV.

1. Io vado al concerto. 2. Tu vai alla scuola. 3. Ella va a casa di sua zia. 4. Noi andiamo alla stazione della ferrovia. 5. Noi andavamo dal dottore, quando lo incontrammo. 6. Eglino andarono a Parigi col signor B. 7. Noi andremo al teatro domani sera. 8. Io andrei con lui alla passeggiata se avessi tempo. 9. Egli è andato a Milano con suo padre. 10. Vattene, io non ho nulla per te. 11. Noi saremmo andati insieme, se lo avessi trovato a casa quando lo cercava. 12. Il maestro gli permise di andarsene.

1. Go away, I have nothing for you. 2. I am going to church. 3. Where are you going? I am going to the house of the doctor. 4. Did she go to the concert? She did not go there, because she had no time. 5. We shall go to the concert to-night. 6. I should have gone with him if I had found him at his house. 7. He will go to London next Saturday. 8. She is gone to the house of her aunt. 9. Where are they (*masc.*) gone? They (*masc.*) are all gone to school. 10. I shall not go with him. 11. Shall you go to the railway station? I shall go there at five o'clock. 12. They (*masc.*) are now going away.

### 2. *Bévere* or *bére, to drink* (*Lat. bibere*).

This verb forms its tenses regularly from *bévere*, but it has *also* the following irregular forms :

PAST DEFINITE.		FUTURE.*	
io bévvi.	églino bévvero.	io berò.	noi berémo.
egli bévve.		tu berái.	vói beréte.
		egli berà.	églino beránno.
CONDITIONAL.*		PAST PARTICIPLE.*	
io beréi.	noi berémmo.	beúto.	beúta.
tu berésti.	vói beréste.	beúti.	beúte.
egli berébbe.	églino berébbero.		

## EXERCISE LXVI.

1. Io bevo il vino e la birra. 2. Tu bevi l'acqua. 3. Egli beve liquori. 4. Noi non beviamo che acqua. 5. Che cosa bevete voi? Io bevo birra. 6. Eglino bevono acquavite. 7. Io bevvi birra a colazione. 8. Egli bevve acqua perchè aveva sete. 9. Io bevverei di quel vino, se me lo permetteste. 10. Noi beberemo tutti alla tua salute. 11. Egli ha bevuto molto, è tempo che finisca. 12. Io non ho mai bevuto acquavite.

1. Give me some water to drink, I am thirsty. 2. I drink water. 3. Do you drink wine? No, sir, I always drink water. 4. Are you thirsty? Yes, sir, give me a glass of wine to drink. 5. What will you drink at luncheon? I shall drink a bottle of wine. 6. They drank his health. 7. We shall not drink anything now, we are not thirsty. 8. Do you drink brandy? I never drink brandy, I only drink water. 9. What will she drink? She will drink a glass of water. 10. Will you drink a glass of liquor? Certainly not, thanks. 11. She has never drunk wine. 12. We shall all drink your health, sir.

3. Cadére, to fall (*Lat.* cadere).

This verb and its compounds have the following irregular forms.

PAST DEFINITE.		CONDITIONAL.	
io cáddi.	églino cáddero.	io cadréi.	noi cadrémmo.
egli cádde.		tu cadrésti.	vói cadréste.
		egli cadrébbe.	églino cadrébbero.
FUTURE.			
io cadrò.	noi cadrémo.		
tu cadrái.	vói cadréte.		
egli cadrà.	églino cadránno.		

## EXERCISE LXVII.

1. Io non sono mai caduto. 2. Egli è caduto per le scale. 3. Ella cadde sul ghiaccio. 4. Egli cadde nella strada. 5. È Ella mai caduta? Nossignore, io non sono mai caduto. 6. Tu cadrai se andrai in fretta. 7. Non bisogna correre per non cadere. 8. Egli correva tanto che alla fine egli cadde. 9. Io non correrò perchè ho paura di cadere. 10. Il falegname cadde dalla finestra del terzo

\* These irregular forms are mostly used in poetry.

piano. 11. Se noi non avessimo corso noi non saremmo caduti.  
12. Il bicchiere cadde e si ruppe.

1. He fell in the street. 2. You will fall if you run so much.  
3. I never fell down these stairs. 4. They all fell on the ice. 5. She  
fell because she ran too much. 6. You will fall if you go on the  
ice. 7. She will not go on the ice, because she is afraid of falling.  
8. The joiner fell from the window of the first floor. 9. I am not  
afraid of falling. 10. They (*masc.*) fell at the same time. 11.  
Several houses fell yesterday in the next street. 12. That house is  
too old, it will certainly fall.

4. **Cogliere**, contr. corre, *to gather* (*Lat.* colligo, collegi, collectum).

### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

io cólgo.                      églino cólgono.

## FUTURE.

(Also formed regularly.)

io corrò.	nói corrémo.
tu corrái.	vói corréte.
égli corrà.	églino corránno.

### PAST PARTICIPLE.

cólto.	cólta
cólti.	cólte.

### PAST DEFINITE.

io còlsi,	églino còlsero.
égli còlse.	

### SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

ch'io cólga.      ch'égli cólga.  
che tu cólga.    ch'égli no cól-  
                         gano.

**CONDITIONAL.**

(Also formed regularly.)

io corréi.	nói corrémmo.
tu corrésti.	vói corréste.
égli corrébbe.	églino corréb- bero.

So are also conjugated scégliere or scérre, *to choose* ; raccógliere, *to reap* ; disciógliere or disciórre, *to untie* ; sciógliere or sciórre, *to untie* ; tógliere or tórre, *to take off* ; distógliere or distórre, *to distract*.

### EXERCISE LXVIII.

1. Io ho colto i fiori, che erano nel giardino e li ho messi sulla tavola. 2. Ella andò nel prato a cogliere le margheritine. 3. Io corrò quella rosa per Emma. 4. Io correi quel garofano, se me lo permettete. 5. Noi non abbiamo ancora raccolto il grano quest'anno. 6. Egli raccolse le frutta nell'orto. 7. Luisa ha scelto questo cappello per regalarlo a sua cugina. 8. Io scioglierò facilmente codesto nodo. 9. Questo è un nodo molto difficile a sciogliere. 10. Quei ragazzi mi distolsero dalla lettura di questo libro. 11. Io non mi distolgo così facilmente dallo studio. 12. Quale di questi orologi sceglieresti tu? Io scerrei quello.

1. Which of these books will you choose? I shall choose this one. 2. Untie this knot. 3. I have gathered some beautiful flowers in my garden. 4. Go, and gather a few flowers for me. 5. The wheat has not yet been gathered. 6. The wheat will be gathered next month. 7. Do not talk so much, you distract me from my

lessons. 8. I have chosen this dress amongst many others. 9. I would not have chosen that colour, I do not like it. 10. What colour would you have chosen? The black colour. 11. Will you gather that rose for my sister? Certainly, sir. 12. You have chosen a very good book.

### 5. Dàre, to give (*Lat. do, dedi, datum*).

#### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

io do.	nói diámo.
tu dàì	vói dáté.
égli dà.	églino <u>dánno</u> .

#### SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

ch' io día.	che nói diámo.
che tu día.	che vói dáté.
ch' égli día.	ch' églino <u>díano</u> .

#### PAST DEFINITE.

io diédi, <i>or</i> détti.	nói démmo.
tu désti.	vói déste.
égli détte, <i>or</i> diéde, diè.	églino déttero, <i>or</i> diédéro.

#### SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT.

ch' io déssi.	che nói déssimo.
che tu déssi.	che vói déste.
ch' égli désse.	ch' églino déssero.

#### FUTURE.

io darò.	nói darémo.
tu darái.	vói daréte.
égli darà.	églino daránno.

#### CONDITIONAL.

io daréi.	nói darémmo.
tu darésti.	vói daréste.
égli darébbe.	églino darébbero.

All compounds of *dàre* with *more than three* syllables are regular, as *circondàre, to surround*, etc.

Compounds of *dàre* of *three* syllables, like *ridàre, to give back*, take an accent on the final vowel of those persons which have only two syllables: as, *io ridò, I give back*; *égli ridà, he gives back*, etc.

The irregularities of *dàre* are originated by the old form of its Infinitive, which was *dàere* (now obsolete). Thus this verb is conjugated rather like the second conjugation in *ere*, to which it formerly belonged, than like the first conjugation in *are*.

### EXERCISE LXIX.

1. Io do un libro allo scolare. 2. Tu mi dàì un bicchiere. 3. Ella mi dà un anello. 4. Noi diamo del danaro al servo. 5. Voi date delle lezioni d'italiano agli allievi. 6. Eglino danno delle frutta ai loro amici. 7. Dammi quello zucchero, perchè non ne ho nel mio tè. 8. Mi darete una lezione oggi, signor maestro? Certamente, con gran piacere. 9. Che cosa Le hanno dato quei viaggiatori? Eglino mi hanno dato delle vedute del Lago di Como. 10. Che cosa ha Ella dato a quel corriere? Io gli ho dato un dispaccio pel generale B. 11. Mi daresti tu del danaro? Io te ne darei molto volentieri se ne avessi. 12. Io gli darò un bell'orologio domattina.

1. I shall give him a watch, if he is a good boy. 2. Will he give us our lesson now? He will give us our lesson to-morrow



morning. 3. What have you given him? Nothing, sir. 4. What will you give me? I shall give you a very good book. 5. Give me some water, I am thirsty. 6. He gave his son some money. 7. I should not have given him this book if he had been a lazy boy. 8. I shall give my courier a letter for Mr. B. 9. The traveller gave some money to the servants (*masc.*) of the hotel. 10. I have given all my books to our master. 11. She gave her music to her cousin (*fem.*). 12. They (*masc.*) have promised to give us a very good dinner.

### 6. Dire, to say (*Lat.* dico, dixi, dictum).

The following irregularities arise from the verb being conjugated from its old infinitive *dícere* (now obsolete).

PRESENT INDICATIVE.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
io díco.	nói diciámo.	ch'io díca.	che nós diciámo.
tu díci.	vói díte.	che tu díca.	che vói diciáte.
égli díce.	églino dícono.	ch'égli díca.	ch'églino dícano.
IMPERFECT.		IMPERFECT.	
io dicéva.	nói dicevámo.	ch'io dicéssi.	che nós diceścimo.
tu dicévi.	vói diceváte.	che tu dicéssi.	che vói dicéste.
égli dicéva.	églino dicévano.	ch'égli dicésse.	ch'églino dicés- sera.
PAST DEFINITE.		GERUND.	
io díssi.	nói dicémmo.	dicéndo,	saying.
tu dicésti.	vói dicéste.	PAST PARTICIPLE.	
égli dísse.	églino díssero.	détta.	détta.
		détti.	détte.

In the same way are conjugated *maledíre*, to curse; *contradíre*, to contradict; *benedíre*, to bless; *predíre*, to predict; and other compounds of *díre*.

### EXERCISE LXX.

1. Io dico sempre la verità e tu dici delle bugie. 2. Che cosa dici? Io dico che non è vero. 3. Egli dice che non capisce questa parola. 4. Io gli dissi che sarei andato a visitarlo questa sera. 5. Egli ci disse che suo padre era andato a Londra. 6. Io gli dirò ciò che penso della sua condotta. 7. Se egli dicesse la verità noi tutti gli crederemmo. 8. Luisa ha detto che non desiderava nulla quest'oggi. 9. Dicendo tali parole, egli se ne andò. 10. Il dottore disse che non c'era pericolo. 11. Io gli aveva ben detto che sarebbe andato così! 12. Io credo tutto ciò ch'egli mi dice.

1. I said to him that I should visit him this evening. 2. He says that this is not true. 3. He always tells the truth. 4. He said that there was great danger. 5. Did he say the truth? No, sir, he always tells lies. 6. Do you believe what she says? I always believe what she says. 7. I have told him that before. 8. I should

not say this, if it were not true. 9. I wish to tell him that his behaviour is not good. 10. What did she tell you? She told me that her mother was ill. 11. What will you tell your friends (*masc.*)? That I wish to have them at dinner with me next Friday. 12. Do you wish to tell me anything? No, sir, I do not wish to tell you anything.

7. *Dolére, to pain; and dolérsi, to ache, to complain* \*  
(*Lat. doleo, dolui, dolitum*).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
io mi dólgo.	nói ci dogliámo.	ch'io mi dólga,	che nói ci do-
tu ti duóli.		or dógliá.	gliámo.
égli si duóle.	églino si dól-	che tu ti dólga,	che vói vi do-
	gono.	or dógliá.	gliáte.
		ch'égli si dólga,	ch'églino si dól-
		or dógliá.	gano, or dóg-
			gliano.
PAST DEFINITE.		FUTURE.	
io mi dólsi.	églino si dólse.	io mi dorro.	nói ci dorrémo.
églino si dól-		tu ti dorraí.	vói vi dorréte.
sero.		égli si dorrà.	églino si dorráno.
GERUND ( <i>also</i> formed regularly).			
dogliéndo.			

EXERCISE LXXI.

1. Mi duole la testa. 2. Mi dolgono le orecchie. 3. Questa mattina mi dovevano tutte le ossa. 4. Che cosa ti duole? Mi duolè il dito mignolo. 5. Mi dolsero i denti tutta la notte. 6. Le duole la mascella. 7. Gli dovevano gli occhi. 8. Egli camminò tanto che i piedi gli dovevano. 9. Non mi duole nulla. 10. Mi ha doluto il capo. 11. Non mi dolgo di nulla. 12. Tuo fratello si duole sempre di qualche cosa.

1. My head aches. 2. My eyes ache. 3. My feet ache because I walked too much. 4. Your feet will ache if you walk so much. 5. She complains of me. 6. She complained of her servants (*fem.*). 7. I complain of nothing. 8. What does she complain of? She complains of her long lesson. 9. I shall complain of you to our master. 10. I would not complain for such a little thing. 11. They (*masc.*) always complain of your behaviour at school. 12. My little finger aches very much.

8. *Dovére, to be obliged, to owe, must* (*Lat. debeo, debui, debitum*).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.	SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.
io dévo, débbo, or déggio.	ch'io débba, or déva.
tu dévi, or dèi.	che tu débba, or déva.
égli déve, or dée.	ch'égli débba, or déva.
nói dobbiámo.	che nói dobbiámo.
églino dévono, or débbono.	che vói dobbiáte.
	ch'églino débبانó.

\* *Dolere* is only used as an Impersonal verb. See p. 108.

PAST DEFINITE.		CONDITIONAL.	
has the double form like <i>temére</i> , see p. 61, I.		<i>io dovréi.</i>	<i>nói dovrémmo.</i>
		<i>tu dovrésti.</i>	<i>vói dovréste.</i>
		<i>égli dovrébbe.</i>	<i>églino dovrébb- bero.</i>
FUTURE.			
<i>io dovrò.</i>	<i>nói dovrémo.</i>		
<i>tu dovrái.</i>	<i>vói dovréte.</i>		
<i>égli dovrà.</i>	<i>églino dovránno.</i>		

## EXERCISE LXXII.

1. Io devo visitare mia zia questa sera. 2. Io gli devo cento franchi. 3. Tu mi devi due lire. 4. Egli mi deve una lira sterlina. 5. Quanto ti devo? Tu mi devi cinquecento lire. 6. Ella non mi deve nulla. 7. Tu dovresti essermi obbligatissimo pel danaro che ti ho prestato. 8. Io non devo nulla a nessuno. 9. Egli deve molti danari, egli ha molti debiti. 10. Tu devi andar subito dal medico per dirgli che l'ammalato ha peggiorato. 11. Quel signore mi deve centocinquanta lire. 12. Non dovresti essere tanto poltrone.

1. What do I owe you? You owe me sixty-five francs. 2. She owes me nothing; she paid her debt yesterday. 3. When you will have paid me this debt, you will owe me nothing. 4. He owed me a few francs for a very long time. 5. You must go at once to the school. 6. I must write a letter to my brother at once. 7. You still owe me two francs. 8. I did not owe him anything. 9. What does she owe you? She owes me nothing. 10. We must all study in order to learn. 11. She must go to her aunt, who is seriously ill. 12. I must write my exercise now, or I shall not have any time this evening.

9. *Fáre, to do, to make* (*Lat. facio, feci, factum*).

This verb is a contraction of the old Infinitive *fácere*, to which its irregularities are mostly due.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
<i>io fáccio, or fo.</i>	<i>nói facciámo.</i>	<i>ch' io fáccia.</i>	<i>che nós facciámo.</i>
<i>tu fáí.</i>	<i>églino fáanno.</i>	<i>che tu fáccia.</i>	<i>che vói facciáte.</i>
		<i>ch' égli fáccia.</i>	<i>ch' églino fácciano.</i>
IMPERFECT.		IMPERFECT.	
<i>io facéva.</i>	<i>nói facevám.</i>	<i>ch' io facéssi.</i>	<i>che nós facéssimo.</i>
<i>tu facévi.</i>	<i>vói faceváte.</i>	<i>che tu facéssi.</i>	<i>che vói facéste.</i>
<i>égli facéva.</i>	<i>églino facévano.</i>	<i>ch' égli fa- césse.</i>	<i>ch' églino facés- sero.</i>
PAST DEFINITE.		GERUND.	
<i>io féci.</i>	<i>nói facémmo.</i>	<i>facéndo.</i>	
<i>tu facésti.</i>	<i>vói facéste.</i>		
<i>égli féce.</i>	<i>églino fécero.</i>		
		PAST PARTICIPLE.	
		<i>fátto.</i>	<i>fátta.</i>
		<i>fátti.</i>	<i>fátte.</i>

All the compounds of *fáre*, as *rifáre*, *to make again*; *disfáre*, *to undo*; *contraffáre*, *to imitate*, etc., have the same irregularities.

## EXERCISE LXXIII.

1. Che cosa fai? Io non fo nulla. 2. Hai tu fatto ciò che ti ho detto? Non ancora, signore; lo farò or ora. 3. Che cosa ti hanno fatto? Essi mi hanno battuto. 4. Non bisogna mai fare una cattiva azione. 5. Noi facciamo sempre del bene agli infelici. 6. Ella ha fatto molto male a non ubbidirmi. 7. Che cosa bisognerà fare in tal caso? Sarà necessario ricorrere al giudice. 8. Io non Le ho fatto nulla. 9. Noi siamo tutti pronti a fare il nostro dovere. 10. Io non ho fatto niente tutto il giorno, perchè mi sentiva ammalato. 11. Fatemi il piacere di accompagnarmi alla passeggiata, perchè Le ho a parlare di cose importanti. 12. Fai il sordo, perchè non hai voglia di ascoltare.

1. What were you doing when I entered the room? I was doing nothing, sir. 2. Do this at once. 3. I shall do it presently, I have no time now. 4. What did he do to you? He has beaten me. 5. Why did he beat you? Because I did not do my exercise. 6. What must I do now? You must write two letters for me. 7. Will you do this for me? I will do it, if you make me a present. 8. Who has done that? Charles did it an hour ago. 9. Will you do me the favour of accompanying me to the house of Mr. B.? Yes, sir, willingly. 10. What have you done this morning? I have written several letters to my friends. 11. Children, do your duties! 12. We always do good and we never do evil to anybody.

10. *Moríre*, *to die*, and *morírsi*, *to be dying* (*Lat.* *moriór*, *mortuus sum*, *Dep.*).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
io muóio, <i>or</i> móro.	égli muóre.	ch' ío muóia, <i>or</i> muóra.	<i>or</i> muóra.
tu muóri.	églino muóiono, <i>or</i> muórono.	che tu muóia, <i>or</i> muóra.	ch' églino muó- iano, <i>or</i> muó- rano.
FUTURE. ( <i>Regular also.</i> )		CONDITIONAL. ( <i>Regular also.</i> )	
io morirò.	nói morirémo.	io moriréi.	nói morirémmo.
tu morirái.	vói moriréte.	tu morirésti.	vói moriréste.
égli morirá.	églino morirán- no.	égli morirébbe.	églino moriréb- bero.
IMPERATIVE.		PAST PARTICIPLE.	
muóri.		mórto.	mórta.
		mórti.	mórte.

## EXERCISE LXXIV.

1. Noi tutti moriremo quando piacerà a Dio. 2. Il mio amico Enrico morì ieri sera. 3. Chi è morto in quella casa? Una bam-

bina di pochi mesi. 4. A che ora è essa morta? Essa morì alle cinque e un quarto. 5. Io mi muoio dalla noia non avendo a far nulla. 6. Egli si muore dalla voglia di andare a Parigi. 7. Tu morrai d'un' indigestione se mangi tanto. 8. Egli crede che non morrà mai. 9. Più di mille soldati morirono in quella battaglia. 10. In quell' incendio morì un fanciullo. 11. Il mio povero cane è morto avvelenato. 12. Di che malattia morì vostro nonno? Egli morì di podagra.

1. He died of gout at ninety years of age. 2. She is too ill, she will soon die. 3. Who died in that house this morning? A poor old man. 4. When did your grandfather die? He died last year. 5. Is your grandmother dead? No, sir, she is not dead, she is in good health. 6. All our friends died very young. 7. My brother died at the battle of Mentana. 8. How many men died at that battle? More than a thousand men. 9. He died for his country very young. 10. How old was he when he died? He was twenty-three years old. 11. Of what illness did she die? She died of fever. 12. Several men died in that fire.

11. Parére, *to seem, to look* (Lat. pareo, parui, paritum).

<p>INDICATIVE PRESENT.</p> <p>io páio. églino páieno, <i>or</i> párono.</p> <p>PAST DEFINITE.</p> <p>io párvi. égli párve. églino párvero.</p> <p>FUTURE.</p> <p>io parrò. tu parrái. égli parrà.</p>	<p>SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.</p> <p>ch'io páia. che tu páia. ch'égli páia.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL.</p> <p>io parréi. tu parrésti. égli parrébbe.</p> <p>nói parrémmo. vói parréste. églino parrébbero.</p> <p>PAST PARTICIPLE.</p> <p>(Regular also.)</p> <p>párso. pársa. pársa.</p>
---	--

This verb must not be used when it might be mistaken for the verb *paráre*, *to adorn* : as, *nói pariámo*, *we seem* and *we adorn* ; in such case the verb *sembiáre*, *to seem*, should be used.

### EXERCISE LXXV.

1. Io paio ammalato, ma ho buona salute. 2. Tu pari essere un giovine forte, ma in fatti sei più debole di me. 3. Quelle signore paiono inglesi. 4. Eglino paiono francesi, ma sono italiani. 5. Mi pare ormai tempo che voi cominciaste a studiare. 6. Che cosa Le pare di quest' abito? Esso mi pare molto bello. 7. Pareva ammalato, ma il medico disse ch'egli aveva buona salute. 8. Voi sem-

brate più ricco di quel che siete. 9. Il tempo pareva cattivo questa mattina, ma ora è molto bello. 10. Mi pare di conoscere quella signora. 11. Non Le pare ch'io abbia ragione? Nossignore, io credo ch'Ella abbia torto. 12. Ei pareva che molti sarebbero andati al suo concerto, ma poi non ci fu nessuno.

1. You look very ill. 2. I look ill, but I am quite well. 3. It seems that I know that gentleman. 4. He seems to be a very rich man. 5. She seems to be a poor woman. 6. The weather seems beautiful. 7. He looked a very lazy boy, but he was very studious. 8. It seems to me that she should go to school. 9. This room seems very cold. 10. He looks like a soldier. 11. You do not look in good health. 12. She seems a very good girl.

### 12. Pórre, to put (*Lat.* pono, posui, positum).

This verb forms its irregularities mostly from the old infinitive *ponére*.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
io pongo.	noi poniamo.	ch'io ponga.	che noi poniamo.
tu poni.	vói ponete.	che tu ponga.	che vói poniate.
egli pone.	églino pongono.	ch'egli ponga.	ch'églino <u>pon-</u> <u>gano.</u>
IMPERFECT.		IMPERFECT.	
io ponéva.	noi ponevamo.	ch'io ponéssi.	che noi ponéssimo.
tu ponévi.	vói ponevate.	che tu ponéssi.	che vói ponéste.
egli ponéva.	églino poneva- no.	ch'egli ponésse.	ch'églino <u>ponés-</u> <u>sero.</u>
PAST DEFINITE.		GERUND.	
io posi.	noi ponémmo.	ponéndo.	
tu ponésti.	vói ponéste.		
egli póse.	églino pósero.		
IMPERATIVE.		PAST PARTICIPLE.	
poni.	ponéte.	pósto.	pósta.
		pósti.	póste.

The compounds *dispórre*, to dispose; *suppórre*, to suppose; *sottoppórre*, to put under; *compórre*, to compose; *depórre*, to depose; *frappórre*, to put between; *sovrappórre*, or *soprap-  
pórre*, to put upon; *impórre*, to impose, etc., have all the same irregularities.

### EXERCISE LXXVI.

1. Dove hai posto le mie lettere? Io le ho poste sulla tavola nella libreria. 2. Chi ha posto questa sedia qui? La serve. 3. Io posi il mio bastone dietro la porta quando entrai, ed ora non lo trovo. 4. Poni quest'abito nella mia camera da letto. 5. Dove bisognerà porre queste merci? Ponetele nel magazzino. 6. Io non dispongo di nulla in questa casa, perchè io non ne sono il padrone.

7. Egli suppone che noi siamo fuori di città, e perciò non ci ha visitato da lungo tempo. 8. Che cosa ha Ella composto? Io ho composto la musica d'una nuova canzone. 9. Quel re fu deposto dal trono dai suoi sudditi ribellati. 10. Perchè frapponi ostacoli alle sue intraprese? Al contrario io cerco di aiutarlo. 11. Il nemico impose un gran tributo a quella nazione dopo averla soggiogata. 12. Ti prego disporre di me a tuo piacere.

1. I have put your stick behind the door. 2. Where have you put my hat? In your room, sir. 3. I put the letter inside that box. 4. They (*masc.*) put their coats in that room when they (*masc.*) came in. 5. He composed a new song for his sister. 6. They (*masc.*) deposed their king, because he was bad. 7. The subjects of that king have rebelled and will depose him. 8. A very heavy tribute was imposed by the enemy. 9. Have you composed anything? Yes, sir, I have composed some new music. 10. The music composed by him is always very nice. 11. I beg you to dispose of me as you like. 12. Put those bottles upon that table and go away.

13. *Potére, to be able* (*Lat. possum, potui, fut. potero*).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

io <u>pó</u> ss <sup>o</sup> .	nói possiámo.
tu <u>pu</u> ói.	églino p <sup>o</sup> ss <sup>o</sup> no.
egli può, <i>or puóte</i> .	

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

ch'io p <sup>o</sup> ssa.	che nós possiámo.
che tu p <sup>o</sup> ssa.	che vói possiáte.
ch'egli p <sup>o</sup> ssa.	ch'églino p <sup>o</sup> ssano.

FUTURE.

io potrò.	nói potrémo.
tu potrai.	vói potréte.
egli potrà.	églino potráno.

CONDITIONAL.

io potréi.	nói potrémmo.
tu potrésti.	vói potréste.
egli potrébbe.	églino potrébbero.

The Past Definite has both the regular forms, like *temére*, p. 61, I.

EXERCISE LXXVII.

1. Io non posso spendere tanto danaro, perchè non ne ho. 2. Puoi prestarmi quel libro? Io non posso prestartelo, perchè non è il mio. 3. Può Ella accompagnarmi alla passeggiata? Io non posso, perchè devo andare altrove. 4. Noi non possiamo soffrire la sua arroganza. 5. Sarei felice di poter accettare il suo invito, ma sono invitato di già ad un altro ballo. 6. Potrebbe Ella darmi quella statuetta? Mi dispiace che non posso, essa non è mia. 7. Cosa potreste voi farmi se vi disubbidissi? Io vi punirei severamente. 8. Può Ella essere a casa mia alle cinque? Io ci potrò essere verso le sei. 9. A che ora potrò avere il piacere della sua compagnia? Io sarò da Lei alle otto. 10. Come si può tradurre questa parola? Essa si può tradurre in due modi. 11. L'olio e l'acqua non si possono mischiare. 12. Può Ella farmi questo favore? Mi è assolutamente impossibile.

1. Can you give me that book? I cannot give it to you because

it is not mine. 2. Can you be at dinner with us this evening? No, sir, thanks; I am already invited elsewhere. 3. I shall not be able to go to the theatre to-morrow; I must go to the concert. 4. Will you be able to go to Italy this year? No, sir, but I shall go to France. 5. What could you do? I could punish you most severely. 6. You cannot beat me. 7. Can you sing this song? No, sir, I cannot. 8. Can she sing? Yes, sir, she sings very well. 9. Could you learn this song in an hour? I can learn it in half an hour. 10. Can they (*masc.*) speak French? Yes, sir, and they can speak Italian also. 11. What languages can you speak? I can speak English and Italian. 12. How many languages can you speak? I can speak several languages.

14. *Rimanére, to remain, to stop* (*Lat. remaneo, remansi*).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
io rimángo.	églino rimángo.	ch' io rimánga.	ch' églino ri- che tu rimánga. mángano.
PAST DEFINITE.		CONDITIONAL.	
io rimási.	églino rimásero.	io rimarréi.	nói rimarrémmo.
égli rimáse		tu rimarrésti.	vói rimarréste.
FUTURE.		égli rimarrébbe.	églino rimarréb- bero.
io rimarrò.	nói rimarrémo.	PAST PARTICIPLE.	
tu rimarrái.	vói rimarréte.	rimásto.	
égli rimarrà.	églino rimar- ráno.		

EXERCISE LXXVIII.

1. Dove rimarrete voi ad aspettarmi mentre io corro alla posta a cercar le mie lettere? Io rimarrò qui. 2. Io rimasi tutto il giorno a casa, perchè aveva male alla gola. 3. Quando noi partimmo, egli rimase solo. 4. Noi rimarremmo per farle piacere; ma non possiamo perchè nostro padre ci aspetta. 5. Egli rimase senza danari, avendo tutti sciupati quand'era giovane. 6. Che cosa ti è rimasto? Non mi è rimasto nulla. 7. Ditegli che rimanga qui sino al mio ritorno. 8. Egli rimase in letto, essendo ammalato. 9. Di tanto vino che avevamo nella nostra cantina non ci rimane che una sola bottiglia di vino di Chianti. 10. Io ho regalati quasi tutti i miei libri; me ne rimangono ora ben pochi. 11. Ella rimase di sasso a tale nuova. 12. Noi rimarremo a casa quest'oggi perchè piove alla dirotta.

1. Remain where you are till I return from the post-office. 2. We all remained astonished (*di sasso*) at such news. 3. He says that he will remain at home (*at house*) because he is ill. 4. I did not stop long in London. 5. I remained in Rome three weeks only. 6. She remained with my mother, to talk to her about you. 7. What did remain to you? Nothing, sir. 8. How much wine remained after dinner? No wine remained after dinner, they (*masc.*) drank it all. 9. The captain remained alone, because all



his soldiers ran away. 10. We shall remain here to wait for him.  
11. I shall remain alone in this house, when all my pupils will have  
gone away. 12. I should not like to remain all alone.

15. **Salire**, *to ascend* (*Lat.* salire, "to leap").

Whenever a form of *salire* could be mistaken for a form of *salâre*, *to salt*, it takes a g before the l: as *nói saliâmo*, *we salt*; *nói sagliâmo*, *we ascend*, etc.

### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

io sálgo, *or* salísco.  
tu sáli, *or* salísci.  
égli sále, *or* salísce.  
nói sagliámo.  
églino sálgono.

### SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

ch'io sálga, *or* salísca.  
che tu sálga, *or* salísca.  
ch'égli sálga, *or* salísca.  
che nói sagliámo.  
che vói sagliáte.  
ch'égliño sálgano, *or* salíscano.

### EXERCISE LXXIX.

1. Io saliva le scale quando tu le scendevi. 2. Io salii sul Monte Bianco il sette agosto del mille ottocento settantotto. 3. Io non salirò certo a quell' altezza. 4. Egli salì meco il Monte Rosa. 5. Puoi tu salire su quel muro? No, esso è troppo alto per me. 6. Quella torre è tanto alta che si spende mezz' ora a salirla. 7. Ho salita una lunghissima scalinata per trovarti. 8. Dove salisti poco fa? Io salii su quell' albero per cogliere ciriege. 9. Salire è facile, ma discendere è difficile. 10. Io non salirò mai più fin quì, ci perdo il fiato. 11. Non salire così di fretta. 12. Dante disse:

**“ Quanto è duro calle**

Lo scendere e 'l salir per l'altrui scale."

1. We shall ascend presently. 2. Have you ascended any mountain? Yes, sir, I have ascended Mont Blanc. 3. With whom did you ascend Mont Blanc? With some Englishmen. 4. Who is gone up that tree? Charles, sir. 5. Why has he gone up that tree? To gather cherries. 6. It will be for him more difficult to come down than to go up. 7. Can you ascend that wall? No, sir, it is too high for me. 8. I am out of breath, I have ascended too many stairs. 9. Come upstairs (*salire*) with me. 10. I cannot ascend any more stairs to-night, I have had enough of it. 11. Have you ever ascended that tower? Yes, sir, and I spent half an hour in ascending it. 12. I should like to visit him if I were not obliged to ascend so many stairs to find him.

16. Sapére, *to know* (of intellectual knowledge). (*Lat.*  
sapio, sapivi, or sapii.)

### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

io so.	nói sáppiámo.
tu sái.	églino sánno.
egli sa.	

### SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

ch' io sappia.      che noi sappiamo.  
che tu sappia.      che voi sappiate.  
ch' egli sappia.    ch' egliino sappiano.

PAST DEFINITE.		IMPERATIVE.	
io séppi.	églino séppero.	sáppi.	sappiáte.
égli séppe.			
FUTURE.		CONDITIONAL.	
io saprò.	nói saprémo.	io sapréi.	nói saprémmo.
tu saprái.	vói sapréte.	tu saprésti.	vói sapréste.
égli saprà.	églino sapránno.	égli saprébbe.	églino saprébbero.

## EXERCISE LXXX.

1. Io non so nulla di quest'affare. 2. Sai tu che la signora B. è partita per Milano? 3. Ella sa bene che io non posso accettare codesta proposta. 4. Io seppi questa notizia prima di te. 5. Egli sa molte lingue, ma non le conosce abbastanza per parlarle. 6. Io saprò subito se ciò è vero o falso. 7. Sappi che tu hai torto. 8. Tu sapresti le tue lezioni se le avessi studiate. 9. Fra poco saprete tutto. 10. Io non mi curo di saperlo. 11. Sapete voi la ragione del suo procedere? Io non la so, signore. 12. Io non ho saputo la mia lezione quest'oggi ed il maestro mi ha biasimato.

1. Do you know the Italian language? I do not know it yet, but I am studying it. 2. Do you know (*conoscere*) that gentleman? Yes, sir, he is my uncle, Mr. B. 3. Did she know her lessons? No, sir, and she was blamed by her music-master. 4. I do not care to know anything about that affair. 5. What do you know of it? I know nothing of it. 6. Do you know his proposal? Yes, sir, and I shall accept it. 7. Do you know if this is true? I do not know if that is true or not. 8. Do you know my brother John? Yes, sir, he was at school with me some years ago. 9. I did not know whose stick this was. 10. I knew him very well when he was in Milan last year. 11. Do you know your duties? Yes, sir, I know them. 12. I know nothing of it.

17. *Sedére, to sit down* (*Lat.* *sedeo, sedi, sessum*).

*Possedére, to possess* (*Lat.* *possideo, possedi, possessum*).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.	
io siédo, séggo, or séggio.	che nós sediamo, or seggiámo.
tu siédi.	che vói sediate, or seggiáte.
égli siéde.	ch' églino siédano, or seggano.
nói sediamo, or seggiámo.	
églino siédono, or séggono.	
PAST DEFINITE	
(has the two forms of the regular conjugation, see p. 61, I.).	
SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
ch' io siéda, ségga, or séggia.	
che tu siéda, ségga, or séggia.	
ch' égli siéda, ségga, or séggia.	
	IMPERATIVE.
	siédi.
	GERUND.
	( <i>Regular also.</i> ) seggéndo.

### EXERCISE LXXXI.

1. Io siedo sul letto. 2. Dove siedi tu? Io siedo sulla tavola per ora, giacchè non ci sono più sedie vuote. 3. Io sederò con te al concerto. 4. Tua sorella sedette vicino alla mia in chiesa quest'oggi. 5. Noi sederemo tutti da questa parte, per veder meglio gli attori. 6. Dove desidera Ella sedere, signor zio? Io sederò accanto a te. 7. Egli era seduto dietro di me. 8. Io non desidero sedermi perchè non sono stanco. 9. Io mi sederei se fossi molto stanco. 10. Sedetevi tutti, l'opera è sul punto di cominciare. 11. Io non mi sono seduto, perchè devo andar via immediatamente. 12. Si sieda, signor cavaliere, e mi dia nuòve d'Italia.

1. I sat down all the evening. 2. Where will you sit? I shall sit on that side. 3. Will she sit near me? No, madam, she will sit near her mother. 4. We sat near him at the concert. 5. He sat near me at church. 6. They (*masc.*) sat behind us at the theatre. 7. I shall not sit down, I am not tired. 8. I prefer not to sit down, when I am not much tired. 9. Let him sit down on that chair. 10. There is not one chair empty, I must sit on the table for the present. 11. Sit down to eat your dinner. 12. You must eat your dinner sitting.

18. Stáre, *to stand* (*Lat.* sto, steti, statum).

### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

tu stái.                      églino stánnno.

### PAST DEFINITE.

io stètti.	nói stémmo.
tu stésti.	vói stéste.
égli stétte.	églino stéttero.

## FUTURE.

io starò.	nói starémo.
tu starái.	vói staréte.
egli starà.	églino staránno.

### SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

ch' io stia.                      ch' égli stia.  
che tu stia.                      ch' églino stiano.

### SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT.

ch' io stéssi.      che noi stéssimo.  
che tu stéssi.      che vói stéste.  
ch' égli stésse.      ch' églino stés-  
   sero.

**CONDITIONAL.**

io staréi.	vói staréste.
tu starésti.	églino staréb-
égli starébbe.	bero.
nói starémmo.	

Soprastáre or sovrastáre, *to be above*, and sottostáre, *to be under*, have the same irregularities. All other compounds of stáre, and all other verbs ending in stáre, are *regular*.

Stáre is very generally used in reference to one's health, and means then *to feel, to be*: as, cóme státe? *how do you do?* io sto béne, *I am well*, etc. When an action is *going on*, stáre is used instead of *essere*.

### EXERCISE LXXIX.

1. Io sto quì ad aspettarlo. 2. Che cosa stai a fare quì? Io sto aspettando il mio maestro di musica. 3. Come stai questa mat-

tina? Io sto bene, grazie. 4. Dove siete stato l'altra sera? Io sono stato alla casa del medico. 5. Che cosa stavano facendo gli scolari quando il maestro arrivò? Eglino stavano imparando le loro lezioni. 6. Egli stette ammalato circa due mesi. 7. Come sta tuo padre, Carlo? Mio padre sta benone, e vi saluta. 8. Se io stessi male manderei a chiamare il medico. 9. Dove sta il mio cappello? Il suo cappello sta sulla sua sedia. 10. Dove stava vostro fratello ieri? Egli stava a Londra; ma oggi egli sta a Parigi. 11. Noi stiamo aspettando l'amico B. per cominciare il nostro pranzo. 12. Ragazzi, state attenti a quello che il maestro vi dice.

1. How do you do, sir? I am quite well, thanks. 2. Where were (*stare*) you when I entered the room? I was writing a letter in the next room. 3. I am (*stare*) writing a book. 4. Where is your brother? He is doing his exercise. 5. I feel very ill to-day, I have eaten too much. 6. How is your brother? He is very well. 7. What are they (*masc.*) doing? They (*masc.*) are doing nothing. 8. Why are you there? I am here waiting for my friends (*masc.*). 9. Have you been ill? No, sir, I have always been very well. 10. Be attentive, boys, this lesson must be learned well. 11. Why are you not attentive? I am not well. 12. Stay here a few minutes, I shall soon return.

19. Spégnere, *to extinguish, to put out* (*Lat. exstinguo, exstinxi, exstinctum*).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.			SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
<i>(Regular also.)</i>			<i>(Regular also.)</i>	
io spéngo.	églino	spéngo-	ch' io spénga.	che nói spenghi-
noí spenghiámo.	no.		che tu spénga.	ámo.
			ch' égli spénga.	ch' églino spén-
				gano.
PAST DEFINITE.			PAST PARTICIPLE.	
io spénsi.	églino spénsero.		spénto.	spénta.
égli spénse.			spénti.	spénte.

### EXERCISE LXXXIII.

1. Io spengo il lume. 2. Tu spegni la candela. 3. Ella spegne la lampada. 4. Voi spegnete il fuoco. 5. Noi non spegniamo la lanterna. 6. Eglino spengono il gas. 7. Avete spenta la candela? Non ancora. 8. Ha ella spento la lanterna? Sissignore. 9. Il fuoco è spento. 10. Chi ha spento il lume? Carlo lo ha spento. 11. Spegnete tutte le candele. 12. Noi non spegneremo il gas prima di mezzanotte.

1. Have you put out the fire? Yes, sir. 2. Extinguish all those candles. 3. Who put out the fire? The servant (*fem.*) put it out. 4. She has not yet put out the fire. 5. We will put out the fire before going to bed. 6. You must put out that light. 7. They

(*masc.*) must put out their candles when they (*masc.*) go to bed. 8. Do not extinguish that fire, because I feel cold. 9. He put out the gas, before ten o'clock. 10. Why have you put out the gas? Because it is midnight. 11. I shall put out my candle. 12. Put out all the fires in the house.

20. **Tenére**, *to hold* (*Lat.* teneo, tenui, tentum).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.		SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.	
io téngo.	égli tiéne.	ch' io ténga.	che nói tenghiámo, <i>or</i> teniámo.
tu tiéni.	églino téngono.	che tu ténga	che vói tenghiáte, <i>or</i> teniáte.
		ch' égli ténga.	ch'égling téngano.
PAST DEFINITE.		CONDITIONAL.	
io ténni.	églino ténnero.	io terréi.	nói terrémmo.
égli téenne.		tu terrésti.	vói terréste.
		égli terrébbe.	églino terrébbero.
FUTURE.		IMPERATIVE.	
io terrò.	nói terrémo.		
tu terrái.	vói terréte.	tiéni.	
égli terrà.	églino terránno.		

So also the compounds appartenére, *to belong*; contenére, *to contain*; sostenére, *to uphold*; ottenére, *to obtain*.

Tenère is commonly used instead of *avére*, when this is not used as an auxiliary.

### EXERCISE LXXXIV.

1. Io tengo due lire in saccoccia. 2. Che cosa tieni in tasca? Io non tengo nulla in tasca. 3. A chi appartiene quel giardino? Esso appartiene a mio zio. 4. Bisogna tener conto di quanto si spende. 5. Il signor zio mi ha tenuto a battesimo. 6. Da chi tiene Ella questo bel quadro? Esso mi fu regalato dal duca di B. 7. Non mi tenga a bada più lungamente, io non ho tempo da perdere. 8. Noi tutti lo tenevamo per un galantuomo, prima di sapere le sue cattive azioni. 9. Io ti terrò mano a sbarazzare la tavola. 10. Egli non teneva conto del suo danaro, essendo molto ricco. 11. Chi tiene molto danaro deve aiutare i poverelli. 12. Tieniti dall' altra parte, perchè quì non c' è posto.

1. What have you in your pocket? I have only a few shillings.
2. You must value the money, which your father has given you.
3. Do you keep an account of the money you spend? Yes, sir.
4. We will all help you to clear the table. 5. Help me to do this
6. In what can I help you? You can help me in carrying this picture into the other room. 7. He was my god-father (*he held me at baptism*).
8. From whom do you hold this present? From my cousin (*fem.*).
9. I always thought (*held*) him a gentleman. 10.

We hold him for a very studious pupil (*masc.*). 11. He is thought (*held*) by everybody a very lazy boy. 12. We shall keep an account of this.

21. **Trárre** (contraction of *tráere*), *to draw, to pull* (*Lat. traho, traxi, tractum*).

## INDICATIVE PRESENT.

io trággo.	nói traiámo.
tu trái.	vói traéte.
égli tráe.	églino trággono.

## IMPERFECT.

io traéva.	nói traevámo.
tu traévi.	vói traeváte.
égli traéva.	églino traévano.

## PAST DEFINITE.

io trássi.	nói traémmo.
tu traésti.	vói traéste.
égli trasse.	églino trássero.

## IMPERATIVE.

trái.	traéte.
-------	---------

## SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

ch' io trágga.	che nós traiámo.
che tu trágga.	che vói traiáte.
ch' égli trágga.	ch' églino trág- gano.

## IMPERFECT.

ch' io traéssi.	che nós traéssimo.
che tu traéssi.	che vói traéste.
ch' égli traésse.	ch' églino traés- sero.

## GERUND.

traéndo.

## PAST PARTICIPLE.

trátto.	trátta.
trátti.	trátte.

So also the compounds *attrárre, to attract; contrárre, to contract; sottrárre, to subtract; detrárre, to detract*, etc.

## EXERCISE LXXXV.

1. Io estraggo il sugo da quest' arancia. 2. Tu trai gran profitto dalla tua professione. 3. Ella trae una bella rendita da codeste case. 4. Che profitto trasse il tuo amico dal suo ultimo viaggio? Egli guadagnò circa mille lire. 5. Che partito ne trasse? Egli ne trasse tutto il vantaggio possibile. 6. Traetevi di là che m'impedite di leggere. 7. Il gas si estrae dal carbone. 8. Io estrassi un ago dal piede del tuo cane. 9. Non mi distrarre, perchè ho da lavorare. 10. Egli attrasse tutta la mia attenzione. 11. La calamita attrae il ferro. 12. Ella estrasse tutto il sugo da quelle arance.

1. By what is iron attracted? By loadstone. 2. What profit do you derive from your profession? Nearly a thousand a year. 3. We shall draw all possible advantages from it. 4. Gas is extracted from coal. 5. I shall extract the juice out of this orange. 6. He is a great orator, he always attracts our attention. 7. Extract this pin from my finger. 8. He derives a good rent from those gardens. 9. Take (*draw*) yourself away from that place, you distract me. 10. You must not distract me, I have to work. 11. He will distract his brothers from learning their lessons. 12. We shall not draw great profit from that.

22. Udiré, to hear (*Lat.* audio, audivi, auditum).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
io ódo.	égli óde.	ch' io óda.	ch' égli óda.
tu ódi.	églino ódono.	che tu óda.	ch' églino ódano.
FUTURE.		CONDITIONAL.	
(Regular also.)		(Regular also.)	
io udrò.	noi udrémo.	io udréi.	noi udrémmo.
tu udrái.	vói udréte.	tu udrésti.	vói udréste.
égli udrà.	églino udránno.	égli udrébbe.	églino udrébb- bero.
IMPERATIVE.			
ódi.			

## EXERCISE LXXXVI.

1. Io l'odo cantare con gran piacere. 2. Mi odi tu? Sissignore, io vi odo distintamente. 3. Ella è sorda, ella non mi ode. 4. Se ella è sorda, ella non può udirti. 5. Udite voi quella bella musica? Sissignore, noi la udiamo. 6. Quei ragazzi sono molto lontani, églino non vi odono. 7. Io lo udrò cantare stassera al teatro. 8. Parlate un po' più forte, ed egli vi udrà. 9. Non la udimmo a quel concerto, perchè non ci eravamo. 10. Udiste voi la S. cantare all'Opera? Nossignore, io non c'era. 11. Io andrò ad udire quel tenore domani sera al concerto di B. 12. Io feci mostra di non udirlo.

1. Do you hear him? Yes, sir. 2. I have not yet heard him sing. 3. We shall hear her sing at the concert to-night. 4. I could not hear him, I was too far. 5. I should hear her, if I was not so far. 6. He has heard me. 7. Will you go to hear him sing in the new opera to-night? I cannot, I must go elsewhere. 8. They (*masc.*) all went to hear her sing. 9. They (*fem.*) heard her very well. 10. She made believe (*móstra*) that she did not hear me. 11. The boys are too far to hear you. 12. We shall all go to hear that great orator speak.

23. Uscíre, to go out (*Lat.* exeo, exii, exitum).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
io éesco.	égli éesce.	ch' io éesca.	ch' égli éesca.
tu éesci.	églino éescono.	che tu éesca.	ch' églino ées- cano.
IMPERATIVE.			
ésci.			

This verb owes its irregularities to the old infinitive escíre.

Riuscíre, to go out again, to succeed, has the same irregularities.

## EXERCISE LXXXVII.

1. Io esco per fare una passeggiata. 2. Perchè non esci? Perchè non mi sento molto bene. 3. Egli esce troppo spesso. 4. Quei ragazzi non escono mai senza il loro maestro. 5. Ditegli che può uscire, se gli piace. 6. Noi usciremo insieme, se Le aggrada. 7. Io non posso uscire ora perchè ho da lavorare. 8. A che ora uscirete quest'oggi? Io uscirò verso le cinque. 9. Non uscire di quà senza il mio permesso. 10. Egli è così smemorato che spesso esce senza cappello. 11. Noi uscimmo di casa a buon'ora, erano appena le nove. 12. Il padrone è uscito.

1. He often goes out with his brothers. 2. Is your master gone out? Yes, sir. 3. At what o'clock did he go out? He went out at two o'clock. 4. Who went out with him? He went out alone. 5. We shall go out together, if you please. 6. I cannot go out with you, my father has not given me leave to go out. 7. Will you go out with me? Not now, sir, but I shall be able to go out with you at six o'clock. 8. They (*masc.*) went out without leave. 9. I should never go out without leave. 10. Is she gone out? No, sir, she is with her mother in her room. 11. You go out too often, you must not go out now. 12. Tell your brothers that they can go out together with you.

24. Valére, to be worth (*Lat. valeo, valui, valitum*).

INDICATIVE PRESENT.		SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.	
io válgo.	églino válgono,	ch'io válga, or vágliá.	
nói vagliámo.	or vágliono.	che tu válga, or vágliá.	
		ch'égli válga, or vágliá.	
		che nôi vagliámo.	
PAST DEFINITE.		che vói vagliáte.	
io válsi.	églino válsero.	ch'églino vágliano, or vágliano.	
égli válse.			
FUTURE.		CONDITIONAL.	
	( <i>Regular also.</i> )		( <i>Regular also.</i> )
io varrò.	nói varrémo.	io varréi.	nói varrémmo.
tu varrái.	vói varréte.	tu varrésti.	vói varréste.
égli varrà.	églino varránno.	égli varrébbe.	églino varrébbero.
PAST PARTICIPLE.			
(Regular also.)			
	válso.	válso.	
	válsi.	válse.	

So also prevalére, to prevail.

## EXERCISE LXXXVIII.

1. Questo anello vale cinquanta franchi. 2. La tua casa vale due mila lire sterline. 3. Quanto vale il suo cavallo? Il mio cavallo vale duecento lire sterline. 4. Quell'abito non vale molto. 5. Il mio



pianoforte valeva cento lire sterline quand'era nuovo, ora ne vale soltanto settanta. 6. Quanto hai pagato quella carrozza? Io l'ho pagato cento lire sterline. L'hai pagata più ch'essa valga. 7. Quest'orologio valerebbe molto più se fosse d'oro. 8. La tua casa vale più della mia. 9. Quella casa non vale tanto quanto la tua. 10. Quel cavallo varrà molto fra due anni. 11. Io non so quanto valga. 12. Io credo che quel cavallo valga molto.

1. How much is your carriage worth? It is worth a hundred pounds. 2. It is worth more than mine. 3. That house is not worth so much as yours. 4. My house is worth less than his. 5. How much do you think that garden may be worth? I do not know how much it may be worth. 6. Do you believe that it is worth as much as this? I do not think so. 7. I have paid (for) this watch more than it is worth. 8. You must not pay anything more than it is worth. 9. Your house will be worth more in a few years. 10. That ring would be worth more if it were gold. 11. This is not worth much. 12. That house is worth many thousand pounds sterling.

### 25. Vedére, to see (*Lat.* video, vidi, visum).

#### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

(*Regular also.*)

io veggio, or veggio.  
tu ve'.  
noi veggiamo.  
èglio veggono, or veggono.

#### PAST DEFINITE.

io vidi.                      èglio videro.  
egli vide.

#### FUTURE.

io vedrò.                  noi vedremo.  
tu vedrai.                voi vedrete.  
egli vedrà.              èglio vedranno.

#### IMPERATIVE.

vedi, or ve'.

#### SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

(*Regular also.*)

ch'io veggia, or veggia.  
che tu veggia, or veggia.  
ch'egli veggia, or veggia.  
che noi veggiamo.  
che voi veggiate.  
ch'èglio veggano, or veggano.

#### CONDITIONAL.

io vedrei.                  noi vedremmo.  
tu vedresti.                voi vedreste.  
egli vedrebbe.              èglio vedrebbero.

#### GERUND.

(*Regular also.*)

veggendo.

#### PAST PARTICIPLE.

(*Regular also.*)

visto.                      visto.  
visto.                      visto.

So also the compounds prevedére, to foresee; rivedére, to see again, etc.

### EXERCISE LXXXIX.

1. Io ti veggo, ma tu non mi vedi. 2. Egli non mi vede. 3. Noi ti vediamo là dietro. 4. Quei signori non possono vedere noi altri



sovvenirsi de' tempi felici nella miseria. 12. Ci sono alla fine pervenuto.

1. Come with me, let us go to dinner. 2. I cannot come with you, somebody is waiting for me in my house. 3. Will you come with me to-morrow? To-morrow yes, and thanks. 4. With whom have you come? I came with all my friends (*masc.*). 5. Whence does he come? He comes from his match factory. 6. Did they (*masc.*) come from our silk manufactory? No, sir, they came from the Stock Exchange. 7. We shall all come together this evening. 8. Whence do you come? I come from the concert. 9. We come from the house of your lawyer. 10. I came yesterday from the country. 11. They (*fem.*) came from school at five o'clock. 12. He agrees with me that I am right.

### 27. Volére, to be willing (*Lat.* volo, volui).

#### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

io voglio, or vo'. noi vogliámo.  
tu vuóli. églino vogliono.  
égli vuóle.

#### PAST DEFINITE.

io vólli. églino vóllero.  
égli vólle.

#### NO IMPERATIVE.

#### FUTURE.

io vorrò. noi vorrémo.  
tu vorrái. vói vorréte.  
égli vorrà. églino vorránno

#### SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

ch' io vógliá. che noi vogliá-  
mo.  
che tu vógliá. che vói vogliáte.  
ch' égli vógliá. ch' églino vógliá-  
no.

#### CONDITIONAL.

io vorréi. noi vorrémmo.  
tu vorrésti. vói vorréste.  
égli vorrébbe. églino vorréb-  
bero.

### EXERCISE XOL.

1. Io voglio studiar bene questa lezione. 2. Vuoi tu venir meco al concerto? Io non posso venir tecco, io devo andare con Guglielmo dal libraio. 3. Che cosa vuole? Io non voglio nulla. 4. Noi vogliamo pranzare, cameriere. Dateci tutto ciò che avete di buono. 5. Che cosa vogliono? Noi abbiamo del buon arrosto e del gallinaccio stufato. 6. Dateci l'uno e l'altro, e portateci anche due bottiglie di vin rosso, del migliore. 7. Volete bere? Nossignore, grazie, io non ho sete. 8. Io non volli ricevere la sua visita perchè io non desidero la sua amicizia. 9. Noi non volevamo andare al teatro, ma nostro cugino ci pregò tanto che alla fine noi acconsentimmo. 10. Tu l'hai voluto così, ora è inutile il pentirsi. 11. Se tu volessi ascoltarmi faresti molto bene. 12. Se tu avessi voluto seguire il mio consiglio, non ti saresti trovato in imbarazzo.

1. Will you come to London with me? I cannot come with you, sir, because I have to go with my aunt. 2. Who has come? The music master came to give you your lesson. 3. I will not have any more lessons from that music master. 4. From whom will you now

take your music lessons? From that Italian music master. 5. Will you pay me now? I cannot pay you now, but I will pay you next week. 6. Will they (*masc.*) have some wine to drink? No, sir, they (*masc.*) will not have anything to drink, they (*masc.*) are not thirsty. 7. Will she sing to-night? She will not sing, because she does not feel well. 8. Will you go into the other room to tell my friend (*masc.*) to come here? Yes, sir, I will go there and tell him (*it*). 9. Would you lend me those new books, which you have bought to-day at (*from*) the bookseller's? I cannot lend them to you now, I want to read them first myself. 10. She would not follow my advice, and now she regrets it. 11. Whom will you invite to dinner? I shall invite all my friends (*masc.*). 12. How much would you pay for this ring? I would pay what it is worth.

## THE THIRD CLASS.

DEFECTIVE VERBS (*Verbi Difettivi*).

The following verbs are called *defective* because they have not all the tenses or persons of the regular verbs. They should not be mistaken for the impersonal verbs, for which see Chap. XXIII., pp. 108-112.

Most of the following forms are obsolete (marked thus \*) and are to be avoided; but we give them in order to facilitate the reading of the old Italian classics.

Forms used only in poetry will be marked (p.).

Forms not given below do *not exist*.

*Infinitive.**Only Forms in Use.*1. \**Álgere, to freeze.*

PAST DEFINITE.

io\* *álsi.*égli\* *álse.*

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

\**algénte.*2. \**Ancídere, to kill.*

PAST PARTICIPLE.

*Ancíso* (p.).3. \**Ángere, to torment.*

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

égli \**ánge.*4. \**Arrógere, to add.*

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

égli\* *arróge.*

GERUND.

\**arrogéndo,*

IMPERATIVE.

\**arrógi.*

PAST DEFINITE.

io \**arrósi.*égli \**arróse.*églino \**arrósero.*

PAST PARTICIPLE.

\**arróso.*

*Infinitive.**Only Forms in Use.*5. \*Avéllere, *to draw out.*

PAST DEFINITE.

io \*avúlsi.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

\*avúlso.

6. \*Calére, *to be important.*

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

mi \*cále.

IMPERFECT.

mi \*caléva.

PAST DEFINITE.

mi \*cáse.

FUTURE.

mi \*calerà, or \*carrà.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

mi \*cágli.

IMPERFECT.

mi \*calésse.

CONDITIONAL.

mi \*carrébbe.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

\*calúto.

7. \*Conficere, *to consecrate.*

PAST PARTICIPLE.

\*confétto.

8. \*Circonflettere, *to bend round.*

PAST PARTICIPLE.

circonfléssso.

9. \*Conquídere (p.), *to conquer.*

PAST PARTICIPLE.

conquísso (p.).

10. \*Capére, *to hold.*

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

\*cápe.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

\*cáppia.

11. \*Colére, *to worship.*

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

io \*cólo.

égli \*cóle.

12. \*Fúlgere, *to shine.* See Rifúlgere, No. 24, p. 167.13. \*Genufléttere, *to kneel.*

PAST PARTICIPLE.

genufléssso.

14. Gíre (p.), *to go.*

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

vói gíte (p.).

IMPERFECT.

io gíva, gía (p.).

tu gívi (p.).

égli gíva (p.).

nói givámo (p.).

vói giváte (p.).

églino gívano, or gíano (p.).

IMPERATIVE.

gíte (p.) (vói).

CONDITIONAL.

io giréi (p.).

IMPERF. SUBJUNCTIVE.

ch'io gíssi (p.).

che tu gíssi (p.).

ch'égli gísse (p.).

*Infinitive.**Only Forms in Use.*

## PAST DEFINITE.

tu gísti (p.).  
 égli gi, gio (p.).  
 nói gímmo (p.).  
 vói gíste (p.).  
 églino gírono (p.).

## PAST PARTICIPLE.

gíto (p.).

## IMPERF. SUBJUNCTIVE.

che nói gíssimo (p.).  
 che vói gíste (p.).  
 ch' églino gíssero (p.).

## FUTURE.

io girò (p.).  
 égli girà (p.).  
 nói girémo (p.).  
 vói giréte (p.).  
 églino giránno (p.).

15. \**Inficere, to infect.*

## PAST PARTICIPLE.

\*infétto.

16. *Íre (p.), to go.*

## INDICATIVE PRESENT.

vói íte (p.).

## IMPERFECT.

égli íva (p.).  
 églino ívano (p.).

## PAST PARTICIPLE.

íto.

## IMPERATIVE.

íte (p.) (vói).

## FUTURE.

nói írémo (p.).  
 vói íréte (p.).  
 églino íránno (p.).

Only the following three compounds of *íre* have the same forms, *i. e.*, *adíre (p.), to inherit*; *circuíre (p.), to go about something*; and *\*contraíre, to oppose*. The other compounds are conjugated regularly, like *fioríre*. See p. 66.

17. *Lédere, to hurt.*

## PAST DEFINITE.

lési.

## PAST PARTICIPLE.

lésó.

18. \**Lícere, to be allowed.*

## INDICATIVE PRESENT.

líce (p.).

## PAST PARTICIPLE.

lécito,  
 lítito (p.).

19. \**Lúcere, to shine*, has no Past Participle. It is conjugated regularly in all its other Tenses, except the Past Definite, thus:

## PAST DEFINITE.

io lússi,	nói lucémmo,
tu lucésti,	vói lucéste,
égli lússe,	églino lússero.

- Infinitive.* *Only Forms in Use.*  
 20. \*Mérgere, to dip.

PAST DEFINITE.  
 io\* mérsi.

21. \*Olíre, to smell.

INDICATIVE IMPERFECT.  
 io olíva (p.). égli olíva (p.).  
 tu olívi (p.). églino olívano (p.).

22. \*Pándere, to manifest, to show.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.	SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.
tu *pándi.	égli *pánda.
égli *pánde.	

23. Redíre (p.), }  
 24. Riédere (p.), } to return.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.	SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.
io riédo (p.).	égli riéda (p.).
tu riédi (p.).	églino riédano (p.).
égli riéde (p.).	

25. Rifúlgere, to sparkle, has no Past Participle. All its other Tenses are regular, except the

PAST DEFINITE.  
 io rifúlsi. nói rifulgémmo.  
 tu rifulgésti. vói rifulgéste.  
 égli rifúlse. églino rifúlsero.

26. Rilúcere, to shine, is conjugated like *lúcere*. See above, No. 19.

27. \*Sérpere, to wind, has only the Present and Imperfect Tenses of the Indicative and Subjunctive Moods, and the Gerund, all formed regularly. It is obsolete. Serpeggiare is now used in its stead.

28. Solére, to be accustomed.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.	SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.
io sóglio.	ch' io sóglia.
tu suóli.	che tu sóglia.
égli suóle.	ch' égli sóglia.
nói sogliámo.	che nós sogliámo.
vói soléte.	che vói sogliáte.
églino sógliono.	ch' églino sógliono.

The Imperfect of both Moods is conjugated regularly:  
 io soléva, io soléssi, etc.

PAST PARTICIPLE.	GERUND.
sólito.	soléndo.

## EXERCISE XCII.

1. Io soglio vederlo a casa dell'ingegnere. 2. Dove sei tu solito parlargli? Io son solito parlargli alla passeggiata. 3. "Lucevan gli occhi suoi più d'una stella." 4. Come riluce quell'armadio! è stato ripulito da poco. 5. Quell'anello riluce perchè è d'oro. 6. Non mi cale punto s'egli non studia, sarà peggio per lui. 7. Non te ne deve calere, non è affar tuo. 8. Questo non è lecito. 9. Arrogi anche questo ai tuoi errori. 10. Noi eravamo tutti genuflessi in chiesa. 11. Egli è ito a trovarlo questa mattina. 12. Le stelle rilucevano d'uno splendore inusato.

1. I used to see him every morning at school. 2. He used to come to dinner with us every day. 3. Where are you accustomed to go to pass the evening? I am accustomed to pass the evening at home. 4. He is accustomed to see me every morning at the promenade. 5. That star shines very much to-night. 6. I like to see the stars shine at night. 7. What does it matter to you if he is gone away? It matters to me more than you think. 8. They (*fem.*) were all kneeling down in church. 9. Where are you going? I am going to see my friends (*masc.*). 10. That ring shines, but it is not gold. 11. It is not always gold that which shines. 12. Such a thing is not allowed in this country.



## ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

From the following list are excluded all those so-called Irregular Verbs whose irregularities have been explained on pp. 61-63.

Those marked thus \* have *also* the regular forms.

Those marked thus † are *Impersonal*.

Those marked thus ‡ are *Defective*.

Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
† Accadére, to hap- pen	accáde	accádde	accadrà	accadúto.
Accórgersi, to per- ceive	reg.	m' accórsi	reg.	accórto.
Accrécere, to in- crease	reg.	accrébbi	reg.	accresciúto.
Addúrre, to bring	addúco	addússi	reg.	addóto.
Affiggere, to affix	reg.	affíssi	reg.	affisso
Affliggere, to afflict	reg.	afflíssi	reg.	afflító.
Aggiúngere, to add	reg.	aggiúnsi	reg.	aggiúto.
‡ Álgere, to freeze	—	álsi, álse	—	{ Part. Pres. { algénte.
Amméttere, to admit	reg.	{ ammísi, { amméssi, { ammettéi	reg.	amméssó.
‡ Ancidere, to kill	—	—	—	anciso.
Andáre, to go	vo, vádo	reg.	andrò	reg.
‡ Ángere, to torment	ánge	—	—	—
Annéttere, to annex	reg.	reg.	reg.	annéssó.
* Apparíre, to ap- pear	apparísco	appárvi	reg.	appárso.
Appartenére, to belong	apparténgo	{ apparténni, { appartenéi	apparterrò	reg.
Apríre, to open	reg.	reg.	reg.	apérto.
‡ Arrógere, to add	arróge	arrósi	—	arróso.
Assalíre, to attack	assálgo	assálsi, assálii	reg.	reg.
Assístere, to assist	reg.	reg.	reg.	assistító.
Assólvere, to ab- solve	reg.	reg.	reg.	assólto.
Assórgere, to rise	reg.	assórsi	reg.	assórto.
Assumere, to assume	reg.	assúnsi	reg.	assúnto.
Asternérsi, to ab- stain	m' asténgo	{ m' asténni { m' astenéi	m' asterrò	astenuíto.
Astríngere, to compel	reg.	astrínsi	reg.	astrétto.
Attíngere, to attain	reg.	attínsi	reg.	attínto.
Attrárrre, to attract	attrággio	attrássi	attrarrò	attrátto.
‡ Avéllere, to draw out	—	avúlsi	—	avúlso.
Avére, to have	ho, ò	ébbi	avrò	avúto.

Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
Avvedérsi, <i>to be- come aware</i>	reg.	m' avvídí	m' avvedrò	reg.
Benedíre, <i>to bless</i>	benedíco	benedíssi	reg.	benedétto.
Bévere, <i>to drink</i>	reg.	bévvi, bevéi	reg.	reg.
Bére, <i>to drink</i>	béo	bévvi	reg.	beúto.
Cadére, <i>to fall</i>	reg.	cáddi	cadrò	reg.
†† Calére, <i>to be im- portant</i>	cále	cálse	calerà, car- rà	reg.
† Capére, <i>to hold</i>	cápe	—	—	—
Chiédere, <i>to ask</i>	{chiédo, chiéggo	chiési	reg.	chiéstó.
Cígnere, <i>to gird</i>	reg.	cínsi	reg.	cinto.
Cíngere, <i>to gird</i>	reg.	cínsi	reg.	cinto.
† Circonflettére, <i>to bend round</i>	—	—	—	circonfléssó.
Cógliere, <i>to gather</i>	cólgo	cólsi	coglierò, corrò	cólto.
† Colére, <i>to worship</i>	cólo, cóle	—	—	—
Comméttere, <i>to commit</i>	reg.	commísi, commettéi	reg.	comméssó.
Commuóvere, <i>to move</i>	reg.	commóssi	reg.	commóssó
Comparíre, <i>to ap- pear</i>	comparíseo	compárvi, comparíi	reg.	compárso, comparító.
Compiángere, <i>to pity</i>	reg.	compiánsi	reg.	compiántó.
*Compiere, <i>to finish</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	compító.
Compórre, <i>to com- pose</i>	compóngo	compósi	comporrò	compósto.
Comprimere, <i>to compress</i>	reg.	compréssi	reg.	compréssó.
Comprométtere, <i>to compromise</i>	reg.	compromísi, compromettéi	reg.	comproméssó.
Compúngere, <i>to regret</i>	reg.	compúnsi	reg.	compúntó.
*Concédere, <i>to grant</i>	reg.	concéssi	reg.	concéssó.
Concepíre, <i>to con- ceive</i>	{concepísco, concepísce, 3rd p. concépe, 3rd p.	reg.	reg.	concétto, con- cepító.
Condúrre, <i>to lead</i>	condúco	condússi	reg.	condóttó.
† Confícere, <i>to con- secrate</i>	—	—	—	confétto.
Configgere, <i>to nail</i>	reg.	confíssi	reg.	confítto.
Congiúngere, <i>to join</i>	reg.	congiúnsi	reg.	congiúntó.
Connéttere, <i>to con- nect</i>	reg.	connéssi	reg.	connéssó.
*Conóscere, <i>to know</i>	reg.	conóbbi	reg.	conosciúto.
† Conquílere, <i>to con- quer</i>	—	—	—	conquísó.

Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
Consumere, to <i>consume</i>	con-reg.	consúnsi,	reg.	consúnto.
Contenére, to <i>contain</i>	conténgo	conténni	conterrò	reg.
Contéssere, to <i>weave</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	contéstó.
Contórcere, to <i>twist</i>	reg.	contórsi	reg.	contórtó.
Contradíre, to <i>contradict</i>	contradíco	contradíssi	reg.	contradétto.
Contradistínguere, to <i>distinguish</i>	reg.	contradistínsi	reg.	contradistín-to.
Contraffáre, to <i>imitate</i>	contraffác-cio	contrafféci	contraffarò	contraffátto.
Contrárrere, to <i>contract</i>	contrággo	contrássi	reg.	contrátto.
Conveníre, to <i>agree</i>	convéngo	convénni	converrò	convenúto.
Convíncere, to <i>persuade</i>	reg.	convínsi	reg.	convínto.
Copríre, to <i>cover</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	copértó.
Corréggere, to <i>correct</i>	reg.	corréssi	reg.	corrétto.
Corrispóndere, to <i>correspond</i>	reg.	corrispósi	reg.	corrispóstó.
Corrómpere, to <i>corrupt</i>	reg.	corrúppi	reg.	corrótto.
Costríngere, to <i>compel</i>	reg.	costrínsi	reg.	costrétto.
Costruóre, to <i>construct</i>	costruísco	costrússi	{ costrurrò, costruirò	costrúto.
Créscere, to <i>grow</i>	reg.	crébbi	reg.	cresciúto.
Crocifíggere, to <i>cru-cify</i>	reg.	crocifíssi	reg.	{ crocifisso, crocifíto.
Cuócere, to <i>cook</i>	reg.	cóssi	{ cocerò, cuocerò	cóto.
Dáre, to <i>give</i>	do.	diédi	darò	reg.
Decadére, to <i>decay</i>	reg.	decáddi	decadrò	reg.
Decréscere, to <i>decrease</i>	reg.	decrébbi	reg.	decresciúto.
Dedúrrere, to <i>deduct</i>	dedúco	dedússi	reg.	dedótto.
Depórrere, to <i>depose</i>	depóngo	depósi	reg.	depóstó.
Deprímere, to <i>depress</i>	reg.	depréssi	reg.	depréssó.
Desístere, to <i>desist</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	desistíto.
Desúmere, to <i>assume, to conclude</i>	reg.	desúnsi	reg.	desúnto.
Detrárrere, to <i>detract</i>	detrággo	detrássi	reg.	detrátto.
Diméttere, to <i>dismiss</i>	reg.	dimísi	reg.	diméssó.
Dipíngere, to <i>paint</i>	reg.	dipínsi	reg.	dipínto.
Díre, to <i>say</i>	díco	díssi	reg.	détto.
Diríggere, to <i>direct</i>	reg.	diréssi	reg.	dirétto.
Dirómpere, to <i>rush out</i>	reg.	dirúppi	reg.	dirótto.

Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
Disciogliere, <i>to untie</i>	disciòlgo	disciòlsi	disciorrò, discioglierò	disciòlto.
Discutere, <i>to discuss</i>	discut- reg.	discússi	reg.	discússo.
Disfare, <i>to undo</i>	disfaccio	disféci	disfarò	disfátto.
Disgiungere, <i>to join</i>	disgi- reg.	disgiúnsi	reg.	disgiúnto.
Disporre, <i>to dispose</i>	dispóngo	dispósi	reg.	dispósto.
Distinguere, <i>to distinguish</i>	dist- reg.	distínsi	reg.	distínto.
Distogliere, <i>to tract</i>	distòlgo	distòlsi	distoglierò, distorrò	distólto.
Distorcere, <i>to twist, to distort</i>	reg.	distórsi	reg.	distórto.
Distrarre, <i>to tract</i>	distrággo	distrássi	reg.	distrátto.
Distruggere, <i>to destroy</i>	reg.	distrússi	reg.	distrútto.
Divolgere, <i>to unfold</i>	divól- reg.	divól- reg.	reg.	divólto.
Divellere, <i>to root up</i>	—	divél- reg.	—	divélto.
Divenire, <i>to become</i>	divéngo	divénni	diverrò	divenúto
Dolere, <i>to ache</i>	dólgo	dólsi	dorrò	reg.
Dovere, <i>to be obliged</i>	ob- liged	{ dévo, déb- bo, dég- gio	dovéi, dovetti dovrò	reg.
Eliggere, <i>to elect</i>	reg.	eléssi	reg.	elétto.
Erigere, <i>to erect</i>	erigo, érgo	eréssi, érsi	erigerò, er- gerò	erétto.
Esaurire, <i>to exhaust</i>	esaurisco	reg.	reg.	esauríto, esaústo.
Esigere, <i>to exact</i>	reg.	esigéi, esigétti	reg.	esátto.
Esistere, <i>to exist</i>	reg.	esistéi, esis- tétti	reg.	esistíto.
Espellere, <i>to expel</i>	reg.	espúl- reg.	reg.	espúlso.
Esprimere, <i>to express</i>	reg.	espréssi	reg.	espréssso.
Essere, <i>to be</i>	éono	fúi	sarò	státto.
Estinguere, <i>to extinguish</i>	reg.	estínsi	reg.	estínto.
Estollere, <i>to extol</i>	estólgo	estòlsi	reg.	estólto.
Estrarre, <i>to extract</i>	estrággo	estrássi	reg.	estrátto.
Fare, <i>to do, to make</i>	fo, fáccio	féci	farò	fátto.
*Fendere, <i>to split</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	féssso.
Figgere, <i>to fix</i>	reg.	fissi	reg.	fisso, fítto.
Fingere, <i>to feign</i>	reg.	fínsi	reg.	fínto.
Fléttere, <i>to bend</i>	reg.	fléssi	reg.	fléssso.
Frangere, <i>to break</i>	reg.	fránsi	reg.	fránto.
Frapporre, <i>to put between</i>	frappóngo	frappósi	reg.	frappósto.

Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
Friggere, <i>to fry</i>	reg.	fríssi	reg.	frítto.
†Fulgere, <i>to shine</i>	reg.	fulsi	reg.	—
†Genufléttere, <i>to kneel down</i>	—	—	—	genufléssco.
Giacére, <i>to lie down</i>	giaccio	giacqui	reg.	giaciúto.
†Gíre, <i>to go</i>	gíte	gísti, gí	girò	gíto.
Giúgnere, <i>to join</i>	reg.	giúnsi	reg.	giúnto.
Giüngere, <i>to arrive</i>	reg.	giúnsi	reg.	giúnto.
Immérgere, <i>to immerse, to plunge</i>	reg.	immérsi	reg.	immérso.
Impéllere, <i>to excite</i>	reg.	impúlsi	reg.	impúlso.
Impórre, <i>to impose</i>	impóngo	impósi	reg.	impósto.
Imprimere, <i>to imprint</i>	reg.	impréssi	reg.	impréssco.
Incréscere, <i>to increase</i>	reg.	incrébbi	reg.	incresciúto.
Incútere, <i>to instil</i>	reg.	incússi	reg.	incússo.
Indícere, <i>to intimate</i>	reg.	indíssi	indirò	indétto.
Indúlgeré, <i>to indulge</i>	reg.	indúlsi	reg.	indúlto.
Indúrre, <i>to induce</i>	indúco	indússi	reg.	indótto.
†Inficere, <i>to infect</i>	—	—	—	infétto.
Infíggere, <i>to affix</i>	reg.	infíssi	reg.	infítto.
Infléttere, <i>to bend</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	infléssco.
Inflíggere, <i>to inflit</i>	reg.	inflíssi	reg.	inflítto.
Infrángere, <i>to break</i>	reg.	infránsi	reg.	infránto.
Infringere, <i>to infringe</i>	reg.	infrínsi	reg.	infrínto.
Insístere, <i>to insist</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	insistíto.
Insórgere, <i>to revolt</i>	reg.	insórsi	reg.	insórto.
Instruíre, <i>to instruct</i>	instruísco	instrússi	reg.	{ instruíto, instrútto.
Intíngere, <i>to dip</i>	reg.	intínsi	reg.	intínto.
Invólgere, <i>to involve</i>	reg.	invólsi	reg.	invólto.
†Íre, <i>to go</i>	íte (2 per. pl.)	—	irémo (pl. only.)	íto.
Istruíre, <i>to instruct</i>	istruísco	istrússi	reg.	istruíto, istrútto.
†Lédere, <i>to hurt</i>	—	lési	—	lésco.
Léggere, <i>to read</i>	reg.	léssi	reg.	létto.
†Licere, <i>to be allowed</i>	líce	—	—	lécito.
†Lúcere, <i>to shine</i>	reg.	lússi	reg.	—
Maledíre, <i>to curse</i>	maledíco	maledíssi	reg.	maledétto.
†Mérgere, <i>to dip</i>	—	mersi	—	—
Méttere, <i>to put</i>	reg.	mísi	reg.	méssco.
Moríre, <i>to die</i>	muóio	reg.	morirò, morrò	mórto.

Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
Múngere, <i>to milk</i>	reg.	múnsi	reg.	múnto.
Muóvere, <i>to move</i>	reg.	móssi	reg.	móssso.
Nascóndere, <i>to hide</i>	reg.	nascósi	reg.	nascóso, nas- cóstó.
Neglígere, <i>to neglect</i>	reg.	negléssi	reg.	neglétto.
Néttere, <i>to join</i>	reg.	néssi	reg.	néssso.
Offeríre, <i>to offer</i>	offerísco	reg.	reg.	offértó.
Offríre, <i>to offer</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	offértó.
†Olíre, <i>to smell</i>	<i>the Imperfect Tense only (regular).</i>			
Ométtere, <i>to omit</i>	reg.	omísi	reg.	oméssso.
Oppórrere, <i>to oppose</i>	oppóngó	oppósi	opporrò	oppóstó.
Opprímere, <i>to op- press</i>	reg.	oppréssi	reg.	oppréssso.
Ottenére, <i>to obtain</i>	otténgo	otténni	otterrò	reg.
†Pándere, <i>to show</i>	pándi, pándé.	pándá 3 per.	<i>Present Subjunctive.</i>	
Parére, <i>to seem</i>	páio	párvi	parrò	parúto, pársso.
Percuótere, <i>to strike</i>	reg.	percóssi	reg.	percóssso.
Perinéttere, <i>to allow</i>	reg.	permísi	reg.	perméssso.
Persístere, <i>to per- sist</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	persistíto.
Perveníre, <i>to suc- ceed</i>	pervéngo	pervénni	perverrò	pervenúto.
Piángere, <i>to cry</i>	reg.	piánsi	reg.	piántó.
Píngere, <i>to paint</i>	reg.	pínsi	reg.	píntó.
†Pióvere, <i>to rain</i>	reg.	pióvvé	reg.	reg.
Pórgere, <i>to hand</i>	reg.	pórsi	reg.	pórtó.
Pórrere, <i>to put</i>	póngó	pósi	porrò	póstó.
Possedére, <i>to pos- sess</i>	{posséggó {possiédo	{possedéi, {possedétti	{possederò, {possedrò	possedúto.
Potére, <i>to be able</i>	póssó	potéi, potétti	potrò	reg.
Predíre, <i>to foretell</i>	predíco	predíssi	reg.	predétto.
Prefiggere, <i>to prefix</i>	reg.	prefíssi	reg.	prefíssso.
Presúmere, <i>to pre- sume</i>	reg.	{presúnsi, {presuméi	reg.	presúntó.
Prevalére, <i>to prevail</i>	preválgo	preválsi	prevarrò	preválsso, pre- valúto.
*Prevedére, <i>to fore- see</i>	prevéggo	prevídi	prevedrò	prevístó.
Prodúrre, <i>to pro- duce</i>	prodúco	prodússi	reg.	prodótto.
Prométtere, <i>to pro- mise</i>	reg.	promísi	reg.	proméssso.
Promuóvere, <i>to pro- mote</i>	reg.	promóssi	reg.	promóssso.
Prorómperere, <i>to burst forth</i>	reg.	prorúppi	reg.	prorótto.
Protéggere, <i>to pro- tect</i>	reg.	protéssi	reg.	protétto.
Púngere, <i>to prick</i>	reg.	púnsi	reg.	púntó.

Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
Raccogliere, <i>to pick up</i>	raccólgo	raccólsi	{ raccoglièrò, raccólto. raccorrò	
Raggiungere, <i>to overtake</i>	reg.	raggiúnsi	reg.	raggiúnto.
*Ravvedersi, <i>to repent</i>	{ mi rav- véggio	mi ravvídi	mi rav- vedrò.	ravvísto.
Redimere, <i>to deem</i>	reg.	redénsi	reg.	redénto.
†Redire, } <i>to return</i>	riédo	Sing. only, and riéda, riédano Pr. Subj.		
†Riédere, }				
Réggere, <i>to rule</i>	reg.	réssi	reg.	rétto.
Repellere, <i>to repel</i>	reg.	repúlси	reg.	repúlso.
Reprimere, <i>to press</i>	reg.	représsi,	reg.	représsó.
Rescindere, <i>to cut off, to rescind</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	rescíssó.
Resistere, <i>to resist</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	resistító.
Respingere, <i>to push back</i>	reg.	respínsi	reg.	respínto.
Restringere, <i>to strain</i>	re-reg.	restrínsi	reg.	ristréttö.
Riassumere, <i>to take up again.</i>	reg.	riassúnsi	reg.	riassúnto.
Richiedere, <i>to quest</i>	reg.	richiéси	reg.	richiésto.
Riconoscere, <i>to cognise</i>	reg.	riconóbbi	reg.	riconosciúto.
Ricuocere, <i>to cook over again</i>	reg.	ricóssi	reg.	ricóttö.
Ridurre, <i>to reduce</i>	ridúco	ridússi	ridurrò	ridóttö.
Rifare, <i>to make again</i>	rifáccio	riféci	rifarò	rifátto.
*Riflettere, <i>to reflect, to refract</i>	reg.	{ riflettéи (re- flected) riflessi (re- verberated)	rifletterò	{ riflettúto (re- flected) rifléssó, (re- verberated.)
Rifrangere, <i>to refract</i>	reg.	rifránsi	reg.	rifránto.
†Rifulgere, <i>to sparkle</i>	reg.	rifúlси	reg.	—
†Rilucere, <i>to shine</i>	reg.	rilússi	reg.	—
Rimanere, <i>to remain</i>	rimángo	rimási	rimarrò	rimásto.
Rimettere, <i>to put back, to replace</i>	reg.	rimási	reg.	riméssó.
Rimuovere, <i>to move</i>	reg.	rimóssi	reg.	rimósso.
†Rincrescere, <i>to gret</i>	reg.	rincrébbi	reg.	rincresciúto.
Risalire, <i>to ascend again, to remount</i>	risálgo	reg.	reg.	reg.

Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
Riscuotere, <i>to exact payment</i>	reg.	riscóssi	reg.	riscóssó.
*Risolvere, <i>to resolve</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	risolúto.
Risorgere, <i>to rise again</i>	reg.	risórsi	reg.	risórto.
Rispondere, <i>to answer</i>	reg.	rispósi	reg.	rispósto.
Ristringere, <i>to restrain</i>	reg.	ristrínsi	reg.	ristrétto.
Ritingere, <i>to colour again</i>	reg.	ritínsi	reg.	ritínto.
Ritorcere, <i>to twist again</i>	reg.	ritórsi	reg.	ritórto.
Riuscire, <i>to succeed</i>	riésco	reg.	reg.	reg.
Rivedere, <i>to see again</i>	rivéggo	rivídi	rivedrò	rivisto, rivedúto.
Rompere, <i>to break</i>	reg.	rúppi	reg.	róttö.
Salire, <i>to ascend</i>	sálgo, <sup>SCO</sup> salí-	reg.	reg.	reg.
Sapere, <i>to know</i>	so	séppi	saprò	reg.
Scalfire, <i>to scratch</i>	scalfísco	reg.	reg.	scalfitto.
Scogliere, <i>to choose</i>	scélgó	scélsi	sceglierò, scerrò	scéltó.
Sciognere, <i>to ungird</i>	scíngere, reg.	scínsi	reg.	scínto.
Sciogliere, <i>to untie</i>	sciólgó	sciólsi	scioglierò, sciorrò	scióltó.
Scommettere, <i>to bet</i>	reg.	scommísi	reg.	scomméssó.
Sconfiggere, <i>to defeat</i>	reg.	sconfíssi	reg.	sconfitto.
Sconnettere, <i>to disjoin</i>	reg.	sconnéssi	reg.	sconnéssó.
Sconoscere, <i>to be ungrateful</i>	reg.	sconóbbi	reg.	sconosciúto.
Sconvolgere, <i>to overturn</i>	reg.	sconvólsi	reg.	sconvóltó.
Scorgere, <i>to perceive</i>	reg.	scórsi	reg.	scórto.
Scrivere, <i>to write</i>	reg.	scríssi	reg.	scrítto.
Scuotere, <i>to shake</i>	reg.	scóssi	reg.	scóssó.
Sedere, <i>to sit down</i>	{séggo {siédo	{sedéi, {sedétti	reg.	reg.
Sedurre, <i>to seduce</i>	sedúco	sedússi	reg.	sedóttö.
*Seppellire, <i>to bury</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	sepóttö.
†Serpere, <i>to creep along</i>	sérpe, 3 p.	sérpa, 3 per. Pr. Subj.		
Smungere, <i>to squeeze</i>	smúngo	smúnsi	reg.	smúnto.
Smuovere, <i>to move with difficulty</i>	reg.	smóssi	reg.	smóssó.



Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
Sofferire, <i>to suffer</i>	sofferisco	reg.	reg.	sofférto.
Soffrire, <i>to suffer</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	sofférto.
Soggiungere, <i>to add</i>	reg.	soggiúnsi	reg.	soggiúnto.
‡Solére, <i>to be accus- tomed</i>	sóglío	—	—	sólito.
Solvere, <i>to dissolve</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	solúto.
Sommèttre, <i>to sub- mit</i>	reg.	sommísi	reg.	somméssó.
Sopprimere, <i>to sup- press</i>	reg.	soppréssi	reg.	soppréssó.
Sopraggiungere, <i>to overtake</i>	reg.	sopraggiúnsi	reg.	sopraggiúnto.
Soprapporre, <i>to put upon</i>	soprappón- go	soprappósi	reg.	soprappósto.
Soprastare, <i>to stand over</i>	reg.	soprastétti	reg.	reg.
Sorgere, <i>to rise</i>	reg.	sórsi	reg.	sórtó.
Sospingere, <i>to push</i>	reg.	sospínsi	reg.	sospínto.
Sostenere, <i>to sus- tain</i>	sosténgo	sosténni	sosterrò	reg.
Sottomettere, <i>to sub- mit</i>	reg.	sottomísi	reg.	sottoméssó.
Sottoporre, <i>to put under</i>	sottopóngo	sottopósi	reg.	sottopósto.
Sottostare, <i>to be under</i>	reg.	sottostétti	sottostarò	reg.
Sottrarre, <i>to sub- tract</i>	sottrággo	sottrássi	reg.	sottrátto.
Sovrapporre, <i>to put upon</i>	sovrappón- go	sovrappósi	reg.	sovrappósto.
Sovrastare, <i>to stand over</i>	reg.	sovrastétti	reg.	reg.
Sovvenire, <i>to help</i>	sovvéngo	sovvénni	soverrò	sovvenúto.
Sovvenirsi, <i>to re- member</i>	mi sovvén- go	mi sovvénni	mi sover- rò	sovvenútosí.
Spandere, <i>to spread</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	spánto.
Spégnere, <i>to extin- guish</i>	spéngo	spénsi	reg.	spénto.
Spingere, <i>to push</i>	reg.	spínsi	reg.	spínto.
Stare, <i>to stand</i>	sto	stétti	starò	státó.
Stingere, <i>to take off the colour</i>	reg.	stínsi	reg.	stínto.
Stórcere, <i>to distort</i>	reg.	stórsi	reg.	stórtó.
Stravólgere, <i>to dis- tort violently</i>	reg.	stravólsi	reg.	stravólto.
Stringere, <i>to press</i>	reg.	strínsi	reg.	stretto.
Strúggere, <i>to melt</i>	reg.	strússi	reg.	strúttó.
Strúggersi, <i>to die away, to fade</i>	reg.	mi strússi	reg.	strúttosi.
*Succédere, <i>to suc- ceed</i>	reg.	succéssi	reg.	succéssó.
Súggere, <i>to suck</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	succhiátó.
Supporre, <i>to suppose</i>	suppóngo	suppósi	reg.	suppósto.

Infinitive.	Present.	Definite.	Future.	Past Part.
Sussistere, to <i>sub-</i> <i>sist</i>	reg.	sussistí, sus-	reg.	sussistíto.
Svellere, to <i>uproot</i>	reg.	svélsi	svellerò, sverrò	svélto.
Svenire, to <i>swoon</i>	svéngo	svénni	reg.	svenúto.
Svólgera, to <i>unfold</i>	reg.	svólsi	reg.	svólto.
Tenere, to <i>hold</i>	téngo	ténni	terrò	reg.
Tingere, to <i>colour</i>	reg.	tínsi	reg.	tínto.
Togliere, to <i>take off</i>	tólgo	tólsi	torrò, to- glierò	tólto.
Torcere, to <i>twist</i>	reg.	tórsi	reg.	tórtto.
*Tosare, to <i>shear</i>	reg.	reg.	reg.	tóso.
Tradurre, to <i>trans-</i> <i>late</i>	tradúco	tradússi	reg.	tradóttto.
Traffiggere, to <i>trans-</i> <i>fix</i>	reg.	trafíssi	reg.	trafítto.
Trarre, to <i>draw</i>	trággo	trássi	trarrò	trátto.
Travolgere, to <i>up-</i> <i>set, to turn topsy-</i> <i>turvy</i>	reg.	travólsi	reg.	travólto.
Udire, to <i>hear</i>	ódo	udí	udrò, udirò	udíto.
Ungere, to <i>anoint</i>	reg.	únsi	reg.	únto.
Uscire, to <i>go out</i>	éscó	uscí	reg.	reg.
Valere, to <i>be worth</i>	válgo	válsi	varrò, vale- rò	válso, valúto.
Vedere, to <i>see</i>	védo, véggo, véggio	vídi	vedrò	vedúto, vísto.
Venire, to <i>come</i>	véngo	vénni	verrò	venúto.
Vincere, to <i>win</i>	reg.	vínsi	reg.	vínto.
Vivere, to <i>live</i>	reg.	víssi	vivrò	vísso, vissúto.
Volere, to <i>be willing</i>	vóghio, vo'	vólli, vólsi	vorro	volúto.
Vólgera, to <i>turn</i>	reg.	vólsi	volgerò	vólto.

# VOCABULARIES.

## List of Abbreviations.

A.	=	Arabic.	interj.	=	interjection.
A.-S.		Anglo-Saxon.	irr. v.		irregular verb.
acc.		accusative.	L.		Latin.
adj.		adjective.	L.L.		Low Latin.
adv.		adverb.	m.		masculine.
C.		Chinese.	O.F.		Old French.
Ce.		Celtic.	n.		noun.
conj.		conjunction.	O.G.		Old German.
D.		Dutch.	M.G.		Middle German.
dim.		diminutive.	P.		Portuguese.
E.		English.	Per.		Persian.
etym.		etymology.	part.		past participle.
f.		feminine.	pl.		plural.
F.		French.	Pr.		Provençal.
G.		German.	prep.		preposition.
gen.		genitive.	pron. v.		pronominal verb.
Gr.		Greek.	R.		Russian.
I.		Italian.	S.		Spanish.
imp. v.		impersonal verb.	v.		verb.

N.B.—Words followed only by their gender are nouns.

NOTE.—The etymology of the Italian words is given after the English meanings. When derived from the Latin they were generally formed from the Accusative case, but as the final *m* was dropped they have often the form of the Ablative. In the list below, the Latin is given in the Nominative case. When the French words have the same origin as the Italian, they are frequently added.

### Vocabulary 1.

amíco, <i>m., friend,</i>	
<i>m.</i>	(L. amicus.)
amíca, <i>f., friend, f.</i>	(L. amica.)
cámara, <i>f., room.</i>	(L. camera.)
cáne, <i>m., dog.</i>	(L. canis.)
céra, <i>f., wax.</i>	(L. cera.)
mádre, <i>f., mother.</i>	(L. mater.)
orológio, <i>m., watch.</i>	(L. horologium.)
pádre, <i>m., father.</i>	(L. pater.)
uómo, <i>m., man.</i>	(L. homo.)
zío, <i>m., uncle.</i>	(L.L. thius, thia,
zía, <i>f., aunt.</i>	from Gr. θεῖος,
	θεία. So also
	S. tio, tia.)

### Vocabulary 2.

alliévo, <i>m., pupil.</i>	(From <i>v.</i> alle-
alliéva, <i>f., pupil, f.</i>	váre, <i>to bring</i>
	<i>up.</i> So also
	F. élève, from
	élever.)

coltéllo, <i>m., knife.</i>	(L. cultellus,
	<i>dim.</i> of culter.)
ósso, <i>m., bone.</i>	(L. os, ossis.)
zúcchero, <i>m., sugar.</i>	(L. saccharum.)

### Vocabulary 3.

ágo, <i>m., needle.</i>	(L. acus.)
cása, <i>f., house.</i>	(L.L. casa.)
cavállo, <i>m., horse.</i>	(L. caballus.)
dónna, <i>f., woman.</i>	(L. domina.)
frúto, <i>m., fruit.</i>	(L. fructus.)
frúta, <i>f. pl., fruits.</i>	
máno, <i>f., hand.</i>	(L. manus.)
móglie, <i>f., wife.</i>	(L. mulier.)
podére, <i>m., estate.</i>	(Prob. from root
	pot in L. pot-is, pot-estas.
pórta, <i>f., door.</i>	(L. porta.)
rágno, <i>m., spider.</i>	(L. araneus.)
sorélla, <i>f., sister.</i>	(L. soror.)
spécchio, <i>m., look-</i>	(L. speculum.)
<i>ing-glass.</i>	

uóvo, *m.*, egg. (L. ovum.)  
uóva, *f. pl.*, eggs.

## Vocabulary 4.

aráncia, *f.*, orange. (A. nârang.)  
asciugamáno, *m.*, towel. (From  
asciugare, to wipe dry; mano,  
hand.)\*  
cappéllo, *m.*, hat. (I. cappa, "a  
hooded cloak.")†  
díto, *m.*, finger. (L. digitus.)  
díta, *f. pl.*, fingers.  
figlia, *f.*, daughter. (L. filia.)  
figlio, *m.*, son. (L. filius.)  
finéstra, *f.*, win- (L. fenestra.)  
dow.  
forchéttá, *f.*, fork. (L. furca.)  
fratéllo, *m.*, brother. (L. frater.)  
nóce, *f.*, walnut. (L. nux.)  
sapóne, *m.*, soap. (L. sapo, -nis.)  
spázzola, *f.*, brush. (L. scopula.)

## Vocabulary 5.

árte, *f.*, art. (L. ars, artis.)  
colóre, *m.*, colour. (L. color.)  
cugíno, *f.*, cousin, *f.* (L.L. cosinus.)  
cugíno, *m.*, cousin, Contraction  
*m.* of L. consobrinus.)  
fáccia, *f.*, face. (L. facies.)  
giardíno, *m.*, garden. (G. garten.)  
libro, *m.*, book. (L. liber.)  
pittóre, *m.*, painter. (L. pictor.)  
scímia, *f.*, monkey. (L. simia.)  
sédia, *f.*, chair. (L. sedes.)  
strído, *m.*, cry. (L. stridor.)  
strída, *f. pl.*, cries.

## Vocabulary 6.

anéllo, *m.*, ring. (L. anulus.)  
bastóne, *m.*, stick. (I. basto.)‡  
giornále, *m.*, news- (L. diurnalis;  
paper. F. journal.)

\* *Asciugare*, from L. *exsucare*, "to deprive of juice;" hence "to dry," from *sucus*, "juice." Hence also F. *essuyer*, "to dry."

† *Cappa*, *cappéllo*, probably comes, not from Latin *caput*, but from the verb *capere*, "to hold," because it encloses or covers; hence also F. *chapeau*.

‡ *Basto*, "a pack-saddle," is probably from a root meaning "to support" (Gr. *βαστάζειν*; O.G. and A.-S. *bat*). So in F. *bâton*.

pénna, *f.*, pen. (L. penna.)  
quádro, *m.*, paint- (L. quadra.)  
ing.

## Vocabulary 7.

albérgo, *m.*, hotel. (O.G. heribergera,  
*military station*. G. her-  
berge, *inn*.  
F. auberge.)  
chiésa, *f.*, church. (Gr. and L.  
ecclesia.)  
città, *f.*, town, city. (L. civitas.)  
dottóre, *m.*, doctor. (L. doctor.)  
ferrovía, *f.*, rail- (L. ferrum,  
way. iron; via,  
road.)  
ostería, *f.*, inn. (I. oste, from  
L. hospes.)  
sérvó, *m.*, servant. (L. servus.)  
speziále, *m.*, chem- (I. spezie, *spi-*  
ist. ces, from L.  
species.)  
stráda, *f.*, st-reet, (L. strata, *pl.* of  
road. stratum, *pave-*  
ment, from  
sternere.)  
távola, *f.*, table. (L. tabula.)  
teátro, *m.*, theatre. (Gr. and L.  
theatrum.)

## Vocabulary 8.

áacqua, *f.*, water. (L. aqua.)  
bírra, *f.*, beer. (G. bier.)  
butirro, *m.*, butter. (L. butyrum.)  
cárne, *f.*, meat. (L. caro, car-  
nis.)  
danáro, *m.*, money. (L. denarius.)  
formággio, *m.*, (L.L. forma-  
cheese. ticum, from L.  
forma, because  
made in a  
mould; F. fro-  
mage.)  
látte, *m.*, milk. (L. lac, lactis.)  
páne, *m.*, bread. (L. panis.)  
péra, *f.*, pear. (L. pirum.)  
tè, *m.*, tea. (C. te.)  
víno, *m.*, wine. (L. vinum.)

## Vocabulary 9.

ábito, *m.*, dress, (L. habitus; F.  
coat. habit.)

acciaío, <i>m.</i> , steel.	(L.L. <i>aciare</i> , <i>acierium</i> , from <i>acies</i> , sc. <i>ferri</i> , <i>i.e.</i> hardened iron; F. <i>acier</i> .)
bicchière, <i>m.</i> , a glass.	(L.L. <i>bicarium</i> ; G. <i>becher</i> .)
bottiglia, <i>f.</i> , bottle.	(L.L. <i>buticula</i> ; F. <i>bouteille</i> .)*
caffè, <i>m.</i> , coffee.	(A. <i>qahuah</i> .)
cioccoláta, <i>f.</i> , cho- colate.	(S. <i>chocolate</i> , from Mexican <i>cacuatl</i> , <i>çacao</i> .)
ébano, <i>m.</i> , ebony.	(L. <i>ebenum</i> .)
légno, <i>m.</i> , wood.	(L. <i>lignum</i> .)
mármó, <i>m.</i> , marble.	(L. <i>marmor</i> .)
óro, <i>m.</i> , gold.	(L. <i>aurum</i> .)
pèlle, <i>f.</i> , skin.	(L. <i>pellis</i> .)
séta, <i>f.</i> , silk.	(L. <i>seta</i> , <i>hair</i> ; F. <i>soie</i> .)
spáda, <i>f.</i> , sword.	(L. <i>spatha</i> ; F. <i>épée</i> .)
stivále, <i>m.</i> , boot.	(L. L. <i>acsti- vale</i> .)†
tázza, <i>f.</i> , cup.	(A. <i>taça</i> ; F. <i>tasse</i> .)

## Vocabulary 10.

Alberto, <i>m.</i> , Albert.	
América, <i>f.</i> , America.	
Ásia, <i>f.</i> , Asia.	
Bélgio, <i>m.</i> , Belgium.	
Berlino, <i>f.</i> , Berlin.	
Brasile, <i>m.</i> , Brazil.	
capitale, <i>f.</i> , capital.	(L. <i>caput</i> .)
Cárló, <i>m.</i> , Charles.	(L. <i>Carolus</i> .)
Cína, <i>f.</i> , China.	
Drésda, <i>f.</i> , Dresden.	
Emma, <i>f.</i> , Emma.	
Európa, <i>f.</i> , Europe.	
Frância, <i>f.</i> , France.	
Germania, <i>f.</i> , Ger- many,	
Giovánni, <i>m.</i> , John.	(L. <i>Johannes</i> .)
guánto, <i>m.</i> , glove.	(L.L. <i>guantus</i> ; Swedish and Danish, <i>vante</i> ; F. <i>gant</i> .)

\* The root of this word occurs in several languages: I. *botte*, "a cask;" F. *botte*; Gr. *βούτις*, *butis*; G. *butte*; E. *butt*.

† *acstivale*, from *aestas*, "summer," be-  
cause worn in summer; hence G. *stiefel*.

Inghiltérta, <i>f.</i> , Eng- land.	
Lóndra, <i>f.</i> , London.	
María, <i>f.</i> , Mary.	
Miláno, <i>f.</i> , Milan.	
Olánda, <i>f.</i> , Holland.	
Parígi, <i>f.</i> , Paris.	
Piétro, <i>m.</i> , Peter.	(L. <i>Petrus</i> .)
Róma, <i>f.</i> , Rome.	
Rússia, <i>f.</i> , Russia.	
Sassónia, <i>f.</i> , Saxony.	
signóra, <i>f.</i> , Mrs., lady.	(L. <i>senior</i> ; S. <i>señor</i> ; F. <i>sei- gneur</i> .)
signóre, <i>m.</i> , Mr., gentleman, sir,	
Sofia, <i>f.</i> , Soph'a.	(Gr. <i>Sophia</i> .)

## Vocabulary 11.

(In this vocabulary the idioms given on p. 19 are not repeated.)	
calamáio, <i>m.</i> , ink- stand.	(L. <i>calamus</i> .)
cáldo, <i>adj.</i> , warm.	(L. <i>calidus</i> .)
cárta, <i>f.</i> , paper.	(L. <i>charta</i> .)
cattívo, <i>adj.</i> , bad.	(L. <i>captivus</i> , <i>taken</i> ; hence in Italian, unfor- tunate, miserably bad; E. <i>caitif</i> .)
céra, complexion (also wax. See Voc. I.)	
ciriégia, <i>f.</i> , cherry.	(L. <i>cerasum</i> .)
collána, <i>f.</i> , chain.	(L. <i>collum</i> , <i>neck</i> ; hence a chain for the neck.)
disgrázia, <i>f.</i> , mis- fortune.	(L. <i>gratia</i> .)
fáme, <i>f.</i> , hunger.	(L. <i>fames</i> .)
fíco, <i>m.</i> , fig, fig-tree.	(L. <i>ficus</i> .)
fóglio, <i>m.</i> , sheet (of paper).	(L. <i>folium</i> , <i>leaf</i> .)
fréddo, <i>adj.</i> , cold.	(L. <i>frigidus</i> .)
frétta, <i>f.</i> , haste.	(I. <i>frettare</i> , to <i>rub</i> , from L. <i>fricare</i> .)
giudízio, <i>m.</i> , judg- ment.	(L. <i>judicium</i> .)
léttera, <i>f.</i> , letter.	(L. <i>littera</i> .)
líra, <i>f.</i> , Ital. money, worth about 10d., (same as a franc).	(L. <i>libra</i> .)
málo, <i>adj.</i> , bad.	(L. <i>mālus</i> .)
méla, <i>f.</i> , apple.	(L. <i>mālum</i> .)
mén-te, <i>f.</i> , memory.	(L. <i>mens</i> .)
orecchíno, <i>m.</i> , ear- ring.	(I. <i>orecchio</i> , ear; from L. <i>auricula</i> , <i>dim. of auris</i> .)

paziénza, *f.*, *patience*. (L. *patientia*.)  
 paúra, *f.*, *fear*. (L. *pavor*.)  
 regálo, *m.*, *present*. (L. *regulare*, to  
*thaw*; S. *regalar*, to *melt*,  
 hence to *coax*; F. *régaler*.)  
 scárpa, *f.*, *shoe*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 séte, *f.*, *thirst*. (L. *sitis*.)  
 vógliá, *f.*, *wish*. (L. *volo*.)

### Vocabulary 12.

(In this Vocabulary the idioms  
 given on p. 24 are not repeated.)

accórdo, *m.*, *agree-* (L. *accordare*,  
*ment*. from *ad* and  
*cor*, *cordis*,  
*heart*.)  
 bálla, *m.*, *ball*. (O.G. *ballo*; E.  
*bail*.)  
 buóno, *adj.*, *good*. (L. *bonus*.)  
 campáña, *f.*, *field*, (L. *campania*,  
*country*. from *campus*,  
*a plain*.)  
 cantína, *f.*, *cellar*. (L. *quintana*;  
 F. *cantine*.)  
 capitáno, *m.*, *captain*. (L. *caput*,  
*capitis*.)  
 carrózza, *f.*, *carri-* (I. *carro*; L.  
*age*. *carrus*.)  
 concétto, *m.*, *thought*. (L. *concep-*  
*esteem*, *character*. *tus*.)  
 disaccórdo, *m.*, *dis-* (L. *discordare*.)  
*agreement*.  
 esercizio, *m.*, *exer-* (L. *exercitium*.)  
*cise*.  
 éssere, *irr. v.*, to *be*. (L. *esse*.)  
 fébbre, *f.*, *fever*. (L. *febris*.)  
 fuóri, *prep.*, *out of*, (L. *foras*, *out*  
*outside*. of *doors*.)  
 grádo, *m.*, *step*, *will*, (L. *gradus*.)  
*pleasure*.  
 Itália, *f.*, *Italy*. (L. *Italia*.)  
 lezióne, *f.*, *lesson*. (L. *lectio-nis*.)  
 librería, *f.*, *library*. (L. *liber*.)  
 médico, *m.*, *physi-* (L. *medicus*.)  
*cian*.  
 mercáto, *m.*, *market*. (L. *mercatus*.)  
 órđine, *m.*, *order*. (L. *ordo-inis*.)  
 párco, *m.*, *park*. (L. *L. parcus*,  
 from *parco*, to  
*keep preserves*.)

\* Probably a Teutonic word: G. *scharf*,  
 E. *sharp*; the Italian *scarpa*, "shoe," is so  
 called because pointed.

passeggiáta, *f.*, *pro-* (I. *passaggiare*,  
*menade*, *walk*. from L. *pas-*  
*sus*.)  
 póco, *adj.* and *adv.*, (L. *paucus*.)  
*little*.  
 pránzó, *m.*, *dinner*. (L. *prandium*.)  
 procínto, (in) *irr.* (L. *procinctus*,  
*adv.*, on the point. *prepared*.)  
 ragióne, *f.*, *reason*, *right*. (L. *ratio*.)  
 scála, *f.*, *stairs*. (L. *scala*.)  
 sérva, *f.*, *maid ser-* (L. *sérva*.)  
*vant*.  
 témpo, *m.*, *time*, (L. *tempus*.)  
*weather*.  
 términe, *m.*, *position*. (L. *terminus*.)  
 tétto, *m.*, *roof*. (L. *tectum*.)  
 tórtó, *m.*, *wrong*. (L. *tortus*.)

### Vocabulary 13.

affettúoso, *adj.*, *af-* (L. *affectuo-*  
*fectionate*. *sus*.)  
 álto, *adj.*, *high*, *tall*, (L. *altus*.)  
*loud*.  
 amáro, *adj.*, *bitter*. (L. *amarus*.)  
 applaudíto, *part.* (L. *applaudere*.)  
*of applaudire*,  
*to applaud*.  
 attóre, *m.*, *actor*. (L. *actor*.)  
 attríce, *f.*, *actress*. (L. *actrix*,  
*-icis*.)  
 battágliá, *f.*, *battle*. (L.L. *batalia*;  
 F. *bataille*.)  
 bíanco, *adj.*, *white*. (A Teutonic  
 word; \* F. *blanc*.)  
 bígio, *adj.*, *grey*. (L.L. *bisus*; F. *biz*,  
*perh.* from L. *hys-*  
*sus*, *cotton colour*.)  
 canále, *m.*, *canal*. (L. *canalis*.)  
 fábbro, *m.*, *black-* (L. *faber*.)  
*smith*.  
 famígliá, *f.*, *family*. (L. *familia*.)  
 felíce, *adj.*, *happy*. (L. *felix*, *-icis*.)  
 frésco, *adj.*, *fresh*. (O.G. *frisc*; E.  
*new*. *fresh*; F. *fraís*.)  
 giòvine, *adj.*, *young*; (L. *juvenis*.)  
*n.*, *young man*.  
 gónfio, *adj.*, *swollen*. (L. *conflare*;  
 F. *gonfler*.)  
 gránde, *adj.*, *great*, (L. *grandis*.)  
*tall*, *large*.

\* O.G. *blanch*; M.G. *blanc*; E. to  
*blanche*; connected with G. *blinken*, to  
*glitter*; F. *blink*.

guância, *f.*, *cheek*. (O.G. wanga.)  
 lúngo, *adj.*, *long*. (L. longus.)  
 maestro, *m.*, *master*. (L. magister.)  
 néro, *adj.*, *black*. (L. niger.)  
 nóнна, *f.*, *grand-mother*. (L.L. nonna.)  
 nóнно, *m.*, *grand-father*. (L. nonnus.)  
 nuóvo, *adj.*, *new*. (L. novus.)  
 píccolo, *adj.*, *small*. (Romance, *pic* "a point.")  
 pittrice, *f.*, *painter*. (L. pictor.)  
 pózzo, *m.*, (*a well*). (L. puteus.)  
 profóndo, *adj.*, *deep*. (L. profundus.)  
 prudénte, *adj.*, *prudent*. (L. prudens, *gen. -ntis*.)  
 quércia, *f.*, *oak*. (L. quercus.)  
 sécco, *adj.*, *dry*, *thin*. (L. siccus.)  
 sevéro, *adj.*, *severe*. (L. severus.)  
 traditóra, *f.*, *traitress*. (L. traditor.)  
 traditóre, *m.*, *traitor*. (L. traditor.)  
 véchho (also veglio), (*adj. and n.*, *old man*). (L. vetulus, *veclus*.)  
 vincitóre, *m.*, also (*as adj.*, *victorious*). (L. victor, from *vincere*.)  
 Vittório, *m.*, *Victor*. (L. victor.)

## Vocabulary 14.

bélló, *contr.* *bel*, (*L. bellus*).  
*adj.*, *beautiful*.  
 fióre, *m.*, *flower*. (L. flos, floris.)  
 inglése, *adj. and s.*, (*E. English*).  
*Englishman*.  
 italiáno, *adj. and s.*, (*L. Italia*).  
*Italian*.  
 língua, *f.*, *tongue*, (*L. lingua*).  
*language*.  
 principále, *adj.*, (*L. principalis*).  
*principal*.  
 rícco, *adj.*, *rich*. (G. reich.)  
 rósa, *f.*, *rose*. (L. rosa.)  
 róssó, *adj.*, *red*. (L. russus, rare, *akin to ruber*.)  
 Toríno, *m.*, *Turin*. (L. Augusta Taurinorum.)  
 úva, *f.*, *grape*. (L. uva.)  
 villággio, *m.*, *village*. (L.L. villaticum from *L. villa*; *F. village*.)  
 vióla, *f.*, *violet*. (L. viola.)

## Vocabulary 15.

banchiére, *m.*, *banker*. (I. banca; O.G. banc.)  
 benévolo, *benevo-lénte, adj.*, *benevolent*. (L. benevolus.)  
 búe, *m.*, *ox*. (L. bos.)  
 cáro, *adj.*, *dear*. (L. carus.)  
 elefánte, *m.*, *elephant*. (Gr. and L. elephas, *-antis*.)  
 età, *estáte, summer*. (L. aestas, *aestatis*.)  
 fórte, *adj.*, *strong*. (L. fortis.)  
 fortuna, *f.*, *fortune*. (L. fortuna.)  
 gátto, *m.*, *cat*. (L. catus.)  
 giòrno, *m.*, *day*. (L. diurnus.)  
 gráto, *adj.*, *pleasant, grateful*. (L. gratus.)  
 intégro, *adj.*, *honest*. (L. integer.)  
 íntimo, *adj.*, *intimate*. (L. intimus.)  
 invérno, *m.*, *winter*. (L. hibernus.)  
 lárgo, *adj.*, *wide*. (L. largus.)  
 leóne, *m.*, *lion*. (L. leo, *-nis*.)  
 lume, *m.*, *light*. (L. lumen.)  
 lúna, *f.*, *moon*. (L. luna.)  
 lúpo, *m.*, *wolf*. (L. lupus.)  
 nótte, *f.*, *night*. (L. nox, noctis.)  
 númeroso, *adj.*, *numerous*. (L. numerosus.)  
 ragázzo, *m.*, *boy*. (L. raga.)\*  
 ragázza, *f.*, *girl*.  
 scoláre, *m.*, *pupil*. (L. schola.)  
 térra, *f.*, *earth*. (L. terra.)  
 (The words in brackets are modifications of nouns or adjectives; the force of the terminations is explained on pp. 34-35. Several words already given in the vocabularies are here repeated, on account of the modifications.)  
 addormentáto, *part.*, (*L. dormire*).  
*asleep*.  
 aggrinzíto, *part.*, (I. grinza; Teutonic word.)  
*wrinkled*.  
 amáro (amarógnolo, *L. amarus*).  
 amarástro, *adj.*, *bitter*.  
 anéllo (anellíno, *L. anulus*).  
 anellúccio, *m.*, *ring*.  
 árbore (arboscéllo, *L. arbor*).  
 arbústo, *m.*, *trec*.

\* Gr. páκος, páκη, "a ragged garment," *L. raga* in Cod. Theod.; hence one who wears such garment, a slave or boy, like *puer*, which has both meanings.

- béllo** (bellíno, bel- (L. bellus.)  
 lúccio), *adj.*, *beau-  
 tiful*.  
**bicchíere** (bicchie- (L.L. bicarium;  
 ríno, bicchieróne), G. becher.)  
*m., a glass*.  
**bóscó** (boschéttó), (L.L. boscus,  
*m., wood*. buscus, from G.  
 busch, "bush.")  
**brúttó** (bruttáccio), (L. brutus.)  
*adj., ugly*.  
**cámara** (camerétta, (L. camera.)  
 cameráccia), *f.*,  
 cameróne, *m., cham-  
 ber*.  
**cané** (caníno, ca- (L. canis.)  
 gnolino, canóne,  
 canáccio), *m., dog*.  
**capéllo** (capellíno, (L. capillus.)  
 capellúccio, capel-  
 lóne), *m., hair*.  
**cappéllo** (cappel- (For *etym.* see  
 lúccio, cappellác- *Voc.* 4.)  
 cio), *m., hat*.  
**cápro**, **cápra** (ca- (L. caper, ca-  
 prétta, caprettína, pra.)  
 capróne), *m. and f.*,  
*goat*.  
**cúsa** (casétta, casúc- (L. L. casa,  
 cia, casáccia), *f.*, Wallou casë.)  
 casóne, *m., house*.  
**cavállo** (cavallúccio, (L. caballus.)  
 cavalláccio), *m.*,  
*horse*.  
**cucína** (cucináccia), (L. culina.)  
*f., kitchen*.  
**érba** (erbétta, er- (L. herba.)  
 báccia), *f., grass*.  
**farfállo** (farfallétta), (\*)  
*f., butterfly*.  
**fióre** (fiorello, fiorel- (L. flos, floris.)  
 líno), *m., flower*.  
**fra**, *prep., among*. (L. infra.)  
**fratéllo** (fratellíno, (L. frater.)  
 fratellúccio, fra-  
 tellóne), *m., brother*.  
**gátto**, **gátta** (gattúcc- (L. catus.)  
 cia, gattíno, gat-  
 tóne), *m. and f.*,  
*cat*.  
**giállo** (giallógno), (G. gelb; akin  
*adj., yellow*. to L. galba-  
 nus, whence  
 F. jaune.)  
**gióvine** (giovinétto, (L. juvenis.)  
 gioviuótto, gio-  
 vinástro) *a dj.*,  
*young; young  
 man*.  
**inanellátó**, *part.*, (L. anulatus.)  
*curled*.  
**libro** (librétto, li- (L. liber.)  
 brúccio, libri-  
 cino, libráccio,  
 libróne, libret-  
 tín o, librettácc-  
 cio), *m., book*.  
**lúpo**, **lúpa** (lupicino, (L. lupus.)  
 lupáccio), *m. and  
 f., wolf*.  
**máno** (manína, ma- (L. manus.)  
 náccia), *f., hand*,  
 manóne, *m.*.  
**máre**, *m., sea*. (L. mare.)  
**médico** (medicón- (L. medicus.)  
 zolo, medicóne,  
 medicástro), *m.*,  
*physician*.  
**náve**, (navicélla), (L. navis.)  
*f., ship*.  
**néro** (nerógnolo, (L. niger.)  
 nerástro), *adj.*,  
*black*.  
**nócciolo** (nocciolétto), (L. nucleus.)  
*m., stone of fruit*.  
**pássero**, **pássera** (pas- (L. passer.)  
 serótto), *m. and f.*,  
*sparrow*.  
**pécora** (pecorélla, (L. pecus, pe-  
 pecorúccia), *f.*, coris.)  
 (pecoróne), *m.*,  
*sheep*.  
**pesánto**, *adj., heavy*. (L. pensare.)  
**pésca**, *f., peach*. (L. persicum,  
 persica; hence  
 Fr. pêche.)  
**piánta** (pianticélla), (L. planta.)  
*f., plant*.  
**piccolo** (piccolíno), (For *etym.* see  
*adj., small*. *Voc.* 13.)  
**piéno**, *adj., full*. (L. plenus.)  
**pittóre** (pittorúccio, (L. pictor.)  
 pittoráccio), *m.*,  
*painter*.  
**pittúra**, *f., painting*. (L. pictura.)

\* From L. *papilio*, "a butterfly," comes  
 I. *parpaglióne*; and probably through the  
 influence of O.G. *fifaltra*, "a butterfly,"  
 farfaglions, farfállo; the Wallon is *fer-  
 falé*.



póvero (poveréllo, (L. pauper.)  
poverétto, pove-  
rino, poveráccio),  
adj., *poor*.  
práto (praticélllo), (L. pratum.)  
m., *meadow, field*.  
quádro (quadrétto, (L. quadrum,  
quadrúccio, quad- "a square,"  
ráccio, quadret- hence F.  
tíno), m., *paint- cadre "a*  
ing, picture. frame.")  
quércia (quercétta), (L. quercus.)  
f., (quercíone), m., *oak*.  
ragázso (ragazzíno, (See p. 183,  
ragazzétto, ragaz- note \*)  
záccio), m., *boy*.  
rícco (riccóno), adj., (G. reich.)  
*rich*.  
róssso (rossíccio, ros- (L. russus, rare;  
sástro), adj., *red*. Wallon ros.)  
Sáffo, f., *Sappho*, (Gr. and L.  
proper name. Sappho.)  
sorélla (sorellína), (L. soror.)  
f., *sister*.  
távola (tavalíno, ta- (L. tabula.)  
volóne, m., tavo-  
lúccia, tavolác-  
cia), f., *table*.  
vecchio (vecchiétto, (L. vetulus.  
vecchiótto, vec- See Voc. 13.)  
chierélllo, vec-  
chióne, vecchiác-  
cio), adj. and n.,  
*old, old man*.  
víno (vinétto, vinác- (L. vinum.)  
cio), m., *wine*.  
Vittório (Vittoríno), (L. victor.)  
m., *Victor*.

## Vocabulary 16.

allégro, adj., *merry*. (L. alacer, gen.  
alacris.)  
genitóre, m., *father*. (L. genitor.)  
iéri, adv., *yesterday*. (L. heri.)  
séra, f., *evening*. (L. serus.)

## Vocabulary 17.

diffícile, adj., *diffi-* (L. difficilis.)  
*cult*.  
matúro, adj., *ripe*. (L. maturus.)

## Vocabulary 18.

améno, adj., *plea-* (L. amoenus.)  
*sant*.

música, f., *music*. (L. musica, from  
Gr. musike.)  
studénte, m., *student*. (L. studens,  
gen. -entis.)  
vía, f., *way, road*. (L. via.)

## Vocabulary 19.

ánno, f., *year*. (L. annus.)  
compagnia, f., *com-* (I. compagno,  
pany. from L.L. com-  
panium, from cum  
and panis, bread.)  
esposizióne, f., *ex-* (L. expositio,  
hibition. expositionis.)  
età, f., *age*. (L. aetas, -atis.)  
mése, m., *month*. (L. mensis.)  
óra, f., *hour*. (L. hora.)  
reggiménto, m., *re-* (L. regimen-  
giment. tum.)  
scuóla, f., *school*. (L. schola.)  
settimána, f., *week*. (L. septimana.)  
soldáto, m., *soldier*. (I. soldo, pay,  
from L. solidus, a coin.)

## Vocabulary 20.

(The names of the months, the  
days of the week, and of the sea-  
sons are given on p. 44.)  
África, f., *Africa*. (L. ~~Africa~~.)  
clásse, f., *class*. (L. classis.)  
concérto, m., *con-* (L. concertare.)  
*cert*.  
contemporáneo, adj., (L. contempo-  
contemporaneous. raneus.)  
córto, adj., *short*. (L. curtus.)  
dólce, adj., *mild, sweet*. (L. dulcis.)  
Emanuéle, m., (L. fr. Heb.  
Emmanuel. Emmanuel.)  
Francésco, m., (L. Franciscus.)  
Francis.  
Gugliélmo, m., (L.L. Willelmus  
William. and Gulielmus,  
from O. G. Willelm.)  
Napoléone, m.,  
Napoleon.  
piáno, m., *floor*. (L. planus.)  
Sant' Élena, f., *Saint* (L. Helena.)  
Helena.  
último, adj., *last*. (L. ultimus.)

## Vocabulary 21.

(The Indefinite Adjectives are  
given on p. 46.)  
cósá, f., *thing*. (L.L. causa, "a  
thing.")

fiámma, *f.*, *flame*. (L. flamma.)  
 minúto, *m.*, *minute*. (L. minutum.)  
 mortále, *adj.*, *mortal*. (L. mortalis.)  
 persóna, *f.*, *person*. (L. persona.)

## Vocabulary 22.

(No words.)

## Vocabulary 23.

abitúdiñe, *f.*, *habit*. (L. habitudo.)  
 ammaláto, *adj.*, *ill*. (I. malato; F. malade; from L. malus.)  
 ángolo, *m.*, *corner*. (L. angulus.)  
 annoiáre, *v.*, *to annoy*. (I. noja; F. ennui; from L. in odio, as in est mihi in odio.)  
 António, *m.*, *Anthony*. (L. Antonius.)  
 arriváre, *v.*, *to arrive*. (L.L. adripare.)  
 arrósto, *m.*, *roast*. (I. rostire; F. rôtir, from O.G. rostjan "to roast.")  
 azióne, *f.*, *action*. (L. actio, -nis.)  
 básta! *interj.*, *enough*. (I. bastare, "to be sufficient.")  
 biasimáre, *v.*, *to blame*. (L. blasphemare; F. blâmer.)  
 bottegáio, *m.*, *shopkeeper*. (I. bottega; F. boutique; from Gr. and L. apotheca.)  
 calunniáre, *v.*, *to calumny*. (L. calumniare.)  
 cambiále, *f.*, *bill of exchange*. (L.L. cambiare, S. cambiar; F. changer.)  
 cantáre, *v.*, *to sing*. (L. cantare.)  
 cantatrice, *f.*, *singer*. (L. cantatrix.)  
 cercáre, *v.*, *to seek*. (L. circare, "to go round;" F. chercher.)  
 cóme, *conj.* and *adv.*, (L. quomodo.)  
*as, how.*  
 compráre, *v.*, *to buy*. (L. comparare.)  
 conseguénza, *f.*, *consequence*. (L. consequentia.)  
 contadino, *m.*, *peasant*. (I. contado, country; from I. conte; from L. comes.)

débito, *m.*, *debt*. (L. debitum.)  
 domandáre (or di-mandáre), *v.*, *to ask*. (L. demandare, "to entrust.")  
 duétto, *m.*, *duet*. (L. duo.)  
 duránte, *adv.*, *during*. (L. durans, gen. -antis.)  
 fáre, *irr. v.*, *to do*, *to make*. (L. facere.)  
 generóso, *adj.*, *generous*. (L. generosus.)  
 gráno, *m.*, *wheat*. (L. granum.)  
 imparáre, *v.*, *to learn*. (L. parare.)  
 incontráre, *v.*, *to meet*. (L. contra.)  
 infingárdo, *adj.*, *lazy, slothful*. (I. fingere; O. F. faint, "lazy.")  
 insaláta, *f.*, *salad*. (I. salare; F. salade, fr. L. sal, "salt.")  
 invecchiáre, *v.*, *to become old*. (I. vecchio. See Voc. 13.)  
 láménto, *m.*, *complaint*. (L. lamentum.)  
 lodáre, *v.*, *to praise*. (L. laudare.)  
 mále, *m.*, *evil, pain*. (L. malum.)  
 mangiáre, *v.*, *to eat*. (L. manducare; F. manger.)  
 mattína, *f.*, *morning*. (L. matutinus.)  
 mestiére, *m.*, *handicraft*. (L. ministerium; F. métier.)  
 mólto, *adv* and *adj.*, *much*. (L. multum.)  
 natále, *adj.*, *native*. (L. natalis.)  
 nemíco, *m.*, *enemy*. (L. inimicus.)  
 ombréilo, *m.*, *umbrella*. (L. umbra, from umbra.)  
 onoráre, *v.*, *to honour*. (L. honorare.)  
 orribile, *adj.*, *horrible*. (L. horribilis.)  
 paése, *m.*, *country*. (L. pagensis, "a farm," from pagus.)  
 pagáre, *v.*, *to pay*. (L. pacare, "to appease.")  
 parláre, *v.*, *to speak*. (L.L. parabolare.)\*  
 passéggio, *m.*, *promenade*. (See passeggiata, Voc. 12.)  
 pensáre, *v.*, *to think*. (L. pensare.)

\* From Gr. and L. parabola, "a parable," hence "word" or "speech;" I. parola; F. parole; palabra, whence E. palaver.

perdonáre, *v.*, to (L. per and  
*pardon.* donare, lit. "to  
 give thoroughly.")

pésce, *m.*, fish. (L. piscis.)

poesía, *f.*, poetry. (L. poësis.)

portáre, *v.*, to bring, (L. portare.)  
*to carry.*

pósta, *f.*, post.\* (L. positus.)

présto, *adv.*, quickly. (L. praestus.)

quándo, *adv.*, when. (L. quando.)

ritádo, *m.*, delay. (L. retardare.)

ritornáre, *v.*, to re- (L. tornare.)  
*turn.*

saláme, *m.*, ham, (L. sale; from  
*salt meat.* L. sal.)

scátola, *f.*, box. (G. schachtel.)

scórso, *part.*, last, (L. scorrere.)  
*past.*

seusáre, *v.*, to ex- (L. excusare.)  
*cuse.*

semináre, *v.*, to sow. (L. seminare.)

sémpre, *adv.*, always. (L. semper.)

stamattína, *adv.*, (L. questa mat-  
*this morning.* tina; L. ma-  
 tutinus.)

stasséra, *adv.*, this (L. questa sera;  
*evening.* from L. serus.)

studiáre, *v.*, to study. (L. studere.)

studióso, *adj.*, stu- (L. studiosus.)  
*dious.*

téstá, *f.*, head. (L. testa; F.  
*tête.*)

trováre, *v.*, to find. (L. turbare, "to  
 move, to seek  
 for," hence  
 "to find," F.  
 trouver.)

umóre, *m.*, humour. (L. humor.)

vacánza, *f.*, vacancy, (L. vacare.)  
*leisure, holiday.*

vóce, *f.*, voice. (L. vox, vocis.)

volentiéri, *adv.*, (L. voluntarie.)  
*willingly.*

volúme, *m.*, volume. (L. volumen.)

### Vocabulary 24.

abbastánza, *adv.*, (L. bastare; see  
*enough.* Voc. 23.)

adémpiere, *v.*, to (L. empire; from  
*fulfil.* L. implere.)

árdere, *v.*, to burn. (L. ardere.)

ária, *f.*, air. (L. aër.)

báttere, *v.*, to beat. (L. batuere.)

bráccio, *m.*, arm. (L. brachium.)

cadére, *v. irr.*, to fall. (L. cadere.)

chiúdere, *v.*, to shut. (L. claudere.)

conosciúto, *known*, (L. cognos-  
*part. of* conoscere. cere.)

discéndere, *v.*, to (L. descen-  
*descend.* dere.)

discórrere, *v.*, to (L. discurrere.)  
*talk, to discourse.*

divídere, *v.*, to (L. dividere.)  
*divide.*

duéllo, *m.*, duel. (L. duellum;  
*F. duel.*)

educazióne, *f.*, edu- (L. educatio.)  
*cation.*

fuóco, *m.*, fire. (L. focus.)

gámba, *f.*, leg. (L.L. gamba;  
*F. jambe.*)

generále, *m.*, gene- (L. generalis.)  
*ral.*

giocáre, *v.*, to play. (L. jocus.)

godére, *v.*, to enjoy. (L. gaudere.)

guadagnáre, *v.*, to (O.G. weidanjan,  
*win, to gain.* and G. weiden,  
 "to hunt, to  
 pasture:"  
 hence also F.  
 gagner; E. gain.)

guérria, *f.*, war. (O.G. werra.)

infóndere, *v.*, to in- (L. fundere.)  
*fuse.*

incórrere, *v.* oin- (L. incurrere.)  
*cur.*

inténdere, *v.*, to (L. intendere.)  
*understand, to*  
*hear.*

intrapréndere, *v.*, to (L. intra, pre-  
*undertake.* hendere.)

invádere, *v.*, to in- (L. invadere.)  
*vade.*

lavoráre, *v.*, to work. (L. laborare.)

lédere, *irr. v.*, to (L. laedere.)  
*injure.*

medicína, *f.*, medi- (L. medicina.)  
*cine.*

mórdere, *v.*, to bite. (L. mordere.)

mostráre, *v.*, to (L. monstrare.)  
*show.*

offéndere, *v.*, to (L. offendere.)  
*offend.*

párte, *f.*, portion. (L. pars.)

parténza, *f.*, depar- (L. partire. See  
*ture.* Voc. 25.)

\* Because of the relays of horses placed  
 for the service of the post.

pérdere, *v.*, to lose. (L. perdere.)  
 piacere, *m.*, pleasure. (L. placere.)  
*sure.*  
 piáento, *m.*, tears, (L. planctus.)  
*crying.*  
 re, *m*, king. (L. rex, regis.)  
 riaccéndere, *v.*, to (L. accendere.)  
*light again.*  
 ricévere, *v.*, to (L. recipere;  
*receive.* F. recevoir.)  
 rimproveráre, *v.*, (L. L. repropriadere;  
*to blame, to re-* F. reprocher.)  
*proach.*  
 rispóndere, *v.*, to (L. respondere.)  
*reply.*  
 sorridere, *v.*, to (L. subridere.)  
*smile.*  
 sospéndere, *v.*, to (L. suspendere.)  
*suspend.*  
 spéndere, *v.*, to ex- (L. expendere.)  
*pend.*  
 speráre, *v.*, to hope. (L. sperare.)  
 succédere, *v.*, to suc- (L. succedere.)  
*ceed.*  
 térgere, *v.*, to wipe, (L. tergere.)  
*to dry.*  
 uccídere, *v.*, to kill. (L. occidere.)  
 véndere, *v.*, to sell. (L. vendere.)  
 virtù, *f.*, virtue. (L. virtus.)  
 víta, *f.*, life. (L. vita.)

## Vocabulary 25.

arricchíre, *v.*, to en- I. ricco. See  
*rich.* Voc. 13.)  
 arrossíre, *v.*, to blush. (L. rursus. See  
 Voc. 14, 15.)  
 bollíre, *v.*, to boil. (L. ebullire.)  
 consíglío, *m.*, ad- (L. consilium.)  
*vice.*  
 cucíre, *v.*, to sew. (L. consuere.)  
 dormíre, *v.*, to sleep. (L. dormire.)  
 fuggíre, *v.*, to fly, (L. fugere.)  
*to run away.*  
 impallidíre, *v.*, to (L. pallidus.)  
*become pale.*  
 infingardággine, *f.*, (I. infingardo.  
*laziness.* See Voc. 23.)  
 inghiottíre, *v.*, to (L. glutire; F.  
*swallow.* englutir.)  
 mánica, *f.*, sleeve. (L. manica.)  
 mentíre, *v.*, to lie. (L. mentiri.)  
 onésto, *adj.*, honest. (L. honestus.)  
 partíre, *v.*, to depart. (L. partire.)  
 puníre, *v.*, to punish. (L. punire.)

ruggíre, *v.*, to roar. (L. rugire.)  
 sdrucíre, *v.*, to tear, (L. resuere.)\*  
*to rend.*  
 seguíre, *v.*, to follow. (L. sequi.)  
 servíre, *v.*, to serve. (L. servire.)  
 tossíre, *v.*, to cough. (L. tussire.)

## Vocabulary 23.

calzoláio, *m.*, shoe- (L. calceola-  
*maker.* rius.)  
 dománi, *adv.*, to- (I. mane, from L.  
*tomorrow.* mane; F. demain.)  
 esaminatóre, *m.*, (L. examiner.)  
*examiner.*  
 fáto, *part.*, done, (L. factum.)  
*made.*  
 insegnáre, *v.*, to (L. L. insignare;  
*teach.* F. enseigner.)  
 premio, *m.*, prize. (L. praemium.)  
 scríto, *part.*, written. (L. scriptum.)  
 scrívere, *v.*, irr., to (L. scribere.)  
*write.*  
 scúdo, *m.*, dollar, (L. scutum.)  
*crown.*

## Vocabulary 27.

(In this vocabulary the verbs  
 given on p. 71 are not repeated.)

ascoltáre, *v.*, to listen. (L. auscul-  
*tare.*)  
 béne, *adv.*, well. (L. bene.)  
 confidénza, *f.*, trust. (L. confiden-  
*tia.*)  
 cuóre, *m.*, heart. (L. cor.)  
 méglío, *m.*, better (the). (L. melior.)  
 occasióne, *f.*, occa- (L. occasio, gen.  
*sion.* -nis.)  
 onestà, *f.*, honesty. (L. honestas.)  
 pregáre, *v.*, to pray. (L. precari.)  
 provérbio, *m.*, pro- (L. prover-  
*verb.* bium.)  
 richiésta, *f.*, request. (L. requisita, *f.*,  
*part.* of re-  
*quirere*; F.  
*requête.*)  
 risórsa, *f.*, resource, (I. risorta, *part.*  
*expedient.* of risorgere.)

## Vocabulary 28.

(In this vocabulary the verbs  
 given on p. 72 are not repeated.)

\* Like I. cucire, to sew, from L. consuere,  
 with *s* privative and *d* euphonic.

bisógno, *m.*, *want*, (I. sogna, 'care,'  
need. from L. L. soniare,  
'to take care of,'  
etym. doubtful;  
F. besoin.)

francése, *adj.*, *French*. (F. français.)  
salúte, *f.*, *health*. (L. salus, -utis.)  
sóldo, *m.*, *penny*, (L. solidus;  
half-penny. F. sou.)  
terlino, *adj.*, *sterling*. (E. sterling.)

## Vocabulary 29.

(In this vocabulary the verbs  
given on p. 73 are not repeated.)

austriaco, *adj.*, *Aus-* (G. Oester-  
trian. reich.)

béue, *m.*, *good*. (L. bene.)

domínio, *m.*, *domi-* (L. dominium.)  
nation.

gréco, *adj.*, *Greek*. (L. Graecus.)

latíno, *adj.*, *Latin*. (L. Latinus.)

levánte, *m.*, *east*. (L. and I. levare,  
'to rise' (of the sun).)

Lombardía, *f.*, *Lom-* (L. Longo-  
bardy. bardi.)

montáña, *f.*, *moun-* (L. montanus.)  
tain.

página, *f.*, *page*. (L. pagina.)

paróla, *f.*, *word*. (L. parabola;  
F. parole.  
See Voc. 23.)

Réno, *m.*, *Rhine*. (G. Rhein.)

Svízzeria, *f.*, *Swit-* (G. Schweiz.)  
zerland.

tiráre, *v.*, *to blow* (O.G. tairan, *to*  
(of winds). draw; F. tirer.)

vénto, *m.*, *wind*. (L. ventus.)

vérbo, *m.*, *verb*. (L. verbum.)

## Vocabulary 30.

(In this vocabulary the verbs  
given on p. 74 are not repeated.)

Amléto, *m.*, *Hamlet*.

apríre, *v.*, *to open*. (L. aperire.)

aspétto, *m.*, *appear-* (L. aspectus.)  
ance.

dovére, *m.*, *duty*. (L. debere.)

entráre, *v.*, *to enter*. (L. intrare.)

Evangélo, *m.*, (L. evangelium.)  
Gospel.

rappresentazióne, *f.*, (L. repraesen-  
tation. tatio, -nis.)

scácco, *m.*, *chess*. (Per. schah,  
king.)

stória, *f.*, *history* (L. historia.)  
story, fable.

zóppo, *adj.*, *lame*. (G. schupfen.)

## Vocabulary 31.

dáte, *v.*, *you give*. (L. dare.)

firmáre, *v.*, *to sign*. (L. firmare.)

mandáre, *v.*, *to send*. (L. mandare.)

ringraziáménto, *m.*, (I. ringraziare.  
thanks. See Voc. 32.)

súdicio, *adj.*, *dirty*. (L. succidus.)

supérbo, *adj.*, (L. superbus.)  
proud.

## Vocabulary 32.

accompagnáre, *v.*, (I. compagnia.  
to accompany. See Voc. 19.)

cameriére, *m.*, *wai-* (I. and L. car-  
ter, a *f.*, waitress. mera.)

conóscere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. cognos-  
know. cere.)

crédere, *v.*, *to believe*. (L. credere.)

détto, *part.*, *said*. (L. dictum,  
from dicere.)

díssi, dísse, *said*, (L. dicere,  
past def. of díre, perf. dixi.)

*irr. v.*

dolére, *v.*, *to pain*, (L. dolere.)  
to hurt.

piacére, *v.*, *to please*. (L. placere.)

probáble, *adj.*, *pro-* (L. probabilis.)  
bable.

raccomandáre, *v.*, (L. commendare.)  
to recommend.

ringraziáre, *v.*, *to* (I. grazia; L.  
thank. gratia.)

urtáre, *v.*, *to hurt*. (M.G. hurten,  
prob. fr. Cel-  
tic "hwrth,"  
to push.)

vedére, *v. irr.*, *to see*. (L. videre.)

veníre, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. venire.)  
come.

## Vocabulary 33.

afáre, *m.*, *business*. (I. a fare; L.  
facere.)

aiutáre, *v.*, *to help*. (L. adjuvare.)

conténto, *adj.*, *con-* (L. contentus.)  
tent.

díco, *pres. ind.* of (L. dico, di-  
irr. v., díre, *to say*. cere.)

divertiménto, *m.*, (L. *divertere*.)  
*amusement.*  
 dótto, *adj.*, *learned*. (L. *doctus*.)  
 nascóndere, *irr. v.*, (L. *abscondere*.)  
*to hide.*  
 occupáto, *part.*, (L. *occupatus*.)  
*busy, occupied.*  
 stúdio, *m.*, *study*. (L. *studium*.)  
 ubbidire, *v.*, *to obey*. (L. *obedire*.)  
 veritá, *f.*, *truth*. (L. *veritas*.)

#### Vocabulary 34.

província, *f.*, *pro-* (L. *provincia*.)  
*vince.*  
 vicino, *adj.*, *neigh-* (L. *vicinus*.)  
*bouring.*

#### Vocabulary 35.

guardáre, *v.*, *to look*. (G. *warten*.)

#### Vocabulary 36.

corriére, *m.*, *courier*. (L. *currere*.)  
 fucile, *m.*, *gun*. (I. *fuoco*, from  
 L. *focus*.)  
 indigestióne, *f.*, *in-* (L. *indigestio*,  
*digestion.* *gen. -nis*.)  
 malattía, *f.*, *illness*. (I. *malato*.)  
 See Voc. 23.)  
 préndere, *v.*, *to* (L. *prehendere*.)  
*take.*  
 proveníre, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. *provenire*.)  
*originate.*  
 sígaro, *m.*, *cigar*. (S. *cigarro*.)

#### Vocabulary 37.

architétto, *m.*, *ar-* (L. *architect-*  
*chitect.* *tus*.)  
 comúne, *adj.*, *mu-* (L. *communis*.)  
*tual.*  
 educáto, *part.*, *edu-* (L. *educare*.)  
*cated.*  
 meritáre, *v.*, *to de-* (L. *meritum*.)  
*serve.*  
 mórtē, *f.*, *death*. (L. *mors*, *mor-*  
*tis*.)  
 rispétto, *m.*, *respect*. (L. *respectus*.)

#### Vocabulary 38.

chiúnque, *pron.*, (L. *quicum-*  
*whosoever.* *que*.)  
 cervéllo, *m.*, *brain*, (L. *cerebellum*.)  
*opinion.*

desideráre, *v.*, *to* (L. *desiderare*.)  
*covet, to wish.*  
 difétto, *m.*, *fault*. (L. *defectus*.)  
 ozióso, *adj.*, *lazy*. (L. *otium*.)  
 stimáre, *v.*, *to* (L. *aestimare*.)  
*esteem.*  
 valoróso, *adj.*, *valorous*. (L. *valere*.)

#### Vocabulary 39.

arrestáre, *v.*, *to* (L. *ad* and  
*arrest.* *restare*, F. *ar-*  
*rêter*.)  
 balláre, *v.*, *to dance*. (L. *balla*.)  
 bevúto, *part.*, *drunk*. (I. *bevere*; L.  
*bibere*.)  
 bigliétto, *m.*, *ticket, note*. (I. *biglia*.)  
 canzóne, *f.*, *song*. (L. *cantio*.)  
 cappelláio, *m.*, *hat-* (I. *cappello*.)  
*ter.* See Voc. 4.)  
 cónte, *m.*, *earl*. (L. *comes*, *-itis*.)  
 contéssa, *f.*, *countess*. (L. *comes*.)  
 delítto, *m.*, *misde-* (L. *delictum*.)  
*meanour.*  
 feríre, *v.*, *to wound*. (L. *ferire*.)  
 innocénte, *adj.*, *in-* (L. *innocens*,  
*nocent.* *gen. -entis*.)  
 invitáre, *v.*, *to in-* (L. *invitare*.)  
*vite.*  
 ládro, *m.*, *thief*. (L. *latro*.)  
 lasciáre, *v.*, *to leave*. (L. *laxare*.)  
 liberáre, *v.*, *to free*. (L. *liberare*.)  
 prigióne, *f.*, *prison*. (L. *prehensio*.)  
 rovináre, *v.*, *to ruin*. (L. *ruina*.)  
 visitáre, *v.*, *to visit*. (L. *visitare*.)

#### Vocabulary 40.

accórrere, *v.*, *to run* (L. *accurrere*.)  
*towards.*  
 andáre, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. *aditare*.)  
*go.*  
 antenáto, *m.*, *an-* (L. *ante, natus*.)  
*cestor.*  
 approdáre, *v.*, *to go* (O.I. *appróciare*  
*ashore.* fr. L. *appropriare*,  
*from propius*.)  
 assístere, *v.*, *to help*. (L. *assistere*.)  
 bastonáre, *v.*, *to* (I. *bastone*.)  
*cane.* See Voc. 6.)

\* *Aditare*, "to go often to," is a frequentative from *adire*. In I. *andare*, the *n* is inserted, as in I. *rendere* from L. *red-*  
*dere*.

cammináre, v., to (I. cammino ;  
walk. L.L. caminus,  
a way, hence  
F. chemin.)

cenáre, v., to sup. (L. coenare.)

colazióne, f., break- (L. collatio ; S.  
fast. colacion.)

commédia, f., co- (L. comoedia.)  
medy, play.

cósta, f., coast. (L. costa.)

danzáre, v., to (O.G. dansôn,  
dance. to draw, ex-  
tend.)

degeneráre, v., to (L. degenerare.)  
degenerate.

dimoráre, v., to reside. (L. morari.)

disonorévole, adj., (L. dis-honora-  
dishonourable. bilis.)

geláre, v., imp., to (L. gelare.)  
freeze.

gridáre, v., to shout. (L. quiritare.)

guaríre, v., to heal. (G. wehren, to  
defend.)

marciáre, v., to (F. marcher.)\*  
march.

marináro, m., sailor. (L. marinus.)

míglío, m. (pl. f.), (L. mille pas-  
mile. suum.)

palázso, m., palace. (L. palatium.)

passáre, v., to pass. (L.L. passare,  
from L. pas-  
sum, supine  
of pandere.)

suonáre, v., to play (L. sonare.)  
(music).

### Vocabulary 41.

accórgersi, v. irr., (L. ad and cor-  
to become aware. rigere : also

I. scorgere,  
from L. ex  
and corri-  
gere.)

accostársi, v., to (I. and L. costa.)  
approach.

addormentársi, v., (L. addormire.)  
to fall asleep.

adirársi, v., to get (L. irasci.)  
angry.

affrettársi, v., to (I. fretta : see  
hasten. Voc. 11.)

alzársi, v., to get up. (L. L. altiare,  
from altus.)

ammogliársi, v., to (I. moglie ; L.  
take a wife. mulier.)

appoggiársi, v., to (L. appositus.)  
lean, to rest.

approssimársi, v., to (L. proximus.)  
get near.

arrabbiársi, v., to get (L. rabies.)  
angry.

arréndersi, irr. v., (I. rendere from  
to surrender. L. reddere.)

aspettáre, v., to (L. aspectare.)  
wait.

astenérsi, irr. v., to (L. abstinere.)  
abstain.

attristársi, v., to be (I. triste ; L.  
saddened. tristis.)

avanzársi, v., to ad- (I. avanti from  
vance. L. ab ante.)

avvedérsi, irr. v., to (L. videre.)  
be aware.

avviársi, v., to start. (L. via.)

battélio, m., boat. (L. L. batum,  
O. F. batel ;  
F. bateau.)

Colómbo, m., Co-  
lumbus.

compiacérsi, pron. (L. con-pla-  
v., to be pleased. cere.)

contentársi, pron. (L. contentus.)  
v., to be satisfied.

crucciársi, v., to be- (I. cruccio, cor-  
come angry. rucio from  
L. cholera,  
"gall.")

dettáre, v., to dictate. (L. dictare.)

dilettársi, v., to (L. delectare.)  
amuse oneself.

dimenticársi, v., to (L. dementare.)  
forget.

divertírsi, v., to (L. divertere.)  
amuse oneself.

esército, m., army. (L. exercitus.)

fidársi, v., to trust. (L. fidere.)

grázie, f. pl., thanks. (L. gratia.)

imbarcársi, v., to (I. and L. L.  
embark. barca.)

impadronírsi, v., to (I. padrone ; L.  
possess oneself. patronus.)

infastidírsi, pron. (L. fastidiosus.)  
v., to become fas-  
tidious.

intraprésa, f., enter- (I. prendere ; L.  
prise. prehendere.)

maritársi, v., to (L. maritare.)  
marry.

\* In O.F. *aller de marche en marche*, "to go from border to border."

obbligáre, *v.*, to (L. obligare.)  
*oblige.*  
 pérđita, *f.*, loss. (L. and I. perdere.)  
 pianofórte, *m.*, a (I. piano-forte;  
*pianoforte*, or L. planus,  
*piano.* fortis.)  
 ralleggrársi, *pron.* (I. allegro. See  
*v.*, to rejoice. Voc. 16.)  
 ricórdársi, *v.*, to re- (L. recordari.)  
*member.*  
 riposársi, *v.*, to rest. (L. pausare.)  
 salutáre, *v.*, to salute. (L. salutare.)  
 sentírsi, *v.*, to feel. (L. sentire.)  
 sorúre, *v.*, to go out. (L. sortiri.)  
 stáncó, *adj.*, tired. (L. stagnare.)  
 subire, *v.*, to un- (L. subire.)  
*dergo.*  
 vantársi, *v.*, to boast. (L. L. vanitare;  
 from vanus.)  
 vapóre, *m.*, steam. (L. vapor.)  
 vergognársi, *v.*, to (L. L. verecun-  
 be ashamed. dia.)

## Vocabulary 42.

accadáre, *imp. v.*, to (L. ac-cadere.)  
*happen.*  
 bastáre, *imp. v.*, to (S. bastar.)  
*be sufficient.*  
 bisognáre, *imp. v.*, (I. bisogna. See  
 to be necessary. Voc. 28.)  
 capíre, *v.*, to under- (L. capere.)  
*stand.*  
 chiáro di lúna, (L. clarus, luna.)  
*moonlight.*  
 conveníre, *v. irr.*, to (L. convenire.)  
*be convenient.*  
 didiacciáre, *imp.* (L. glacies.)  
*v.*, to melt (ice).  
 fónđere, *v.*, to melt. (L. fundere.)  
 grandináre, *imp. v.*, (L. grand-  
 to hail. nare.)  
 lampeggiáre, *imp.* (I. lampo; L.  
*v.*, to lighten. lampas.)  
 néve, *f.*, snow. (L. nix, nivis.)  
 nevicáre, *imp. v.*, to (I. neve.)  
*snow.*  
 occórrere, *imp. v.*, (L. occurrere.)  
*be wanted.*  
 parére, *imp. v.*, to (L. parere.)  
*seem.*  
 passeggiáre, *v.*, to (L. passus.)  
*promenade.*

pióvere, *imp. v.*, to (L. plueré.)  
*rain.*  
 pólvère, *f.*, dust. (L. pulvis.)  
 rincrésćere, *pron. v.*, (L. crescere.)  
*to regret (lit. to*  
*grow again).*  
 sembráre, *v.*, to seem. (L. simulare.)  
 sóle, *m.*, sun. (L. sol.)  
 stelláto, *adj.*, starry. (L. stellatus.)  
 studiáre, *v.*, to study. (L. studium.)  
 tuonáre, *imp. v.*, to (L. tonare.)  
*thunder.*  
 úmido, *adj.*, damp. (L. humidus.)

## Vocabulary 43.

appéna, *adv.*, hard- (L. poena, F.  
*ly, as soon as, à peine.)*  
*scarcely.*  
 avantiéri, *adv.*, the (L. a-b-a-n-te-  
 day before yester- heri.)  
 day.  
 cominciáre, *v.*, to (L. L. comini-  
 begin. tiare, from  
 L. cum, ini-  
 tiare.)  
 dópo, *adv.*, after- (L. de-post.)  
*wards.*  
 d'óra in pói, *adv.*, (L. de hora in  
 henceforth. post.)  
 iéri l'áltro, *adv.*, (L. heri, alter.)  
 the day before yesterday.  
 negózio, *m.*, 'ware- (L. negotium.)  
*house.*  
 ormái, oramái, *adv.*, (L. hora ma-  
 now, henceforth. gis.)  
 prima, *adv.*, before. (L. primus.)  
 sério, *adj.*, serious. (L. serius.)  
 seriaménte, *adv.*, (L. serius.)  
*seriously.*  
 sovénte, *adv.*, often. (L. sub-inde;  
 F. souvent.)  
 spéssó, *adv.*, often. (L. spissus.)  
 súbito, *adv.*, at (L. subitus.)  
*once.*  
 tárdi, *adv.*, late. (L. tardus.)  
 testè, testéso, *adv.*, (L. ante istum  
 lately. ipsum (ante-  
 stesso); cf.  
 fante for in-  
 fante.)  
 tósto, *adv.*, soon. (L. tot-cito.)

## Vocabulary 44.

abbássó, *adv.*, be- (L. L. bassus.)  
 low, downstairs.



altrove, *adv.*, *else* (L. alter-ubi.)  
*where.*

chiamare, *v.*, *to call*. (L. chiamare.)

ci, *adv.*, *there*. (L. ecce-hic.)

da per tutto, *adv.*, (L. totus ;  
*everywhere.* compd. with  
de-ad-per.)

dentro, *adv.*, *inside*. (L. de-intra.)

dónde, *adv.*, *whence*. (L. de-unde.)

dóve, *adv.*, *where*. (L. de-ubi.)

giù, *contr.* of giùso, (L. deorsum,  
*adv.*, *below*. L.L. josum,  
jusum.)

là, *adv.*, *there*. (L. illac.)

quà e là, *adv.*, *here* (L. ecce hac  
*and there.* et illac.)

quassù, *adv.*, *here* (L. ecce hac,  
*above.* sursum.)

quì, *adv.*, *here*. (L. ecce hic.)

Rosina, *f.*, *Rose*. (L. rosa.)

sotto, *adv.*, *under*. (L. subtus.)

su, *contr.* of súso, (L. sursum.)  
*adv.*, *above*.

#### Vocabulary 45.

così, *adv.*, *so*, *thus*. (L. acque-sic.)

disegno, *m.*, *draw* (L. designare.)  
*ing.*

dunque, *conj.*, (L. tunc.)

*therefore.*

malincuore, (a), (L. malum-  
*adv.*, *unwillingly*. cor.)

perchè, *adv.*, *why*. (L. per-quid.)

permettere, *irr. v.*, (L. permit-  
*to allow.* tere.)

pronunciare, *v.*, *to* (L. pronunti-  
*pronounce.* are.)

pure, *conj.*, *however*. (L. p u r e,  
*"merely."*)

quasi, *adv.*, *nearly*. (L. quasi.)

#### Vocabulary 46.

abitare, *v.*, *to reside*. (L. habitare.)

assai, *adv.*, *enough*, (L. ad-satis.)  
*too much.*

bizzèffe (a), *adv.*, *plenty*. (?)

costare, *v.*, *to cost*. (L. constare.)

errore, *m.*, *mistake*. (L. error.)

leggere, *irr. v.*, *to read*. (L. legere.)

méno, *adv.*, *less*. (L. minus.)

nuova, *f.*, *news*. (L. novus.)

poco a poco, *adv.*, (L. paucus.)  
*little by little.*

quanto, *adv.*, *how* (L. quanto.)  
*much.*

scellino, *m.*, *shilling*. (E. shilling.)

sufficienza (a) *adv.*, (L. sufficientia.)

*sufficiently.*

tanto, *adv.*, *as much*. (L. tantum.)

tanto quanto, *adv.*, (L. tantum-  
*as much as.* quantum.)

troppo, *adv.*, *too* (L. L. troppus  
*much.* "herd;" F.  
trop.)

#### Vocabulary 47.

ambasciata, *f.*, *em* (L. L. amba-  
*bassy.* sciare, fr. am-  
baxia, "com-  
mission" fr.  
L. ambactus,  
from O.G.  
ambacht "a  
servant.")

appunto, *adv.*, *so*. (L. ad-punc-  
tum.)

certainemente, *adv.*, (L. certe.)

*certainly.*

davvero, *adv.*, *truly*. (L. de-ab-  
vero.)

di certo, *adv.*, *certainly*. (L. de-  
certe.)

di rado, *adv.*, *seldom*. (L. de-raro.)

enormemente, *adv.*, (L. enormis.)

*extremely, enormously.*

già, *adv.*, *already*. (L. jam.)

in fatti, *adv.*, *in fact*. (L. factum.)

ingannarsi, *v.*, *to be* (L. inganno,  
*mistaken.* "deceit"  
from O.G.  
gaman, "to  
trick;" E.  
game.)

magnifico, *adj.*, (L. magnificus.)  
*magnificent.*

mezzo, *adj.*, *half*, (L. medius.)

*subst. m., means.*

narrare, *v.*, *to relate*. (L. narrare.)

Spagna, *f.*, *Spain*. (S. España ;  
L. Hispania.)

#### Vocabulary 48.

ancora, *adv.*, *yet*. (L. hanc-horam.)

bontà, *f.*, *goodness*. (L. bonitas.)

correggere, *irr. v.*, (L. corrigere.)  
*to correct.*

dubitare, *v.*, *to doubt*. (L. dubitare.)

mai, *adv.*, *ever*. (L. magis.)

mica, *adv.*, *at all*. (L. mica, "a  
crumb.")

modéstia, *f.*, *mo-* (L. modestia.)  
*desty.*  
 non, *adv.*, *not.* (L. non.)  
 nemménó, *adv.*, *not* (L. ne-minus.)  
*even.*  
 prestáre, *v.*, *to lend.* (L. praestare.)  
 púnto, *adv.*, *at all.* (L. punctum.)  
 réndere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. reddere.)  
*give back.* See Voc. 65.)

## Vocabulary 49.

consigliáre, *v.*, *to* (I. consiglio ;  
*advise.* L. consilium.)  
 dúca, *m.*, *duke.* (L. dux, ducis.)  
 fórse, *adv.*, *perhaps.* (L. forte, forsi-  
*tan.*)  
 maccheróné, *m.*, *mac-* (I. macco,  
*caroni.* "bruised  
 meal.")  
 possibilménte, *adv.*, (L. possibilis.)  
*possibly.*  
 probabilménte, *adv.*, (L. proba-  
*probably.* bilis.)  
 raccontáre, *v.*, *to* (L. re-ad-com-  
*relate.* putare.)  
 regína, *f.*, *queen.* (L. regina.)

## Vocabulary 50.

a bélla pósta, *adv.*, (I. posta.)  
*purposely.*  
 a bello stúdio, *adv.*, (I. studio.)  
*purposely.*  
 a quátt' ócchi, ("to four eyes,"  
*adv.*, *privately.* i.e. "two per-  
 sons" only.)  
 carpóni, *adv.*, *on* (L. carpus,  
*all fours,* lit. "on "the wrist.")  
*the hands."*  
 cavalcióni, *adv.*, (I. cavallo ; L.  
*astride.* caballus.)  
 cólpo, *m.*, *blow.* (L. L. colpus ;  
 fr. L. colaphus ;  
 hence Fr. coup.)  
 insultáre, *v.*, *to in-* (L. insultare.)  
*sult.*  
 memoría, (a) *adv.*, (L. memoria.)  
*by heart.*  
 ménte, (a) *adv.*, *by* (L. mens.)  
*heart.*  
 ógni quál vólta, (Literally "at  
*adv.*, *every time.* every turn.")  
 pétto, *m.*, *chest.* (L. pectus.)  
 pranzáre, *v.*, *to* (L. prandere ;  
*dine.* sup. pransum.)

propósito (a), *adv.*, (L. proposit-  
*well.* tum.)  
 púgno, *m.*, *fist.* (L. pugnus.)  
 recitáre, *v.*, *to recite.* (L. recitare.)  
 rotolóni, *adv.*, *roll-* (I. rotolare ; L.  
*ing, sprawling.* rotulus.)  
 sálmo, *m.*, *psalm.* (L. psalmus.)  
 scúro, *adj.*, *dark.* (L. obscurus.)  
 sólito (per), *adv.*, (L. solitus.)  
*usually.*  
 spílla, *f.*, *pin.* (L. spinula.)  
 tastóné, *adv.*, *grop-* (I. tastare, from  
*ing.* L. taxare, freq.  
 of tango.)  
 víva vóce (a), *adv.*, (L. viva  
*by word of mouth.* vox.)  
 vólta, *f.*, *turn.* (L. voluta.)

## Vocabulary 51.

ad ónta, *adv.*, *in* (I. onta ; fr. onire  
*spite.* "to insult ;" fr.  
 G. höhnen ; Fr.  
 honte.)  
 al di là, *adv.*, *on the* (L. ad-illac.)  
*other side.*  
 appiè, *adv.*, *at the* (L. ad pedem.)  
*foot.*  
 Árno, *m.*, *Arno* (a (L. Arnus.)  
*river).*  
 avánti, *adv.*, *before.* (L. ab-ante.)  
 cámbio (létera di), (L. cambire ;  
*f.*, *bill of ex-* I. cambiare,  
*change.* cangiare ; E.  
 change.)  
 castélló, *m.*, *castle.* (L. castellum.)  
 cáusa (a), *adv.*, *because.* (L. causa.)  
 davánti, *adv.*, *be-* (L. de-ab-ante.)  
*fore.*  
 diétro, *adv.*, *behind.* (L.L. de-retro.)  
 favóre (a), *adv.*, *in* (L. favor.)  
*favour.*  
 fúme, *m.*, *river.* (L. flumen.)  
 fórza (a), *adv.*, (L.L. fortia ;  
*through.* L. fortis.)  
 governatóre, *m.*, (L. gubernator.)  
*governor.*  
 luógio (in), *adv.*, *in* (L. locus.)  
*place.*  
 mézzo (per), *adv.*, (L. medium.)  
*by means.*  
 ministó, *m.*, *minister.* (L. minister.)  
 mónte, *m.*, *mountain.* (L. mons,  
 montis.)  
 nomináre, *v.*, *to* (L. nominare.)  
*name.*

raccomandazióne, *f.*, (I. *raccoman-*  
*recommendation.* dare.)  
scórrere, *irr. v.*, to (L. *excurrere*)  
*peruse, to travel*  
*over.*  
spedíre, *v.*, to *for-* (L. *expedire*)  
*ward.*  
véce (in), *adv.*, *instead.* (L. *invi-*  
*cem.*)

## Vocabulary 52.

addóssó, *adv.*, *upon.* (L. *dorsum*.)  
adulatóre, *m.*, *flat-* (L. *adulator*.)  
*terer.*  
arrabbiáto, *part.*, (L. *rabere*.)  
*angry, cross.*  
attórno, *adv.*, *around.* (L. *tornare*.)  
delízia, *f.*, *pleasure.* (L. *deliciae*.)  
dintórno, *adv.*, (L. *de-in-tor-*  
*around.* *nare.*)  
di rimpétto, *adv.*, (L. *re-in-petto*;  
*opposite.* L. *pectus*.)  
fáccia (in), *prep.*, (L. *facies*.)  
*opposite.*  
fíno, *infino, adv.*, (L. *in finem*.)  
*until.*  
gittársi, *v.*, to *throw* (L. *jactare*.)  
*oneself.*  
immediataménte, (L. *in-medius*.)  
*adv.*, *immediately.*  
mézzo (in), *adv.*, *in* (L. *medius*.)  
*the midst.*  
obliáre, *v.*, to *forget.* (L. *oblivisci*;  
*hence F. ou-*  
*blier.*)  
óltre, *adv.*, *besides.* (L. *ultra*.)  
ospedále, *m.*, *hos-* (L. *hospitalis*.)  
*pital.*  
proprietà, *f.*, *pro-* (L. *proprietas*.)  
*perty.*  
rispétto (in), *adv.*, (L. *respectus*.)  
*regarding.*  
sáno, *adv.*, *until.* (L. *signum* ?)

## Vocabulary 53.

affogáre, *v.*, to (L. *fauces*; cf.  
*drown.* L. *suffocare*.)  
affondáre, *v.*, to *sink.* (I. *a fondo*; L.  
*fundus*.)  
combáttere, *v.*, to (L. *batuere*;  
*fight.* *hence F.*  
*battere*.)  
cóntro, *adv.*, *against.* (L. *contra* )

9\*

eccétto, *adv.*, *ex-* (L. *exceptus*.)  
*cepted.*  
eccezióne, *f.*, *ex-* (L. *exceptio*,  
*ception.* *gen. -nis*.)  
fáto, *m.*, *fate.* (L. *fatum*.)  
giústa, *adv.*, *ac-* (L. *juxta*.)  
*cording.*  
lucratió, *adv.*, *lu-* (L. *lucrativus*.)  
*crative.*  
lúngo, *adv.*, *along.* (L. *longus*.)  
malgrádo, *adv.*, *in* (L. *male gra-*  
*spite.* *tus*; F. *mal-*  
*gré*; E. *mau-*  
*gre.*)  
mediánte, *adv.*, *by* (L. *medianus*;  
*means of.* *fr. medius*.)  
possedére, *v.* to (L. *possidere*.)  
*possess.*  
pósto, *m.*, *place,* (L. *positus*.)  
*situation.*  
présso, *prep. and* (L. *pressus*.)  
*adv.*, *near.*  
rasénte, *adv.*, *along,* (L. *rasus*, from  
*close to.* *radere*.)  
relazióne, *f.*, *relation.* (L. *relatio*.)  
réndita, *f.*, *income,* (L. *rendere*; *fr.*  
*rent.* L. *reddere*.)  
sénza, *adv.*, *without.* (L. *sine*.)  
situáto, *part.*, *situated.* (I. *situare*;  
*fr. L. situs*.)  
tempésta, *f.*, *storm.* (L. *tempestas*.)  
tuttavía, *conj.*, *still.* (L. *tota via*.)  
uscíre, *irr. v.*, to (L. *exire*.)  
*go out.*  
vascéllo, *m.*, *ship.* (L. *vascellum*,  
*from vas*; F.  
*vaisseau*.)

## Vocabulary 54.

ánche, *conj.*, *also.* (L. *adhuc*, whence  
*adunc*, *ad'nc*,  
*anc*, *anche*.)  
cárte, *f. pl.*, *cards.* (L. *carta*.)  
cittadíno, *m.*, *citi-* (L. *L. civita-*  
*zen.* *danus*, from  
L. *civitas*.)  
consigliáre, *v.*, to (L. *consilium*.)  
*advise.*  
continuáre, *v.*, to (L. *continua-*  
*continue.* *are*.)  
copiáre, *v.*, to *copy.* (L. *copia*.)  
Créso, *m.*, *Croesus.* (L. *Croesus*.)  
desideráre, *v.*, to (L. *desiderare*.)  
*wish, to long.*

e . . . e, *conj.*, *both.* (L. et . . . et.)  
 giacchè, *conj.*, (L. jam-quid.)  
*since.*  
 inchiostro, *m.*, *ink.* (L. encaustum.)  
 lamentarsi, *pron.* (L. lamentari.)  
*v., to complain.*  
 neppure, *conj.*, *not* (I. nè, pure,  
*even.* q.v.)  
 nondiméno, *conj.*, (L. non-de-  
*nevertheless.* minus.)  
 obbediente, *adj.*, (L. obediens.)  
*obedient.*  
 óchio, *m.*, *eye.* (L. oculus.)  
 ostinato, *adj.*, *obsti-* (L. obstinatus.)  
*nate.*  
 partita, *f.*, *game, deal.* (L. partiri,  
*partitus.*)  
 però, *conj.*, *however.* (L. per hoc.)  
 péscé, *m.*, *fish.* (L. piscis.)  
 pittúra, *f.*, *paint-* (L. pictura.)  
*ing.*  
 possénte, *adj.*, *pow-* (L. acc. pos-  
*erful.* sentem, from  
 posse.)  
 premiére, *v.*, *to give* (L. præmium.)  
*a prize.*  
 purchè, *conj.*, *pro-* (I. pure, che,  
*vided.* q.v.)  
 salutáre, *v.*, *to sa-* (L. salutare.)  
*lute.*  
 salúte, *f.*, *health.* (L. salus, salu-  
*tis.*)  
 scacciáre, *v.*, *to ex-* (L. L. ex-cap-  
*pel.* tiare, from  
 L. captare;  
 F. chasser.)  
 sicúro, *adj.*, *safe,* (L. securus.)  
*certain.*  
 stúpido, *adj.*, *silly,* (L. stupidus.)  
*stupid.*  
 supposto che, *conj.*, (L. supposi-  
*provided that.* tum-quid.)

#### Vocabulary 55.

allérta! *interj.*, *be* (I. erta, "an  
*careful! on the eminence";*  
*look out.* fr. L. erectus;  
 E. alert.)  
 ánimo! *m.*, *cour-* (L. animus.)  
*age!*  
 avánti! *interj.*, *for-* (L. ab-ante.)  
*ward!*

bambíno, *m.*, *baby.* (L. Bambalio;  
 a Roman sur-  
 name from Gr.  
 βαμβάλος,  
 "lispings.")  
 córpo di Bácco! (L. corpus,  
*interj.*, *good* Bacchus.)  
*heavens!*  
 córrere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. currere.)  
*run.*  
 fermársi, *pron. v.*, (L. firmare.)  
*to stop.*  
 libertà, *f.*, *freedom.* (L. libertas.)  
 máscara, *f.*, *mask.* (A. maskarah,  
*laughter.*)  
 oh! *interj.*, *oh!* (L. oh!)  
 possíbile, *adj.*, *pos-* (L. possibilis.)  
*sible.*  
 rumóre, *m.*, *noise.* (L. rumor.)  
 sentinella, *f.*, *sen-* (L. sentire.)\*  
*tinel.*  
 spálla, *f.*, *shoulder,* (L. scapula.)  
*back.*  
 stáre, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. stare.)  
*stand.*  
 svegliársi, *pron. v.*, (L. L. ex vigi-  
*to wake up.* lare; hence  
 F. s'éveiller.)  
 vólgere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. volvere.)  
*turn.*  
 zítto, *interj.*, *hush!* (an onomat.  
 like L. st.)

#### Vocabulary 56.

amméttere, *irr. v.*, (L. admittere.)  
*to admit.*  
 comméttere, *irr. v.*, (L. commit-  
*to commit.* tere.)  
 comprométtere, *irr.* (L. compromit-  
*v., to compromise.* tere.)  
 giúdice, *m.*, *judge.* (L. iudex, -icis.)  
 govérno, *m.*, *govern-* (L. gubernat-  
*ment.* io.)  
 gráve, *adj.*, *serious.* (L. gravis.)  
 innocénza, *f.*, *inno-* (L. innocentia.)  
*cence.*  
 libertà, *f.*, *freedom.* (L. libertas.)  
 méttre, *irr. v.*, *to put.* (L. mittere.)  
 político, *adj.*, *poli-* (Gr. and L.  
*tical.* politicus.)

\* L. sentina, "well-room of a ship,"  
 where the sentinator was stationed to  
 give notice of any leakage.

prigioniero, *m.*, (L. prigioner, q. v.)  
 promettere, *in. v.*, (L. promittere.)  
*to promise.*  
 riaggiustare, *v.*, *to* (L. ad-juxta.)  
*readjust.*  
 scommettere, *irr. v.*, (L. commit-  
*to bet.* tere.)  
 sconnettere, *irr. v.*, (L. connectere.)  
*to disjoin.*  
 sottomettere, *irr. v.*, (L. subtus mit-  
*to submit.* tere.)

## Vocabulary 57.

cingere, *v.*, *to gird.* (L. cingere.)  
 compiangere, *v.*, *to* (L. plangere.)  
*pity.*  
 dipingere, *irr. v.*, (L. pingere.)  
*to paint.*  
 distinguere, *irr. v.*, (L. distin-  
*to distinguish.* guere.)  
 esame, *m.*, *exami-* (L. examen.)  
*nation.*  
 fingere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. fingere.)  
*make believe, to*  
*feign.*  
 giungere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. jungere.)  
*arrive.*  
 migliorarsi, *pron.* (L. melior.)  
*v.*, *to improve.*  
 montare, *v.*, *to as-* (L. mons.)  
*cend.*  
 olio, *m.*, *oil.* (L. oleum.)  
 piangere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. plangere.)  
*cry.*  
 quanto prima, *adv.*, (L. quantum  
*as soon as possible.* primum.)  
 raggiungere, *irr. v.*, (L. re-adjun-  
*to overtake.* gere.)  
 risolvere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. resolvere.)  
*resolve.*  
 rispondere, *irr. v.*, (L. respondere.)  
*to reply.*  
 soggiungere, *irr. v.*, (L. subjun-  
*to add.* gere.)  
 ungere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. ungere.)  
*anoint.*

## Vocabulary 58.

affiggere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. affigere.)  
*affix.*

assassino, *m.*, *mur-* (A. hashi-  
*derer.* shîn.)\*  
 Campidoglio, *m.*, (L. capitolum.)  
*Capitol.*  
 campo, *m.*, *field.* (L. campus.)  
 che cosa, *pron.*, (L. quis,  
*what.* causa.)  
 commuovere, *irr.* (L. commovere.)  
*v.*, *to stir (the soul).*  
 concedere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. concedere.)  
*grant.*  
 condannare, *v.*, *to* (L. condem-  
*condemn.* nare.)  
 Cristo, *m.*, *Christ.* (L. Christus.)  
 crocifiggere, *irr. v.*, (L. cruci affi-  
*to crucify.* gere.)  
 di, *m.*, *day.* (L. dies.)  
 discorso, *m.*, *speech.* (L. discursus.)  
 eloquente, *adj.*, *elo-* (L. eloquens,  
*quent.* gen. -entis.)  
 esprimere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. exprimere.)  
*express.*  
 gioia, *f.*, *joy.* (L. gaudia, pl.  
*of gaudium.*)  
 giudeo, *adj.*, *Jewish.* (L. judaeus.)  
 grazia, *f.*, *free par-* (L. gratia.)  
*don.*  
 immagine, *f.*, *image.* (L. imago,  
*gen. -inis.*)  
 legge, *f.*, *law.* (L. lex, legis.)  
 offerta, *f.*, *offer.* (L. offerre,  
*offertus.*)  
 oppressore, *m.*, *op-* (L. oppressor.)  
*pressor.*  
 opprimere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. opprimere.)  
*oppress.*  
 peccato, *m.*, *sin.* (L. peccatum.)  
 percuotere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. percutere.)  
*strike.*  
 popolo, *m.*, *people.* (L. populus.)  
 promuovere, *irr. v.*, (L. promovere.)  
*to promote.*  
 riflettere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. reflectere.)  
*reflect, to refract.*  
 riscuotere, *irr. v.*, (L. re-excu-  
*to redeem, to col-* tere.)  
*lect.*  
 valore, *m.*, *valour.* (L. valere.)  
 vendicarsi, *pron. v.*, (L. vindicare.)  
*to avenge oneself.*

\* Drinkers of a decoction of hemp, called *hashish*, a fanatical sect in Palestine, who, under the influence of the intoxicating liquor, stabbed many of the leading Crusaders.

## Vocabulary 59.

addúrre, *irr. v.*, to (L. adducere.)  
*adduce.*  
 afirmáre, *v.*, to (L. affirmare.)  
*affirm.*  
 condúrsi, *irr. pron.* (L. conducere.)  
*v.*, to behave.  
 cónto, *m.*, account. (L. computus;  
 F. compte.)  
 distrúggere, *irr. v.*, (L. destruere.)  
*to destroy.*  
 divérso, *adj.*, *vari-* (L. diversus.)  
*ous, some.*  
 erígere, *irr. v.*, to (L. erigere.)  
*set up, to erect.*  
 fríggere, *irr. v.*, to (L. frigere.)  
*fry.*  
 intéro, *adj.*, *whole.* (L. integer.)  
 libráio, *m.*, book- (L. librarius.)  
*seller.*  
 miséria, *f.*, *misery*, (L. miseria.)  
*poverty.*  
 negligere, *irr. v.*, to (L. negligere.)  
*neglect.*  
 orátore, *m.*, *orator.* (L. orator.)  
 penísola, *f.*, *penin-* (L. peninsula.)  
*sula.*  
 protéggere, *irr. v.*, (L. protegere.)  
*to protect.*  
 ridúrre, *irr. v.*, to (L. reducere.)  
*reduce.*  
 státua, *f.*, *statue.* (L. statua.)

## Vocabulary 60.

accréscere, *irr. v.*, (L. accrescere.)  
*to increase.*  
 aváro, *adj. and n.* (L. avarus.)  
*m.*, *avaricious, miser.*  
 créscere, *irr. v.*, to (L. crescere.)  
*grow.*  
 mutáre, *v.*, to change. (L. mutare.)  
 pága, *f.*, *pay.* (L. pacare, "to  
 appease, to  
 settle.")  
 ricchézza, *f.*, *riches.* (I. ricco, q.v.)  
 riconóscere, *irr. v.*, (L. recognos-  
 cere.)  
*to recognise.*  
 usúra, *f.*, *usury.* (L. usura.)

## Vocabulary 61.

amóre, *m.*, *love.* (L. amor.)  
 cólpa, *f.*, *fault.* (L. culpa.)  
 completáménte, (L. completus,  
*adv.*, *completely.* from com-  
 plere.)

diféndere, *irr. v.*, to (L. defendere.)  
*defend.*  
 disobbediénte, *adj.*, (L. obediens,  
*disobedient.* gen. -ntis.)  
 divéllere, *irr. v.*, to (L. divellere.)  
*uproot.*  
 Enrico, *m.*, *Henry.* (G. Heinrich.)  
 espéllere, *irr. v.*, to (L. expellere.)  
*expel.*  
 ignóbile, *adj.*, *ig-* (L. ignobilis.)  
*noble.*  
 impéllere, *irr. v.*, to (L. impellere.)  
*impel.*  
 irresistíbilménte, (L. resistere.)  
*adv.*, *irresistibly.*  
 motivo, *m.*, *cause.* (L. L. motivum,  
 from movere,  
 motum.)  
 nóbile, *adj.*, *noble.* (L. nobilis.)  
 pátria, *f.*, *father-* (L. patria.)  
*land, country.*  
 petizíone, *f.*, *petition.* (L. petitio.)  
 própósta, *f.*, *proposal.* (L. propositum.)  
 ripéllere, *irr. v.*, to (L. repellere.)  
*repel.*  
 sconfíggere, *irr. v.*, (L. ex-confi-  
 to defeat. cere.)  
 sdégno, *m.*, *wrath.* (L. dis-dignus;  
 E. disdain.)  
 servitóre, *m.*, *ser-* (L. servitor,  
 vant. fr. servire.)  
 soltánte, *adv.*, *only.* (L. solus, tan-  
 tum.)

## Vocabulary 62.

corrómperre, *irr. v.*, (L. corrum-  
 to corrupt. pere.)  
 diróttá (álá), *adv.*, (L. disruptus,  
*very much, lit.* "burst.")  
*overflowing.*  
 insúlto, *m.*, *insult.* (L. insultus.)  
 piátto, *m.*, *dish,* (G. platt "flat.")  
*plate.*  
 prorómperre, *irr. v.*, (L. prorum-  
 to burst forth. pere.)  
 rómperre, *irr. v.*, to (L. rumpere.)  
*break.*  
 sásso, *m.*, *stone.* (L. saxum.)  
 ubbriacársi, *pron.* (I. ubbriáco.)  
*v.*, to get drunk.  
 ubbriáco, *adj.*, (L. ebriacus,  
 drunk. from ebrius.)  
 vétro, *m.*, *glass.* (L. vitrum.)

## Vocabulary 63.

- chiédere, *irr. v.*, to (L. quaerere; ask. cf. *fiedere* fr. *ferire*.)  
 cómpira, *f.*, *pur-* (L. *comprare*, chase. Voc. 23, q.v.)  
 corrispóndere, *irr.* (L. *con-respon-* dere.)  
*v.*, to correspond.  
 fíne (a), *adv.*, in (L. *ad finem*.)  
*order.*  
 forestiére, *m.*, *stran-* (L. *foris*.)  
*ger*, foreigner.  
 indirizzáre, *v.*, to (L. *in-dirigere*.)  
*direct.*  
 negoziánte, *m.*, (L. *negotians*,  
*merchant.* -antis, fr. *neg-*  
*otiari*.)  
 parére, *m.*, *opinion.* (L. *parere*.)  
 richiédere, *irr. v.*, (L. *requirere*.)  
*to request.*  
 Venézia, *f.*, Venice. (L. *Venetia*.)

## Vocabulary 64.

- assólvere, *irr. v.*, to (L. *absolvere*.)  
*absolve.*  
 cimitéro, *m.*, *ceme-* (L. *coemete-*  
*tery.* rium.)  
 continuo, *adj.*, *con-* (L. *continuus*.)  
*tinuous.*  
 desístere, *irr. v.*, to (L. *desistere*.)  
*desist.*  
 esístere, *irr. v.*, to (L. *exsistere*.)  
*exist.*  
 fanciúillo, *m.*, *boy.* (L. *fante*, from  
L. *infans*, -ntis.)  
 feríta, *f.*, wound. (L. *ferire*.)  
 futúro, *m.*, future. (L. *futurus*.)  
 méscere, *irr. v.*, to (L. *miscere*.)  
*pour*, to mix.  
 nord, *m.*, north. (G. *nord*; E.  
north.)  
 offríre, *irr. v.*, to (L. *offerre*.)  
*offer.*  
 preferíre, *v.*, to *pre-* (L. *praeferre*.)  
*fer.*  
 préte, *m.*, priest. (L. *presbyter*.)  
 salváre, *v.*, to save. (L. *salvare*.)  
 sécolo, *m.*, century. (L. *saeculum*.)  
 seppellíre, *irr. v.*, to (L. *sepelire*.)  
*bury.*  
 soffríre, *irr. v.*, to (L. *sufferre*.)  
*suffer.*  
 súggere, *irr. v.*, to (L. *sugere*.)  
*suck.*

- tosáre, *v.*, to shear. (L. *tondere*.)  
 viággio, *m.*, journey. (L. *viaticum*.)  
 vívere, *irr. v.*, to (L. *vivere*.)  
*live.*

## Vocabulary 65.

- andársene, *pron.* (L. *andare*,  
*irr. v.*, to go away. from L. *adi-*  
*tare*; the *n*  
inserted as in  
L. *rendere*, fr  
L. *reddere*.)  
 insiéme, *adv.*, to- (L. *in-simul*.)  
*gether.*  
 stazióne, *f.*, station. (L. *statio*, sta-  
tionis.)

## Vocabulary 66.

- acquavíte, *f.*, (L. *aqua-vitae*.)  
*brandy.*  
 bévere, bére, *irr. v.*, (L. *bibere*.)  
*to drink.*  
 finíre, *v.*, to finish. (L. *finire*.)  
 liquóre, *m.*, liqueur. (L. *liquor*.)

## Vocabulary 67.

- entrámbi, *pron.*, both. (L. *ambo*.)  
 falegnáme, *m.*, (L. *fa-legname*;  
*joiner.* L. *facere lig-*  
*num*.)  
 fíne (álle), *adv.*, (L. *finis*.)  
*at last.*  
 ghiaccio, *m.*, ice. (L. *glacies*.)

## Vocabulary 68.

- cógliere, *irr. v.*, to (L. *colligere*.)  
*gather.*  
 distógliere, *irr. v.*, (L. *dis-tollere*.)  
*to distract.*  
 facilménte, *adv.*, (L. *facilis*.)  
*easily.*  
 garófano, *m.*, pink. (L. *caryophyl-*  
*lum*.)  
 lettúra, *f.*, reading. (L. *lectura*.)  
 Luísa, *f.*, Louise.  
 margheritína, *f.*, (L. *margarita*.)  
*daisy.*  
 nódo, *m.*, knot. (L. *nodus*.)  
 órto, *m.*, orchard. (L. *hortus*.)  
 raccógliere, *irr. v.*, (L. *re-colli-*  
*gere*.)

regaláre, *v.*, to make (L. regolare.  
a present. See Voc. 11.)  
scégliere, *irr. v.*, to (L. ex-eligere.)  
choose.  
sciógliere, or sciórre, (L. ex-solvere.)  
*irr. v.*, to untie.

## Vocabulary 69.

Cómo, *f.*, *Cómo.* (L. Comum.)  
dáre, *irr. v.*, to give. (L. dare.)  
dispáccio, *m.*, de- (L. dis-pangere,  
spatch, telegram. pactum.)  
lágo, *m.*, lake. (L. lacus.)  
vedúta, *f.*, view. (L. videre.)  
viaggiatóre, *m.*, tra- (L. viaggio,  
veller. q. v.)

## Vocabulary 70.

bugía, *f.*, lie. (G. böse,  
"wicked.")  
condótta, *f.*, beha- (L. conducere.)  
viour.  
díre, *irr. v.*, to say. (L. dicere.)  
perícólo, *m.*, dan- (L. periculum.)  
ger.  
véro, *adj.*, true. (L. verus.)

## Vocabulary 71.

cápo, *m.*, head. (L. caput.)  
dén-te, *m.*, tooth. (L. dens, den-  
tis.)  
dolére, *pron. v.*, to (L. dolere.)  
ache.  
mascélla, *f.*, jaw. (L. maxilla.)  
mígnolo, *adj.*, little (L. minimus.)  
(finger).  
orécchio, *m.*, ear. (L. auricula,  
from auris.)  
piéde, *m.*, foot. (L. pes, pedis.)

## Vocabulary 72.

altriménti, *conj.*, or, (L. aliter,  
otherwise. mens.)  
dovére, *irr. v.*, to be (L. debere.)  
obliged.  
fráncó, *m.*, franc (F. franc.)  
(money).  
peggiórare, *v.*, to (L. peior.)  
become worse.

poltróne, *m.*, cow- (L. poltro,  
ard. "lazy"; O.G.  
bolstar; E.  
bolster.)

## Vocabulary 73.

azióne, *f.*, action. (L. actio, -nis.)  
cáso, *m.*, case. (L. casus.)  
importánte, *adj.*, (L. importare.)  
important.  
infelíce, *adj.*, un- (L. infelix, gen.  
happy. -icis.)  
necessário, *adj.*, ne- (L. necessa-  
cessary. rius.)  
níente, *m.*, nothing. (L. ne-ens, en-  
tis.)  
prónto, *adj.*, ready. (L. promptus.)  
ricórrere, *irr. v.*, to (L. recurrere.)  
have recourse to.  
sórdó, *adj.*, deaf. (L. surdus.)

## Vocabulary 74.

avvelenáto, *part.*, (L. ad-venena-  
poisoned. tus.)  
Díó, *m.*, God. (L. Deus.)  
incéndio, *m.*, fire, (L. incendium.)  
conflagration.  
moríre, *irr. v.*, to die. (L. mori.)  
nóia, *f.*, bother. (L. in odio,  
F. ennui.)  
podágra, *f.*, gout. (L. podagra.)

## Vocabulary 75.

débole, *adj.*, weak. (L. debilis.)  
fátti (in), *adv.*, in (L. factum.)  
fact.

## Vocabulary 76.

compórre, *irr. v.*, to (L. componere.)  
compose.  
contrário (al), *adv.*, (L. contrarius.)  
on the contrary.  
depórre, *irr. v.*, to (L. deponere.)  
depose.  
dispórre, *irr. v.*, to (L. disponere.)  
dispose.  
frappórre, *irr. v.*, (L. infra-  
to put between. ponere.)  
impórre, *irr. v.*, to (L. imponere.)  
impose.  
létto, *m.*, bed. (L. lectus.)  
magazzíno, *m.*, (A. macházin,  
warehouse. "stores.")



mérce, *f.*, merchandise. (L. merx, mercis.)  
 nazione, *f.*, nation. (L. natio, -nis.)  
 ostácolo, *m.*, ob- (L. obstaculum.)  
 padróne, *m.*, master, (L. patronus.)  
 owner.  
 percìò, *conj.*, there- (L. per hoc.)  
 fore.  
 porre, *irr. v.*, to put. (L. ponere.)  
 ribelláto, *part.*, re- (L. rebellare.)  
 volted.  
 soggiogáre, *v.*, to (L. subjugare.)  
 subjugate.  
 súddito, *m.*, subject. (L. subditus.)  
 suppóre, *irr. v.*, to (L. supponere.)  
 suppose.  
 tribúto, *m.*, tribute. (L. tributum.)  
 tróno, *m.*, throne. (L. thronus.)

## Vocabulary 77.

accettáre, *v.*, to ac- (L. acceptare, fr. accipere.)  
 cept.  
 arrogánza, *f.*, arro- (L. arrogantia.)  
 gance.  
 assolutamente, *adv.*, (L. absolutus.)  
 absolutely.  
 disubbidire, *v.*, to (L. dis-obedire.)  
 disobey.  
 favóre, *m.*, favour, (L. favor.)  
 kindness.  
 impossíbile, *adj.*, (L. impossibilis.)  
 impossible.  
 invító, *m.*, invita- (L. invitare.)  
 tion.  
 mischiáre, *v.*, to mix. (L.L. misculare, from miscere.)  
 módo, *m.*, way, man- (L. modus.)  
 ner.  
 potére, *irr. v.*, to be able. (L. posse, stem, pot, as in pot-es.)  
 severaménte, *adv.*, (L. severe.)  
 severely.  
 statuétta, *dim.* of státua, (L. statua.)  
 statue, *f.*, little statue.  
 tradúrre, *irr. v.*, to (L. traducere.)  
 translate.  
 vérsò, *adv.*, towards. (L. versus.)

## Vocabulary 78.

Chiánti, *m.*, Chianti (in Tuscany).  
 góla, *f.*, throat. (L. gula.)  
 rimanére, *irr. v.*, to (L. remanere.)  
 remain.  
 ritórno, *m.*, return. (L. tornare.)

sciupáre, *v.*, to dis- (L. dissipare.)  
 sipate.  
 sólo, *adj.*, alone. (L. solus.)

## Vocabulary 79.

altézza, *f.*, height. (L. altitudo.)  
 altrúi, *pron.*, of (L. alterius.)  
 others.  
 cálle, *m.*, way, (L. callis.)  
 road.  
 cértò, *adj.*, certain, (L. certus, adv., certainly. certo.)  
 dúro, *adj.*, hard. (L. durus.)  
 fiáto, *m.*, breath. (L. flatus.)  
 Mònte Bianco, *m.*,  
 Mont Blanc.  
 Mònte Rósa, *m.*,  
 Monte Rosa.  
 múro, *m.*, wall. (L. murus.)  
 salíre, *v.*, to ascend. (L. salire, "to leap.")  
 scalináta, *f.*, stairs. (L. scala.)  
 scéndere, *irr. v.*, to (L. descendere.)  
 descend.  
 tóre, *f.*, tower. (L. turris.)

## Vocabulary 80.

curársi, *pron. v.*, to (L. curare.)  
 care.  
 fálsò, *adj.*, false. (L. falsus.)  
 notízia, *f.*, news. (L. notitia.)  
 procedere, *m.*, be- (L. procedere.)  
 haviour; *v.*, to  
 proceed.  
 sapére, *irr. v.*, to (L. sapere.)  
 know.

## Vocabulary 81.

accántò, *adv.*, near, (L. canto, G.  
 by. kante, "a corner.")  
 cavaliére, *knight*, (L. caballus.)  
 m.  
 ópera, *f.*, opera. (L. opera.)  
 sedére, *irr. v.*, to sit (L. sedere.)  
 down.  
 vía, *adv.*, away. (L. via.)  
 vicíno, *adv.*, near. (L. vicinus.)  
 vuóto, *adj.*, empty. (Probably  
 I. volto,  
 "hollowed  
 out," fr. L.  
 volutus; F.  
 voûte; E.  
 vault.)

## Vocabulary 82.

atténto, *adj.*, *atten-* (L. attentus.)  
*tive.*

## Vocabulary 83.

candéla, *f.*, *candle.* (L. candela.)  
gas, *m.*, *gas.* (E. gas fr.  
ghost, G.  
geist, 'spirit,'  
'air.')

lámpada, *f.*, *lamp.* (L. lampas,  
lampadis.)

lantérna, *f.*, *lantern.* (L. laterna.)  
spégnere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. ex-pingere,  
*extinguish.* "to paint out,  
obliterate.")

## Vocabulary 84.

appartenére, *irr. v.*, (L. ad-perti-  
*to belong.* nere.)

báda (a), *adv.*, *wait-* (L. badare, "to  
*ing.* wait, loiter.")

battésimo, *m.*, *bap-* (L. and Gr. bap-  
*tism.* tisma.)

galantuómo, *m.*, (I. galante;  
*gentleman.* fr. gala,  
"splendour;  
charming  
address;"  
E. gallant.†)

saccóccia, *f.*, *pocket.* (L. saccus.)

sbarazzáre, *v.*, *to* (I. imbarazzo,  
*clear.* See Voc. 91.)

tásca, *f.*, *pocket.* (G. tasche.)

tenére, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. tenere.)  
*hold, to have.*

## Vocabulary 85.

attenzióne, *f.*, *atten-* (L. attentio,  
*tion.* gen. -onis.)

attrárrre, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. attrahere.)  
*attract.*

calamíta, *f.*, *load-* (L. calamus.†)  
*stone; magnet.*

carbóne, *m.*, *coal.* (L. carbo,  
carbonis.)

círca, *adv.*, *about.* (L. circa.)

distrárrre, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. distrahere.)  
*distract.*

\* *Gaz*, a word invented by Van Hel-  
mont, a Belgian chemist, 1577-1644.

† Probably from a Teutonic source; O.  
G. geil 'proud'; A. S. gall 'lively.'

‡ The magnetic needle being poised on  
a reed floating on water.

estrárrre, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. extrahere.)  
*extract.*

férro, *m.*, *iron.* (L. ferrum.)

impedírrre, *v.*, *to pre-* (L. impedire.)  
*vent, to impede.*

partíto, *m.*, *pro-* (L. partiri.)  
*fit.*

professióne, *f.*, *pro-* (L. professio,  
*fession.* gen. -onis.)

profítto, *m.*, *profit.* (L. profectus.)

súgo, *m.*, *juice.* (L. sucus.)

trárrre, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. trahere.)  
*draw.*

vantággio, *m.*, *ad-* (I. avanzare, fr.  
*vantage.* avante, "for-  
ward," fr. L.  
ab-ante; F.  
avantage.)\*

## Vocabulary 86.

distintaménte, *adv.*, (L. distincte.)  
*distinctly.*

lontáno, *adj.* *and* (L. L. longitanus,  
*adv.* away. from longus.)

móstra, *f.*, *show.* (L. monstrare.)

tenóre, *m.*, *tenor* (L. tenor,  
*(in music).* "tone," fr.  
tenere.)

udírrre, *irr. v.*, *to hear.* (L. audire.)

## Vocabulary 87.

aggradírrre, *v.*, *to accept.* (L. ad-gra-  
*tus.*)

perméssso, *m.*, *leave.* (L. permissus.)

smemoráto, *adj.*, (L. ex-memora-  
*forgetful.* tus.)

## Vocabulary 88.

valére, *irr. v.*, *to be* (L. valere.)  
*worth.*

## Vocabulary 89.

assicurazióne, *f.*, (L. ad-securitas.)  
*assurance.*

avvocáto, *m.*, *law-* (L. advocatus.)  
*yer, barrister.*

direttóre, *m.*, *director.* (L. director.)

prevedére, *irr. v.*, (L. praevidere.)  
*to foresee.*

tedéscso, *adj.*, *German.* (G. deutsch,  
O.G. teutsch.)

\* The *d* in E. *advance* and *advantage*  
comes in from a mistaken etymology.

## Vocabulary 90.

Bórsa, *f.*, *Stock Ex.* (L. byrsa.)  
*change.*  
 dolóre, *m.*, *pain.* (L. dolor.)  
 fábrica, *f.*, *manu-* (L. fabrica.)  
*factory.*  
 perveníre, *irr. v.*, (L. pervenire.)  
*to succeed.*  
 sovvenírsi, *pron. v.*, (L. subvenire.)  
*to remember.*  
 temére, *v.*, *to fear.* (L. timere.)  
 zolfanéllo, *m.*, *match.* (I. zolfo, fr.  
 L. sulfur.)

## Vocabulary 91.

acconsentíre, *irr.* (L. ad-consen-  
*v., to agree.* tire.)  
 amicizia, *f.*, *friend-* (L. amicitia.)  
*ship.*  
 gallináccio, *m.*, *tur-* (L. gallina-  
*key (fowl).* ceus.)  
 imbarázzo, *m.*, *trou-* (I. barra, a  
*ble, encumbrance.* "bar," "bar-  
 ricade," from  
 Celtic, bar,  
 "a bough,"  
 F. embarras,  
 E. embarrass.)  
 inútile, *adj.*, *useless.* (L. inutilis.)  
 pentírsi, *pron. v.*, (L. poenitere.)  
*to repent.*  
 stufáto, *m.*, *a stew,* (I. stufa "a  
*stewed meat.* stove," from

O.G. stupa;  
 G. stube; E.  
 stove.)

visita, *f.*, *visit.* (L. visitatio.)  
 volére, *irr. v.*, *to wish.* (L. volo.)

## Vocabulary 92.

armádio, *m.*, *chif-* (L. armarium.)  
*fonier.*  
 arrógere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. arrogare.)  
*add.*  
 calére, *irr. v.*, *to care.* (L. calere.)  
 genufléttere, *irr. v.*, (L. genu-flec-  
*to kneel.* tere.)  
 ingegnére, *m.*, *en-* (L. ingenium.)  
*gineer.*  
 inusáto, *adj.*, *un-* (L. inusitatus.)  
*usual.*  
 íre, *irr. v.*, *to go.* (L. ire.)  
 lícere, *irr. v.*, *to be* (L. licere.)  
*allowed.*  
 lúcere, *irr. v.*, *to shine.* (L. lucere.)  
 péggio, *adv.*, *worse.* (L. pejus.)  
 rilúcere, *irr. v.*, *to* (L. re-lucere.)  
*shine.*  
 ripulíre, *v.*, *to polish.* (L. re-polire.)  
 solére, *irr. v.*, *to be* (L. solere.)  
*accustomed.*  
 splendóre, *m.*, *splen-* (L. splendor.)  
*dour.*  
 stélla, *f.*, *star.* (L. stella.)

# INDEX I. TO VOCABULARIES.

## ITALIAN WORDS.

### A.

**a**, prep., to.  
**a bāda**, adv., waiting.  
**abbāso**, adv., downstairs.  
**abbastanza**, adv., enough.  
**abbisognare**, v., to want.  
**abitare**, v., to reside.  
**abito**, m., coat, habit.  
**abituato**, p., accustomed.  
**abitudine**, f., habit.  
**a causa**, adv., because.  
**accadere**, irr. v., to happen.  
**accaduto**, part., and n. m., happened, the thing that happened.  
**accanto**, adv., near.  
**accettare**, v., to accept.  
**acciaio**, m., steel.  
**accompagnare**, v., to accompany.  
**acconsentire**, v., to agree.  
**accordo**, m., agreement.  
**accorgersi**, pron. v., to become aware.  
**accorrere**, v., to run up to.  
**accostarsi**, pron. v., to go near.  
**accrescere**, irr. v., to increase.  
**acqua**, f., water.  
**acquavite**, f., brandy.  
**ad**, prep., to.  
**addolorarsi**, pron. v., to grieve.  
**addormentarsi**, pron. v., to fall asleep.  
**addosso**, adv., upon.  
**addurre**, irr. v., to bring.  
**adempiere**, v., to fulfil.  
**adesso**, adv., now.  
**adirarsi**, pron. v., to get angry.  
**adulatorē**, m., flatterer.  
**affare**, m., affair, business.  
**affatto**, adv., at all.  
**affermare**, v., to affirm.  
**affettuoso**, adj., affectionate.  
**affidare**, v., to entrust.  
**affiggere**, irr. v., to affix.  
**affinchē**, conj., in order that.  
**affogare**, v., to drown.

### ANDARSENE.

**affondare**, v., to sink.  
**affrettarsi**, pron. v., to hasten.  
**a forza**, adv., by much.  
**Āfrica**, f., Africa.  
**aggradire**, v., to accept.  
**aggrinzito**, part., wrinkled.  
**ago**, m., needle.  
**Agosto**, m., August.  
**aiutare**, v., to help.  
**albergo**, m., hotel, inn.  
**albergatore**, m., innkeeper.  
**Alberto**, m., Albert.  
**alcuno**, adj., some.  
**al di là**, adv., on the other side.  
**allagare**, v., to flood.  
**allegro**, adj., merry.  
**allerta**, interj., watchful.  
**allieva**, f., pupil, f.  
**allievo**, m., pupil, m.  
**allora**, adv., then.  
**altezza**, f., height, highness.  
**alto**, adj., tall, loud, high.  
**altrimenti**, adv., otherwise, or.  
**altro**, adj., other.  
**altrove**, adv., elsewhere.  
**altrui**, pron., of others.  
**a mala pēna**, conj., scarcely.  
**alzarsi**, pron. v., to get up.  
**amaro**, adj., bitter.  
**ambasciata**, f., embassy, message.  
**amēno**, adj., enchanting.  
**America**, f., America.  
**amica**, f., friend, f.  
**amicizia**, f., friendship.  
**amico**, m., friend, m.  
**Amleto**, m., Hamlet.  
**ammalato**, part., ill.  
**ammassare**, v., to accumulate.  
**ammettere**, irr. v., to admit.  
**ammirare**, v., to admire.  
**ammogliarsi**, pron. v., to take a wife.  
**amore**, m., love.  
**anche**, conj., also.  
**ancora**, adv., also, yet.  
**andare**, irr. v., to go.  
**andarsene**, irr. pron. v., to go away.

### ASSICURARE.

**anello**, m., ring.  
**angolo**, m., corner, angle.  
**animo**, interj., courage!  
**anno**, m., year.  
**annoiare**, v., to annoy.  
**antenato**, m., ancestor.  
**Antonio**, m., Anthony.  
**appartenere**, v., to belong.  
**appena**, adv., as soon, scarcely.  
**appena che**, adv., as soon as.  
**appiē**, adv., at the foot.  
**appigionare**, v., to let.  
**applaudire**, v., to applaud.  
**appoggiarsi**, pron. v., to lean to.  
**approdare**, v., to land.  
**approssimarsi**, pron. v., to approach.  
**appunto**, conj., thus, so.  
**Aprile**, m., April.  
**aprire**, irr. v., to open.  
**a proposito**, conj., by the by.  
**arancia**, f., orange.  
**arbore**, m., tree.  
**architetto**, m., architect.  
**ardere**, irr. v., to burn.  
**aria**, f., air.  
**armadio**, m., chiffonier.  
**Arno**, m., Arno (river).  
**arrabbiarsi**, pron. v., to get angry.  
**arrabbiato**, part., angry, mad (of a dog), cross.  
**arrendersi**, pron. v., to surrender.  
**arrestare**, v., to arrest.  
**arricchire**, v., to enrich.  
**arrivare**, v., to arrive.  
**arroganza**, f., overbearing.  
**arrögere**, irr. v., to add.  
**arrossire**, v., to blush.  
**arrösto**, m., roast.  
**arte**, f., art.  
**asciugamano**, m., towel.  
**ascoltare**, v., to listen.  
**Asia**, f., Asia.  
**aspetto**, m., appearance.  
**aspettare**, v., to wait.  
**aspettarsi**, pron. v., to expect.  
**assai**, adv., too much.  
**assassino**, m., murderer.  
**assicurare**, v., to insure.

## ASSICURAZIONE.

**assicurazióne**, *f.*, insurance.  
**assistere**, *v.*, to assist.  
**assolutamente**, *adv.*, absolutely.  
**assolvere**, *irr. v.*, to absolve.  
**astenersi**, *irr. v.*, to abstain.  
**attento**, *adj.*, careful, attentive.  
**attenzióne**, *f.*, attention.  
**attore**, *m.*, actor.  
**attórno**, *adv.*, around.  
**attrarre**, *irr. v.*, to attract.  
**attrice**, *f.*, actress.  
**attristarsi**, *pron. v.*, to grieve.  
**Austriaco**, *adj.*, Austrian.  
**autore**, *m.*, author.  
**autunno**, *m.*, autumn.  
**avanti**, *adv.*, before, *interj.*, forward!  
**avantiéri**, *adv.*, the day before yesterday.  
**avanzarsi**, *pron. v.*, to advance.  
**avaro**, *adj.* and *n.*, miser, avaricious.  
**avere**, *irr. v.*, to have.  
**avere**, *n. m.*, property, possession.  
**avere a**, *irr. v.*, to be obliged.  
**avvedersi**, *irr. pron. v.*, to become aware.  
**avvelenato**, *part.*, poisoned.  
**avvenire**, *n. m.*, future.  
**avviarsi**, *pron. v.*, to start.  
**avvicinarsi**, *pron. v.*, to approach.  
**avvocato**, *m.*, lawyer.  
**azione**, *f.*, action, deed.

## B.

**bada** (*a*), *adv.*, waiting.  
**ballare**, *v.*, to dance.  
**ballo**, *m.*, dance.  
**bambino**, *m.*, baby.  
**bankiere**, *m.*, banker.  
**baronessa**, *f.*, baroness.  
**basta!** *interj.*, enough!  
**bastare**, *imp. v.*, to be sufficient.  
**bastonare**, *v.*, to thrash.  
**bastone**, *m.*, stick.  
**battaglia**, *f.*, battle.  
**battello**, *m.*, boat.  
**battere**, *v.*, to beat.  
**battersi**, *pron. v.*, to fight.  
**battesimo**, *m.*, baptism.  
**Belgio**, *m.*, Belgium.  
**bello**, *adj.*, beautiful.  
**bene**, *n. m.*, good.  
**bene**, *adv.*, well.  
**benefattore**, *m.*, benefactor.  
**benevolente**, *benevolo*, *adj.*, benevolent.  
**bere**, *irr. v.*, to drink.

## CAPITANO.

**Berlino**, *f.*, Berlin.  
**bevere**, *irr. v.*, to drink.  
**bevuto**, *part.*, drunk.  
**bianco**, *adv.*, white.  
**biasimare**, *v.*, to blame.  
**bicchiere**, *m.*, glass.  
**bigio**, *adv.*, grey.  
**biglietto**, *m.*, note, ticket.  
**birra**, *f.*, beer.  
**bisognare**, *imp. v.*, to be necessary.  
**bisogno**, *m.*, need, want.  
**bizzeffe** (*a*), *adv.*, plentifully.  
**bollire**, *v.*, to boil.  
**bontà**, *f.*, kindness.  
**borsa**, *f.*, Stock Exchange, purse.  
**bosco**, *m.*, wood, forest.  
**bottegaio**, *m.*, shopkeeper.  
**bottiglia**, *f.*, bottle.  
**braccio**, *m.*, arm.  
**Brasile**, *m.*, Brazil.  
**brutto**, *adj.*, ugly.  
**bue**, *m.*, ox.  
**bugia**, *f.*, lie.  
**buono**, *adj.*, good, kind.  
**butirro**, *m.*, butter.

## C.

**caccia**, *f.*, hunt, shooting-party.  
**cadere**, *irr. v.*, to fall.  
**caffè**, *m.*, coffee.  
**calamaio**, *m.*, inkstand.  
**calamita**, *f.*, loadstone.  
**caldo**, *adj.*, warm.  
**calere**, *irr. v.*, to be important.  
**calle**, *m.*, path.  
**calunnia**, *f.*, calumny.  
**calunniare**, *v.*, to calumniate.  
**calzolajo**, *m.*, shoemaker.  
**cambiàle**, *f.*, bill of exchange.  
**cambiare**, *v.*, to change.  
**cambio**, *m.*, change, agio.  
**camera**, *f.*, room.  
**cameriere**, *m.*, waiter.  
**camminare**, *v.*, to walk.  
**campagna**, *f.*, country, field.  
**campanile**, *m.*, steeple.  
**campidoglio**, *m.*, capitol.  
**campo**, *m.*, field, camp.  
**canale**, *m.*, canal.  
**candela**, *f.*, candle.  
**cane**, *m.*, dog.  
**cantare**, *v.*, to sing.  
**cantatrice**, *f.*, singer.  
**cantina**, *f.*, cellar.  
**canzone**, *f.*, song.  
**capello**, *m.*, hair.  
**capire**, *v.*, to understand.  
**capitale**, *m.* and *f.*, capital.  
**capitano**, *m.*, captain.

## COMMEDIA.

**capo**, *m.*, head.  
**cappello**, *m.*, hat.  
**cappellaio**, *m.*, hatter.  
**capro**, *m.*, goat.  
**carbóne**, *m.*, coal.  
**Carlo**, *m.*, Charles.  
**carne**, *f.*, meat, flesh.  
**oaro**, *adj.*, dear.  
**carpóni**, *adv.*, on all fours.  
**carrozza**, *f.*, carriage.  
**carta**, *f.*, paper.  
**carte**, *f. pl.*, cards.  
**casa**, *f.*, house, home.  
**caso**, *m.*, case.  
**cáso**, *in, adv.*, in case.  
**castagna**, *f.*, chestnut.  
**castello**, *m.*, castle.  
**cattivo**, *adj.*, bad.  
**cáusa** (*a*), *adv.*, because.  
**cavalcioni**, *adv.*, astride.  
**cavaliere**, *m.*, knight.  
**cavállo**, *m.*, horse.  
**celebre**, *adj.*, celebrated.  
**celeramente**, *adv.*, quickly.  
**cena**, *f.*, supper.  
**cenare**, *v.*, to sup.  
**cera**, *f.*, wax, complexion.  
**cercare**, *v.*, to seek.  
**certamente**, *adv.*, certainly.  
**certo**, *adj.*, certain; *adv.*, certainly.  
**certo** (*di*), *adv.*, certainly.  
**cervello**, *m.*, brain.  
**checche**, *pron.*, whatever.  
**che cosa**, *pron.*, what.  
**chiamare**, *v.*, to call.  
**Chianti**, *f.*, Chianti (in Tuscany).  
**chiáro**, *adj.*, clear.  
**chiedere**, *irr. v.*, to ask.  
**chiesa**, *f.*, church.  
**chiunque**, *pron.*, whosoever.  
**chiudere**, *irr. v.*, to close, to shut.  
**ci**, *adv.*, there; *pron.*, us, to us.  
**cieco**, *adj.*, blind.  
**cimitero**, *m.*, cemetery.  
**Cina**, *f.*, China.  
**cingere**, *irr. v.*, to gird.  
**cio**, *pron.*, this.  
**cioccolata**, *f.*, chocolate.  
**circa**, *adv.*, around, about.  
**ciriegia**, *f.*, cherry.  
**citta**, *f.*, town, city.  
**cittadino**, *m.*, citizen.  
**classe**, *f.*, class.  
**cogliere**, *irr. v.*, to gather.  
**colazione**, *f.*, breakfast.  
**collana**, *f.*, chain.  
**colóre**, *m.*, colour.  
**Colombo**, *m.*, Columbus.  
**colpa**, *f.*, fault.  
**colpo**, *m.*, blow.  
**coltello**, *m.*, knife.  
**combattere**, *v.*, to fight.  
**cóme**, *conj.*, as.  
**cominciare**, *v.*, to begin.  
**commédia**, *f.*, comedy.

## COMMETTERE.

commettere, *irr. v.*, to commit.  
 commuovere, *irr. v.*, to move.  
 Como, *f.*, Como.  
 compagnia, *f.*, company.  
 compagno, *m.*, companion.  
 compiangere, *irr. v.*, to pity.  
 compiacersi, *pron. v.*, to be pleased.  
 completamente, *adv.*, completely.  
 comporre, *irr. v.*, to compose.  
 compra, *f.*, purchase.  
 comprare, *v.*, to buy.  
 compromettere, *irr. v.*, to compromise.  
 comune, *adj.*, mutual.  
 con, *prep.*, with.  
 concedere, *irr. v.*, to grant.  
 concerto, *m.*, concert.  
 concetto, *m.*, thought.  
 condannare, *v.*, to condemn.  
 condotta, *f.*, behaviour.  
 condurre, *irr. v.*, to bring, to lead.  
 condursi, *irr. v.*, to behave.  
 confidenza, *f.*, confidence.  
 conoscere, *irr. v.*, to know.  
 conosciuto, *part.*, known.  
 conseguenza, *f.*, consequence.  
 consigliare, *v.*, to advise.  
 consiglio, *m.*, advice.  
 contadino, *m.*, peasant.  
 conte, *m.*, earl.  
 contemporaneo, *adj.*, contemporary.  
 contentarsi, *pron. v.*, to be satisfied.  
 contento, *adj.*, content.  
 contessa, *f.*, countess.  
 continuo, *adj.*, continual.  
 conto, *m.*, bill, account.  
 conto, tener, *irr. v.*, to value.  
 contrario (al), *adv.*, on the contrary.  
 contro, *adv.*, against.  
 convenire, *irr. v.*, to agree, to be proper.  
 conversare, *v.*, to converse.  
 copiare, *v.*, to copy.  
 corpo di Bacco! *interj.*, good heavens!  
 correggere, *irr. v.*, to correct.  
 correre, *v.*, to run.  
 corriere, *m.*, courier.  
 corrispondere, *irr. v.*, to correspond.  
 corrumpere, *irr. v.*, to corrupt.  
 corto, *adj.*, short.  
 cortile, *m.*, courtyard.  
 cosa, *f.*, thing.  
 così, *conj.*, thus, so.  
 costa, *f.*, coast.

## DIROTTA.

costare, *v.*, to cost.  
 credere, *irr. v.*, to believe.  
 crescere, *irr. v.*, to grow.  
 Cresò, *m.*, Croesus.  
 Cristo, *m.*, Christ.  
 crocifiggere, *irr. v.*, to crucify.  
 crucciarsi, *pron. v.*, to get angry.  
 cucina, *f.*, kitchen.  
 cucire, *v.*, to sew.  
 cugina, *f.*, cousin, *f.*  
 cugino, *m.*, cousin, *m.*  
 cuore, *m.*, heart.  
 curarsi, *pron. v.*, to care.

## D.

da, *prep.*, from.  
 danaro, *m.*, money.  
 danzare, *v.*, to dance.  
 da per tutto, *adv.*, everywhere.  
 dare, *irr. v.*, to give.  
 davanti, *adv.*, before.  
 davvero, *adv.*, truly.  
 debito, *m.*, debt.  
 debole, *adj.*, weak.  
 Dicembre, *m.*, December.  
 decidere, *v.*, to decide.  
 degenerare, *v.*, to degenerate.  
 delitto, *m.*, misdemeanour.  
 delizia, *f.*, pleasure.  
 denaro, *m.*, money.  
 dente, *m.*, tooth.  
 dentro, *adv.*, inside.  
 deporre, *irr. v.*, to depose.  
 derivare, *v.*, to derive.  
 desiderare, *v.*, to wish.  
 desistere, *irr. v.*, to desist.  
 dettare, *v.*, to dictate.  
 detto, *part.*, said.  
 di, *m.*, day.  
 di, *prep.*, of.  
 di certo, *adv.*, certainly.  
 didiaciare, *v.*, to melt (*of ice*).  
 dietro, *adv.*, behind.  
 difendere, *v.*, to protect.  
 difetto, *m.*, fault.  
 difficile, *adj.*, difficult.  
 dilettarsi, *pron. v.*, to delight.  
 diligente, *adj.*, diligent.  
 dimenticarsi, *pron. v.*, to forget.  
 dimorare, *v.*, to reside.  
 dintorno, *adv.*, around.  
 Dio, *m.*, God.  
 dipingere, *irr. v.*, to paint.  
 di rado, *adv.*, seldom.  
 dire, *irr. v.*, to say.  
 direttore, *m.*, director.  
 dirimpetto, *adv.*, opposite.  
 diritto, *m.*, right.  
 dirotta (alla), *adv.*, excessively (*of rain*).

## I-URO.

disaccordo, *m.*, disagreement.  
 discendere, *v.*, to descend.  
 discorrere, *v.*, to discourse.  
 discorso, *m.*, speech.  
 disegno, *m.*, drawing, purpose.  
 disgrazia, *f.*, misfortune.  
 disobbediente, *adj.*, disobedient.  
 disonestamente, *adv.*, dishonestly.  
 disonorevole, *adj.*, dishonourable.  
 dispaccio, *m.*, telegram, dispatch.  
 disporre, *irr. v.*, to dispose.  
 disposto, *part.*, disposed.  
 disprezzare, *v.*, to despise.  
 distinguere, *irr. v.*, to distinguish.  
 distintamente, *adv.*, distinctly.  
 distogliere, *irr. v.*, to dissuade.  
 distrarre, *irr. v.*, to distract.  
 distruggere, *irr. v.*, to destroy.  
 disubbidire, *v.*, to disobey.  
 dito, *m.* (pl. dita, diti), finger.  
 divellere, *irr. v.*, to uproot.  
 diversamente, *adv.*, on the contrary, differently.  
 diverso, *adj.*, some, different.  
 divertimento, *m.*, amusement.  
 divertirsi, *pron. v.*, to amuse oneself.  
 dividere, *v.*, to divide.  
 dolce, *adj.*, sweet.  
 dolere, *irr. v.*, to ache.  
 dolersi, *irr. pron. v.*, to complain.  
 dolore, *m.*, pain.  
 domandare, *v.*, to ask.  
 Domenica, *f.*, Sunday.  
 domani, *adv.*, to-morrow.  
 dominio, *m.*, dominion.  
 donde, *adv.*, whence.  
 donna, *f.*, woman.  
 dopo, *adv.*, afterwards.  
 d'ora in poi, *adv.*, henceforth.  
 dormire, *v.*, to sleep.  
 dotto, *adj.*, learned.  
 dottore, *m.*, doctor, physician.  
 dove, *adv.*, where.  
 dovere, *n. m.*, duty.  
 dovere, *irr. v.*, to be obliged.  
 Dresda, *f.*, Dresden.  
 dubitare, *v.*, to doubt.  
 duca, *f.*, duke.  
 duello, *m.*, duel.  
 duetto, *m.*, duet.  
 dunque, *conj.*, therefore.  
 durante, *adv.*, whilst, during.  
 duro, *adj.*, hard.

**E.**

e, conj., and.  
e . . . e, conj., both.  
ébano, m., ebony.  
eccetto, conj., except.  
eccezione, f., exception.  
ecónomo, adj., economical.  
educato, part., educated.  
educazione, f., education.  
elefante, m., elephant.  
elemósina, f., alms.  
eloquente, adj., eloquent.  
Emanuel, m., Em-  
manuel.  
Emma, f., Emma.  
enórme, adj., heavy, great.  
enormemente, adv., ex-  
tremely, enormously.  
Enrico, m., Henry.  
entrámbi, pron., both.  
entrare, v., to enter.  
equivalere, irr. v., to be  
equivalent.  
erba, f., grass.  
eredità, f., inheritance.  
erigere, irr. v., to erect.  
errore, m., error.  
esámo, m., examination.  
esaminatore, m., examiner.  
esercito, m., army.  
esercizio, m., exercise.  
esistere, irr. v., to exist.  
espellere, irr. v., to expel.  
esposizione, f., exhibition.  
esprimere, irr. v., to express.  
essere, irr. v., to be.  
està, estate, f., summer.  
estrarre, irr. v., to extract.  
età, f., age.  
Europa, f., Europe.  
evángelo, m., gospel.

**F.**

fabbro, m., blacksmith.  
fabbrica, f., manufactory.  
faccia, f., face.  
faccia (in), adv., opposite.  
fácil, adj., easy.  
falegname, m., joiner.  
falso, adj., false.  
fame, f., hunger.  
famiglia, f., family.  
fanciullo, m., child.  
fare, irr. v., to do, to make.  
farfália, f., butterfly.  
fato, m., fate.  
fatti (in), adv., in fact.  
fatto, part., done, made.  
favóre, m., favour.  
favóre (a), adv., in favour.  
fazzoletto, m., pocket-hand-  
kerchief.  
Febbraio, m., February.  
febbre, f., fever.  
fede, f., faith.  
felice, adj., happy, glad.

**GENITORE.**

ferire, v., to wound.  
ferita, f., wound.  
fermarsi, pron. v., to stop.  
ferro, m., iron.  
ferrovia, f., railway.  
festa, f., holiday.  
fiamma, f., flame.  
fiato, m., breath.  
fico, m., fig-tree, fig.  
fidarsi, pron. v., to trust.  
figlia, f., daughter.  
figlio, m., son.  
fine (a), adv., in order.  
fine (alla), adv., at last.  
finestra, f., window.  
fingere, irr. v., to feign.  
finire, v., to finish.  
fino, adv., until.  
fiore, m., flower.  
firmare, v., to sign.  
fiume, m., river.  
foglio, m., sheet (of paper).  
fondere, v., to melt.  
forchetta, f., fork.  
forestiere, m., stranger, fo-  
reigner.  
formaggio, m., cheese.  
forse, conj., perhaps.  
forte, adj., strong.  
fortuna, f., fortune.  
forza (a), adv., by means.  
fra, prep., among.  
Francesco, m., Francis.  
francese, adj., French.  
Francia, f., France.  
franco, m., franc (about 10  
pence).  
frapporre, irr. v., to put be-  
tween.  
fratello, m., brother.  
freddo, adj., cold.  
fresco, adj., fresh, new.  
fretta, f., haste.  
friggere, irr. v., to fry.  
frutto, m., fruit.  
fucile, m., gun.  
fuggire, v., to run away.  
fumare, v., to smoke (to-  
bacco).  
fumicare, v., to smoke (fire).  
fumo, m., smoke.  
fuoco, m., fire.  
fuori, adv., outside.  
futuro, m., future.

**G.**

galantuomo, m., gentleman.  
gallinaccio, m., turkey  
(fowl).  
gamba, f., leg.  
garofano, m., pink  
gas, m., gas.  
gatto, m., cat.  
gelare, imp. v., to freeze.  
generale, m., general.  
generoso, adj., generous.  
genitore, m., parent.

**IMMEDIATAMENTE.**

Gennajo, m., January.  
genuflettere, irr. v., to kneel  
down.  
Germania, f., Germany.  
ghiaccio, m., ice.  
già, adv., already.  
giacchè, conj., since.  
giallo, adj., yellow.  
giardino, m., garden.  
giocare and ginocare, v., to  
play.  
gioia, f., joy.  
gioiello, m., jewel.  
giornale, m., newspaper.  
giorno, m., day.  
Giovanni, m., John.  
giovine, adj., young.  
gittarsi, pron. v., to throw  
oneself.  
giù, adv., down.  
Giudeo, adj., Jewish.  
giudice, m., judge.  
giudizio, m., judgment.  
Giugno, m., June.  
giungere, irr. v., to arrive.  
giunto, part., arrived.  
giusta, conj., according.  
godere, v., to enjoy.  
gola, f., throat.  
gonfio, adj., swollen.  
governatore, m., governor.  
governo, m., government.  
grado, m., will, pleasure.  
grado (di buon), adv., agree-  
ably.  
grande, adj., tall, great,  
large.  
grandinare, imp. v., to hail.  
grano, m., wheat, corn.  
grato, adj., grateful.  
grave, adj., serious.  
grazia, f. s., free pardon,  
(pl.) thanks.  
Greco, adj., Greek.  
gridare, v., to shout.  
guadagnare, v., to gain.  
guancia, f., cheek.  
guanto, m., glove.  
guardare, v., to look, to  
watch.  
guarire, v., to heal.  
guerra, f., war.  
Guglielmo, m., William.

**—**

ieri, adv., yesterday.  
ieri l'altro, adv., the day  
before yesterday.  
ignobile, adj., ignoble.  
il, art. m., the.  
imbarazzo, m., trouble, en-  
cumbrance.  
imbarcarsi, pron. v., to em-  
bark.  
immagine, f., image.  
immediatamente, adv., at  
once.

## IMMERGERE.

**immérgere**, *irr. v.*, to dip into.  
**impadronirsi**, *pron. v.*, to take possession.  
**impallidire**, *v.*, to become pale.  
**imparare**, *v.*, to learn.  
**impedire**, *v.*, to impede.  
**impellere**, *irr. v.*, to impel.  
**imporre**, *irr. v.*, to impose.  
**importante**, *adj.*, important.  
**impossibile**, *adj.*, impossible.  
**inanellato**, *part.*, curled.  
**incapace**, *adj.*, incapable.  
**incendio**, *m.*, fire, conflagration.  
**inchiostro**, *ink*.  
**incontrare**, *v.*, to meet.  
**incorrere**, *irr. v.*, to incur.  
**indigestione**, *f.*, indigestion.  
**indirizzare**, *v.*, to show the way, to address.  
**infastidirsi**, *pron. v.*, to become fastidious.  
**infatti**, *conj.*, in fact.  
**infelice**, *adj.*, unhappy.  
**infigardaggine**, *f.*, laziness.  
**infigardo**, *adj.*, lazy.  
**infondere**, *v.*, to infuse.  
**ingannare**, *v.*, to deceive.  
**ingannarsi**, *pron. v.*, to be mistaken.  
**ingegnere**, *m.*, engineer.  
**Inghilterra**, *f.*, England.  
**ingnottire**, *v.*, to swallow.  
**Inglese**, *adj.*, English.  
**innocente**, *adj.*, innocent.  
**innocenza**, *f.*, innocence.  
**insalata**, *f.*, salad.  
**insegnare**, *v.*, to teach.  
**inseguire**, *v.*, to pursue.  
**insieme**, *adv.*, together.  
**insultare**, *v.*, to insult.  
**insulto**, *m.*, insult.  
**integro**, *adj.*, honest.  
**intendere**, *v.*, to understand.  
**intero**, *adj.*, whole.  
**intimo**, *adj.*, intimate.  
**intorno** (*all'*), *adv.*, around.  
**intraprendere**, *v.*, to undertake.  
**intrapresa**, *f.*, undertaking.  
**inusato**, *adj.*, unusual.  
**inutile**, *adj.*, useless.  
**invadere**, *v.*, to invade.  
**invecchiare**, *v.*, to become old.  
**inverno**, *m.*, winter.  
**invitare**, *v.*, to invite.  
**invitato**, *part.*, invited.  
**invito**, *m.*, invitation.  
**ire**, *irr. v.*, to go.  
**irresistibilmente**, *adv.*, irresistibly.  
**Italia**, *f.*, Italy.  
**Italiano**, *adj.*, Italian.

## MALINCUORE.

## L.

**la**, *art. f.*, the.  
**là**, *adv.*, there.  
**ladro**, *m.*, thief.  
**lago**, *m.*, lake.  
**lamento**, *m.*, complaint.  
**lampada**, *f.*, lamp.  
**lampeggiare**, *imp. v.*, to lighten.  
**lanterna**, *f.*, lantern.  
**largo**, *adj.*, wide.  
**lasciare**, *v.*, to leave, to let.  
**Latino**, *adj.*, Latin.  
**lato**, *m.*, side.  
**latte**, *m.*, milk.  
**lavorare**, *v.*, to work.  
**ledere**, *irr. v.*, to hurt.  
**legge**, *f.*, law.  
**leggere**, *irr. v.*, to read.  
**legno**, *m.*, wood.  
**leone**, *m.*, lion.  
**lettera**, *f.*, letter.  
**letto**, *n. m.*, bed.  
**lettura**, *f.*, lecture.  
**levante**, *m.*, east.  
**lezione**, *f.*, lesson.  
**liberamente**, *adv.*, freely.  
**liberare**, *v.*, to free.  
**liberta**, *f.*, freedom, liberty.  
**libraio**, *m.*, bookseller.  
**libreria**, *f.*, library.  
**libro**, *m.*, book.  
**licere**, *irr. v.*, to be allowed.  
**lingua**, *f.*, language, tongue.  
**liquore**, *m.*, liquor.  
**lira**, *f.* (Italian money, about 10 pence).  
**lodare**, *v.*, to praise.  
**Lombardia**, *f.*, Lombardy.  
**Londra**, *f.*, London.  
**lontano**, *adj.* and *adv.*, far.  
**luocere**, *irr. v.*, to shine.  
**lucrativo**, *adj.*, lucrative.  
**Luglio**, *m.*, July.  
**Luisa**, *f.*, Louise.  
**lume**, *m.*, light.  
**luna**, *f.*, moon.  
**lungo**, *adj.*, long.  
**lungo**, *adv.*, along.  
**luogo** (*in*), *adv.*, instead.  
**lupo**, *m.*, wolf.

## M.

**maccherone**, *m.*, macaroni.  
**madre**, *f.*, mother.  
**maestro**, *m.*, master.  
**magazzino**, *m.*, warehouse.  
**magnifico**, *adj.*, magnificent.  
**mái**, *adv.*, ever.  
**malattia**, *f.*, illness.  
**mále**, *n. m.*, evil.  
**mále**, *adv.*, badly.  
**malgrado**, *adv.*, in spite.  
**malincuore** (*a*), *unwillingly*.

## MONTAGNA

**málo**, *adj.*, bad.  
**manicare**, *v.*, to fail, to want.  
**mandare**, *v.*, to send.  
**mangiare**, *v.*, to eat.  
**mànica**, *f.*, sleeve.  
**máno**, *f.*, hand.  
**máno**, *tener*, *irr. v.*, to help.  
**maravigliarsi**, *pron. v.*, to be astonished.  
**marciare**, *v.*, to march.  
**màre**, *m.*, sea.  
**margheritina**, *f.*, daisy.  
**Maria**, *Mary*.  
**marinaro**, *m.*, sailor.  
**maritarsi**, *pron. v.*, to get married.  
**márm**, *m.*, marble.  
**Márzo**, *m.*, March.  
**mascella**, *f.*, jaw.  
**máscera**, *f.*, mask.  
**matina**, *f.*, morning.  
**maturo**, *adj.*, ripe.  
**mediante**, *adv.*, by means.  
**medicina**, *f.*, medicine.  
**medico**, *m.*, physician.  
**meglio**, *adv.* and *n. m.*, better.  
**mela**, *f.*, apple.  
**memória**, *f.*, memory.  
**meno**, *adv.*, less.  
**mente**, *f.*, mind.  
**mentire**, *v.*, to lie.  
**mercato**, *m.*, market.  
**merce**, *f.*, goods, merchandise.  
**meritare**, *v.*, to deserve.  
**mescere**, *irr. v.*, to mix, to pour out.  
**mese**, *m.*, month.  
**mestiere**, *m.*, handicraft.  
**mettere**, *irr. v.*, to put.  
**mezzanotte**, *f.*, midnight.  
**mezzo**, *n. m.*, half; means.  
**mezzogiorno**, *m.*, noon.  
**mezzo** (*in*), *adv.*, in the midst.  
**mezzo** (*per*), *adv.*, by means of.  
**míca**, *adv.*, at all.  
**miglio**, *m.* (*pl. f.*), mile.  
**migliorarsi**, *pron. v.*, to improve.  
**migliore**, *adj.*, better.  
**mignolo**, *adj.*, little (*finger*).  
**Milano**, *f.*, Milan.  
**míle**, *adj.*, thousand.  
**ministro**, *m.*, minister.  
**minuto**, *m.*, minute.  
**mischiare**, *v.*, to mix.  
**miseria**, *f.*, poverty, misery.  
**móbile**, *m.*, furniture.  
**modestia**, *f.*, modesty.  
**modesto**, *adj.*, modest.  
**módo**, *m.*, way, manner.  
**móglie**, *f.*, wife.  
**mólto**, *adv.* and *adj.*, much, many.  
**montagna**, *f.*, mountain.



## MONTARE.

montàre, *v.*, to ascend.  
 mōnte, *m.*, mountain.  
 Mōnte Biāncō, *m.*, Mont Blanc.  
 Mōnte Rōsa, *m.*, Monte Rosa.  
 mórdere, *v.*, to bite.  
 morire, *irr. v.*, to die.  
 mortàle, *adj.*, mortal.  
 mórte, *f.*, death.  
 móstra, *f.*, show.  
 mostràre, *v.*, to show.  
 motivo, *m.*, cause, motive.  
 mūro, *m.*, wall.  
 música, *f.*, music.  
 mutàre, *v.*, to change.

## N.

Napoleóne, *m.*, Napoleon.  
 narràre, *v.*, to relate.  
 natàle, *adj.*, native.  
 nascóndere, *irr. v.*, to hide.  
 nàve, *f.*, ship.  
 nazione, *f.*, nation.  
 nè, *adv.*, nor.  
 necessarió, *adj.*, necessary.  
 negàre, *v.*, to deny.  
 negligere, *irr. v.*, to neglect.  
 negoziànte, *m.*, merchant.  
 negózio, *m.*, warehouse, business.  
 nemíco, *m.*, enemy.  
 nemmeno, *adv.*, not even.  
 nero, *adj.*, black.  
 nessuno, *adj.*, nobody.  
 neve, *f.*, snow.  
 nevicàre, *imp. v.*, to snow.  
 niente, *m.*, nothing.  
 nipóte, *m.*, nephew.  
 nóbile, *adj.*, noble.  
 nócciolo, *m.*, stone (of fruit).  
 nōce, *m.* and *f.*, walnut-tree, walnut.  
 nódo, *m.*, knot.  
 nóia, *f.*, bother, spleen.  
 nominàre, *v.*, to name.  
 nomináto, *part.*, named.  
 non, *adv.*, no.  
 nondiméno, *conj.*, nevertheless.  
 nōnna, *f.*, grandmother.  
 nōnno, *m.*, grandfather.  
 nórd, *m.*, north.  
 notizia, *f.*, notice, news.  
 nótte, *f.*, night.  
 novèlla, *f.*, novel, news.  
 nùlla, *pron.*, nothing.  
 numerosó, *adj.*, numerous.  
 nuócere, *v.*, to injure, to be hurtful.  
 nuóva, *n. f.*, news.  
 nuóvo, *adj.*, new.

## O.

o, *conj.*, or.  
 obbediènte, *adj.*, obedient.  
 obbligàre, *v.*, to oblige.

## PARLARE.

obliàre, *v.*, to forget.  
 occasióne, *f.*, chance, occasion.  
 ócchi (a quàttrō), *adv.*, privately.  
 ócchio, *m.*, eye.  
 occórrere, *imp. v.*, to be wanted.  
 occupáto, *part.*, busy.  
 odiàre, *v.*, to hate.  
 offendere, *v.*, to offend.  
 offerta, *f.*, offer.  
 offeso, *part.*, offended.  
 offríre, *irr. v.*, to offer.  
 óggi, *adv.*, to-day.  
 ógni, *adj.*, each, every.  
 ógni quál vólta, *adv.*, whenever.  
 oh! *interj.*, oh!  
 Olànda, *f.*, Holland.  
 ólio, *m.*, oil.  
 óltre, *adv.*, besides.  
 ombrello, *m.*, umbrella.  
 onestà, *f.*, honesty.  
 onestamente, *adv.*, honestly.  
 onesto, *adj.*, honest.  
 onoràre, *v.*, to honour.  
 ónta (ad), *adv.*, in spite.  
 ópera, *f.*, opera.  
 oppressóre, *m.*, oppressor.  
 opprimere, *irr. v.*, to oppress.  
 óra, *n.*, hour; *adv.*, now.  
 oratóre, *m.*, orator.  
 ordinàre, *v.*, to order.  
 órdine, *m.*, order.  
 orecchino, *m.*, earring.  
 orecchio, *m.*, ear.  
 ormaí, oramai, *adv.*, now, henceforth.  
 óro, *m.*, gold.  
 orológio, *m.*, watch.  
 orribile, *adj.*, horrible.  
 órto, *m.*, fruit-garden.  
 osàre, *v.*, to dare.  
 óspedale, *m.*, hospital.  
 ósso, *m.*, bone.  
 ostàcolo, *m.*, obstacle.  
 osteria, *f.*, inn.  
 ostinàto, *p. adj.*, obstinate.  
 ózio, *m.*, laziness.  
 ozióso, *adj.*, lazy.

## P.

pádre, *m.*, father.  
 padróne, *m.*, master, owner.  
 paese, *m.*, country.  
 pága, *f.*, pay.  
 pagàre, *v.*, to pay.  
 página, *f.*, page.  
 palàzzo, *m.*, palace.  
 páne, *m.*, bread.  
 párcō, *m.*, park.  
 parecchi, *adj.*, several.  
 parere, *m.*, opinion.  
 parere, *v.*, to seem.  
 Parigi, *f.*, Paris.  
 parlàre, *v.*, to speak.

## PIPA.

paróla, *f.*, word.  
 pártē, *f.*, part, side.  
 partenza, *f.*, departure.  
 partíre, *v.*, to depart.  
 partíta, *f.*, party, game.  
 partíto, *m.*, profit.  
 passàre, *v.*, to pass.  
 passáto, *part.*, past.  
 passeggiàta, *f.*, passeggió, *m.*, walk, promenade.  
 passeggiàre, *v.*, to promenade.  
 pássero, *m.*, sparrow.  
 pátria, *f.*, fatherland.  
 páura, *f.*, fright, (far) to frighten.  
 pazienza, *f.*, patience.  
 peccáto, *m.*, sin.  
 pecóra, *f.*, sheep.  
 peggio, *adv.*, worse.  
 peggioràre, *v.*, to become worse.  
 peggióre, *adj.*, worse.  
 pelle, *f.*, skin.  
 penisola, *f.*, peninsula.  
 penna, *f.*, pen.  
 pensàre, *v.*, to think.  
 pentirsi, *pron. v.*, to repent  
 per, *prep.*, for.  
 péra, *f.*, pear.  
 perche, *adv.*, why, and *conj.* because.  
 perciò, *conj.*, therefore.  
 percuótere, *irr. v.*, to strike  
 pérdere, *v.*, to lose.  
 pérdita, *f.*, loss.  
 perdonàre, *v.*, to pardon.  
 pericólo, *m.*, danger.  
 permesso, *m.*, permission  
 leave.  
 perméttēre, *irr. v.*, to allow  
 però, *conj.*, however.  
 persóna, *f.*, person.  
 persóna (in), *adv.*, personally.  
 perveníre, *irr. v.*, to succeed.  
 pesante, *adj.*, heavy.  
 pesca, *f.*, p. ach.  
 pesce, *m.*, fish.  
 petizióne, *f.*, petition.  
 petto, *m.*, chest.  
 piacere, *n. m.*, pleasure.  
 piacere, *v.*, to please  
 piàngere, *irr. v.*, to cry.  
 piano, *n. m.*, floor.  
 piàno, *adj.*, slow, soft, quiet.  
 pianofórtē, *m.*, piano.  
 piánta, *f.*, plant.  
 piànto, *m.*, crying (the).  
 piátto, *m.*, plate, dish.  
 piccòlo, *adj.*, small.  
 piède, *m.*, foot.  
 pièdi (in), *adv.*, standing.  
 piéno, *adj.*, full.  
 Piètro, *m.*, Peter.  
 pióggia, *f.*, rain.  
 pióvere, *imp. v.*, to rain.  
 pipa, *f.*, pipe.

## PITTORE.

**pittóre**, *m.*, painter, *m.*  
**pittrice**, *f.*, painter, *f.*  
**pittura**, *f.*, painting.  
**più**, *adv.*, more.  
**piuttosto**, *conj.*, rather, sooner.  
**poco**, *adj.* and *adv.*, little, few.  
**poco (fra)**, *adv.*, presently.  
**poco a poco**, *adv.*, little by little.  
**podàgra**, *f.*, gout.  
**podere**, *m.*, estate.  
**poesia**, *f.*, poetry.  
**póí**, *adv.*, afterwards.  
**politico**, *adj.*, political.  
**poltróne**, *m.*, coward.  
**pólvere**, *f.*, dust, gunpowder.  
**pópulo**, *m.*, people.  
**póre**, *irr. v.*, to put.  
**pórtà**, *f.*, door.  
**portàre**, *v.*, to bring.  
**possedere**, *irr. v.*, to possess.  
**possente**, *adj.*, powerful.  
**possibile**, *adj.*, possible.  
**possibilmente**, *adv.*, possibly.  
**pósta**, *f.*, post-office.  
**pósta (a bella)**, *adv.*, on purpose.  
**pósto**, *m.*, place, situation, room.  
**potere**, *irr. v.*, to be able.  
**póvero**, *adj.*, poor.  
**pózzo**, *m.*, a well.  
**pranzàre**, *v.*, to dine.  
**prânzo**, *m.*, dinner.  
**pràto**, *m.*, field, grass-plot, meadow.  
**preferire**, *v.*, to prefer.  
**pregàre**, *v.*, to pray.  
**premiàre**, *v.*, to reward.  
**premio**, *prize*, reward.  
**prendere**, *irr. v.*, to take.  
**preparàto**, *part.*, prepared.  
**presso**, *adv.*, near.  
**prestàre**, *v.*, to lend.  
**presto**, *adv.*, soon.  
**presto (far)**, *to be quick.*  
**prète**, *m.*, priest.  
**prevedere**, *irr. v.*, to foresee.  
**prigione**, *f.*, prison.  
**prigioniero**, *m.*, prisoner.  
**prima**, *adv.*, before.  
**primavera**, *f.*, spring.  
**principale**, *adj.*, principal.  
**probabile**, *adj.*, probable.  
**probabilmente**, *adv.*, probably.  
**procedere**, *v.*, to originate, *n. m.*, behaviour.  
**procinto (in)**, *adv.*, on the point.  
**professione**, *f.*, profession.  
**profitto**, *m.*, profit.  
**profondo**, *adj.*, deep.  
**promesso**, *part.*, promised.

## RAPPRESENTAZIONE.

**promettere**, *irr. v.*, to promise.  
**promuovere**, *irr. v.*, to promote.  
**pronto**, *adj.*, ready.  
**pronunciare**, *v.*, to pronounce.  
**propósito (a)**, *adv.*, regarding, concerning.  
**propósta**, *f.*, proposal.  
**proprietà**, *f.*, property.  
**prorompere**, *irr. v.*, to burst forth.  
**próssimo**, *m.*, neighbour.  
**próssimo**, *adj.*, next, nearest.  
**proteggere**, *irr. v.*, to protect.  
**provenire**, *irr. v.*, to originate.  
**proverbo**, *m.*, proverb.  
**provincia**, *f.*, province.  
**provvedere**, *irr. v.*, to provide.  
**prudente**, *adj.*, prudent.  
**público**, *adj.*, public.  
**pugno**, *m.*, fist.  
**punire**, *v.*, to punish.  
**punto**, *adv.*, at all.  
**purche**, *conj.*, provided.  
**pure**, *conj.*, however.

## Q.

**quàdre**, *m.*, painting.  
**quà e là**, *adv.*, here and there.  
**qualche cosa**, *f.*, something.  
**qualunque**, *adj.*, whatever.  
**quádo**, *adv.*, when.  
**quánto**, *adv.*, how much.  
**quánto prima**, *adv.*, as soon as possible.  
**quantunque**, *conj.*, however.  
**quási**, *conj.*, nearly.  
**quassù**, *adv.*, up here.  
**quéllo**, *adj.*, that.  
**quercia**, *f.*, oak.  
**questo**, *adj.*, this.  
**quí**, *adv.*, here.

## R.

**raccogliere**, *irr. v.*, to gather.  
**raccomandàre**, *v.*, to recommend.  
**raccomandazione**, *f.*, recommendation.  
**raccontàre**, *v.*, to relate.  
**ràdo (di)**, *adv.*, seldom.  
**raffreddóre**, *m.*, cold.  
**ragàzzo**, *m.*, boy; -a, *f.*, girl.  
**raggiungere**, *irr. v.*, to overtake.  
**ragióne**, *f.*, reason.  
**rágno**, *m.*, spider.  
**rallegrarsi**, *pron. v.*, to rejoice.  
**rapresentazione**, *f.*, representation.

## RUGGIRE.

**rasente**, *adv.*, near, along.  
**re**, *m.*, king.  
**recitáre**, *v.*, to recite.  
**regálo**, *m.*, present.  
**regalàre**, *v.*, to make a present.  
**regaláto**, *part.*, presented.  
**reggimento**, *m.*, regiment.  
**regina**, *f.*, queen.  
**relazione**, *f.*, relation.  
**rendere**, *irr. v.*, to give back.  
**rendita**, *f.*, rent, income.  
**Reno**, *m.*, Rhine.  
**riaccendere**, *irr. v.*, to light again.  
**riaggiustàre**, *v.*, to readjust.  
**ribelláto**, *part.*, rebelled.  
**ricchezza**, *f.*, riches, wealth.  
**ricco**, *adj.*, rich.  
**ricevere**, *v.*, to receive.  
**richiedere**, *irr. v.*, to request.  
**richiesta**, *f.*, request.  
**ricompensàre**, *v.*, to reward.  
**riconoscere**, *irr. v.*, to recognise.  
**ricordarsi**, *pron. v.*, to remember.  
**ricorrere**, *irr. v.*, to have recourse.  
**ridere**, *irr. v.*, to laugh.  
**ridurre**, *irr. v.*, to reduce.  
**riflettere**, *irr. v.*, to reflect, to reflect.  
**rilucere**, *irr. v.*, to shine.  
**rimanere**, *irr. v.*, to remain.  
**rimproveràre**, *v.*, to reproach.  
**rincrescere**, *irr. v.*, to grieve.  
**ringraziamento**, *m.*, thanks.  
**ringraziàre**, *v.*, to thank.  
**ripellere**, *irr. v.*, to repel.  
**ripósarsi**, *pron. v.*, to rest.  
**ripulire**, *v.*, to polish again.  
**riscuotere**, *irr. v.*, to collect, to move.  
**risolvere**, *irr. v.*, to resolve.  
**risórta**, *f.*, resource.  
**rispettáre**, *v.*, to respect.  
**rispetto**, *m.*, respect.  
**rispetto (in)**, *adv.*, regarding.  
**rispondere**, *irr. v.*, to reply.  
**ritàrdo**, *m.*, delay.  
**ritornàre**, *v.*, to return.  
**ritórno**, *m.*, return.  
**riusóire**, *irr. v.*, to succeed.  
**róba**, *f.*, goods, property.  
**Róma**, *f.*, Rome.  
**rómpere**, *irr. v.*, to break.  
**rósa**, *f.*, rose.  
**Rosina**, *f.*, Rose.  
**rósso**, *adj.*, red.  
**rotolóni**, *adv.*, rolling, rotawling.  
**rovinàre**, *v.*, to ruin.  
**rubàre**, *v.*, to steal.  
**ruggire**, *v.*, to roar.

## RUMORE.

rumóre, *m.*, rumour, noise.  
Rússia, *f.*, Russia.

## S.

saccóccia, *f.*, pocket.  
Saffo, *f.*, Sappho.  
sála, *f.*, hall, drawing-room.  
saláme, *m.*, ham.  
salire, *v.*, to ascend.  
sálmo, *m.*, psalm.  
salutare, *v.*, to salute.  
salúte, *f.*, health.  
salvare, *v.*, to save.  
Sant' Élena, *f.*, Saint Helena.

sapere, *irr. v.*, to know.  
sapóne, *m.*, soap.  
sarto, *m.*, tailor.  
sasso, *m.*, stone.  
sasso, *di*, *adv.*, astonished.  
Sassónia, *f.*, Sazony.  
sátira, *f.*, satire.  
sbalordito, *part.*, frightened.

sbarazzare, *v.*, to clear (the table).

scacciare, *v.*, to expel.  
scácco, *m.*, chess.  
scála, *f.*, steps, stairs.  
scalinata, *f.*, stairs.  
scárpa, *f.*, shoe.  
scátola, *f.*, box.  
scegliere, *irr. v.*, to choose.  
scellino, *m.*, shilling.  
scendere, *irr. v.*, to descend.  
scimmia, *f.*, monkey.  
sciogliere, *irr. v.*, to untie.  
sciupare, *v.*, to waste.  
scolare, *m.* and *f.*, pupil.  
scomettere, *irr. v.*, to bet.  
sconfiggere, *irr. v.*, to defeat.

sconnettere, *irr. v.*, to disjoin.

scópo, *m.*, goal, end.  
scórgere, *v.*, to perceive.  
scórre, *irr. v.*, to run over (a book).

scórso, *part.*, past.  
scritto, *part.*, written.  
scrivere, *irr. v.*, to write.  
scúdo, *m.*, shield, dollar, crown.

scuóla, *f.*, school.  
scúro, *adj.*, dark.  
scusare, *v.*, to excuse.  
sdégno, *m.*, wrath.  
sdruocere, *irr. v.*, to tear, to rend.

se, *conj.*, if.  
sebbene, *conj.*, although.  
sécco, *adj.*, dry.  
sécolo, *m.*, century.  
secóndo, *conj.*, agreeably.  
sedere, *irr. v.*, to sit.  
sedia, *f.*, chair.

## SPAZZOLA.

seguire, *v.*, to follow.  
sella, *f.*, saddle.  
sembrare, *v.*, to seem.  
seminare, *v.*, to sow.  
sempre, *adv.*, always.  
sentinella, *f.*, sentinel.  
sentire, *v.*, to feel.  
sentirsi, *pron. v.*, to feel.  
senza, *conj.*, without.  
seppellire, *irr. v.*, to bury.  
séra, *f.*, evening.  
seriamente, *adv.*, seriously.  
serio, *adj.*, serious.  
sérva, *f.*, maid-servant.  
servitóre, *m.*, servant.  
servire, *v.*, to serve.  
servo, *m.*, servant.  
seta, *f.*, silk.  
sete, *f.*, thirst.  
Settembre, *m.*, September.  
settimana, *f.*, week.  
severamente, *adv.*, seriously.

severo, *adj.*, serious, severe.  
sicúro, *adj.*, safe.  
sicurtà, *f.*, safety.  
sigaro, *m.*, cigar.  
signóra, *f.*, Mrs., lady.  
signóre, *m.*, Mr., gentleman.  
sino, *adv.*, until.  
situato, *part.*, situated.  
smemorato, *adj.*, forgetful.  
soccorrere, *irr. v.*, to help.  
Sofia, *f.*, Sophia.  
soffrire, *irr. v.*, to suffer.  
soggiogare, *v.*, to subdue.  
soggiungere, *irr. v.*, to add.  
sognare, *v.*, to dream.  
soldato, *m.*, soldier.  
sólido, *m.*, halfpenny.  
sóle, *m.*, sun.  
solere, *irr. v.*, to be accustomed.

sólito, *part.*, used.  
sólito (per), generally.  
sólo, *adj.*, alone.  
soltanto, *adv.*, only.  
sopravvivere, *irr. v.*, to survive.  
sórdo, *adj.*, deaf.  
sorélla, *f.*, sister.  
sorpreso, *part.*, surprised.  
sorrider, to smile.  
sorsire, " + go out.  
sospend e, *v.*, to suspend.  
sostenere, *irr. v.*, to uphold.

sótto, *adv.*, under.  
sottomettere, *irr. v.*, to submit.

sovénte, *adv.*, often.  
sovvenirsi, *pron. irr. v.*, to remember.

spáda, *f.*, sword.  
Spáña, *f.*, Spain.  
spálla, *f.*, shoulder.  
spazzare, *v.*, to sweep.  
spazzola, *f.*, brush.

## TAVOLA.

spéccchio, *m.*, looking-glass.  
spedire, *v.*, to send.  
spegnere, *irr. v.*, to extinguish.  
spendere, *irr. v.*, to spend.  
sperare, *v.*, to hope.  
spesso, *adv.*, often.  
speziále, *m.*, chemist.  
spilla, *f.*, pin.  
splendóre, *m.*, splendour.  
spósa, *f.*, bride.  
stamattina, *f.*, this morning.

stanco, *adj.*, tired.  
stassera, *f.*, this evening.  
stare, *irr. v.*, to stand.  
statúa, *f.*, statue.  
statuétta, *f.*, little statue.  
stazione, *f.*, station.  
stella, *f.*, star.  
stellato, *adj.*, starry.  
sterlino, *adj.*, sterling.  
stimare, *v.*, to estimate.  
stivále, *m.*, boot.  
stória, *f.*, history, novel, fable.

stráda, *f.*, street, road.  
straripare, *v.*, to overflow.  
strido, *m.*, shout.  
studente, *m.* and *f.*, student.  
studiare, *v.*, to study.  
stúdio, *m.*, study.  
stúdio (a bello), *adv.*, purposely.

studioso, *adj.*, studious.  
stufato, *m.*, stew.  
stúpido, *adj.*, stupid, silly.  
su, *adv.* and *prep.*, above, upon.

subire, *v.*, to undergo.  
súbito, *adv.*, at once.  
succedere, *v.*, to succeed.  
súddito, *m.*, subject.  
súdicio, *adj.*, dirty.  
sufficienza, *f.*, sufficiency.  
súggere, *irr. v.*, to suck.  
súgo, *m.*, juice.  
suonare, *v.*, to play.  
superbo, *adj.*, proud.  
supporre, *irr. v.*, to suppose.  
supposto che, *conj.*, provided.

svegliarsi, *pron. v.*, to awake.

Svizzera, *f.*, Switzerland.

## T.

tagliare, *v.*, to cut.  
tále, *adj.*, such.  
tánto, *adv.*, as much.  
tánto quánto, *adv.*, as much as.  
tárdi, *adv.*, late.  
tásca, *f.*, pocket.  
tastóni, *adv.*, groping.  
tavola, *f.*, table.

## TAZZA.

tazza, *f.*, cup.  
 tè, *m.*, tea.  
 teàtro, *m.*, theatre.  
 Tedesco, *m.*, German.  
 temere, *v.*, to fear.  
 tempesta, *f.*, tempest.  
 tempo, *m.*, time, weather.  
 tenere, *irr. v.*, to hold.  
 tener conto, *irr. v.*, to value.  
 tener máno, *irr. v.*, to help.  
 tenóre, *m.*, tenor.  
 tergere, *irr. v.*, to wipe, to dry.  
 termine, *m.*, position.  
 terra, *f.*, earth.  
 testa, *f.*, head.  
 testè, *adv.*, lately.  
 tetto, *m.*, roof.  
 tiràre, *v.*, to blow (of winds).  
 Torino, *f.*, Turin.  
 tòrre, *irr. v.*, to take.  
 torre, *n. f.*, tower.  
 tòrto, *m.*, wrong.  
 tosàre, *v.*, to shear.  
 tossire, *v.*, to cough.  
 tòsto, *adv.*, soon.  
 traditóra, *f.*, traitress.  
 traditóre, *m.*, traitor.  
 tradurre, *irr. v.*, to translate.  
 trarre, *irr. v.*, to draw.  
 trascuràggine, *f.*, carelessness.  
 tribùto, *m.*, tribute.  
 tróno, *m.*, throne.  
 tróppo, *adv.* and *adj.*, too much; too many.  
 trovàre, *v.*, to find.  
 tuonàre, *imp. v.*, to thunder.  
 Túrco, *m.*, Turk.  
 tuttavia, *conj.*, still.  
 tutto, *adj.*, all.

## VENTO.

## U.

ubbidire, *v.*, to obey.  
 ubbriacarsi, *pron. v.*, to get drunk.  
 ubbriàco, *adj.*, drunk.  
 uccidere, *irr. v.*, to kill.  
 udire, *irr. v.*, to hear.  
 último, *adj.*, last.  
 úmido, *adj.*, damp.  
 umóre, *m.*, humour.  
 ungere, *irr. v.*, to anoint.  
 único, *adj.*, only one.  
 uómo, *m.*, man.  
 uóvo, *m.* (*pl. uova*), egg.  
 urtare, *v.*, to hurt.  
 uscìre, *irr. v.*, to go out.  
 usúra, *f.*, usury.  
 útile, *adv.*, useful.  
 úva, *f.*, grape.

## V.

vacánza, *f.*, vacancy; holidays.  
 valere, *irr. v.*, to be worth.  
 valóre, *m.*, valour.  
 valoróso, *adj.*, valourous.  
 vantaggio, *m.*, advantage.  
 vantarsi, *pron. v.*, to boast.  
 vapóre, *m.*, steam.  
 vascello, *m.*, ship.  
 vecchio, *adj.*, old.  
 vece (in), *adv.*, instead.  
 vedere, *irr. v.*, to see.  
 vedúta, *f.*, view.  
 vegliàre, *v.*, to watch.  
 vendere, *v.*, to sell.  
 vendicarsi, *pron. v.* to avenge oneself.  
 vèndita, *f.*, sale.  
 Venèzia, *f.*, Venice.  
 venire, *irr. v.*, to come.  
 vento, *m.*, wind.

## ZUCCHERO.

verbo, *m.*, verb.  
 vergognàrsi, *pron. v.*, to be ashamed.  
 verità, *f.*, truth.  
 vero, *adj.*, true.  
 verso, *adv.*, towards.  
 vetro, *m.*, glass.  
 via, *f.*, way, road.  
 via, *adv.*, away.  
 viaggiàre, *v.*, to travel.  
 viaggiatóre, *m.*, traveller.  
 viaggio, *m.*, travel.  
 vincitore, *m.*, victor.  
 vicino, *adv.*, near.  
 vicino, *adj.*, neighbouring.  
 villaggio, *m.*, village.  
 vincitóre, *m.*, victor.  
 víno, *m.*, wine.  
 viola, *f.*, violet.  
 virtù, *f.*, virtue.  
 visita, *f.*, visit.  
 visitàre, *v.*, to visit.  
 vista, *f.*, sight, view.  
 víta, *f.*, life.  
 Vittório, *Victor*.  
 viva voce (a) *adv.*, by word of mouth.  
 vivere, *irr. v.*, to live.  
 vizio, *m.*, vice.  
 voce, *f.*, voice.  
 vóglia, *f.*, wish.  
 volentieri, *adv.*, willingly.  
 volere, *irr. v.*, to be willing.  
 volgere, *irr. v.*, to turn.  
 volume, *m.*, volume.  
 vuóto, *adj.*, empty.

## Z.

zia, *f.*, aunt.  
 zio, *m.*, uncle.  
 zitto, *interj.*, hush!  
 zolfanèllo, *m.*, match.  
 zóppo, *adj.*, lame.  
 zúchero, *m.*, sugar.

# INDEX II. TO VOCABULARIES.

## ENGLISH WORDS.

### A.

able, to be, *v.*, *potere*.  
 about, *adv.*, *circa*.  
 above, *adv.*, *su, sopra*.  
 absolutely, *adv.*, *assolutamente*.  
 absolve, to, *v.*, *assolvere*.  
 accept, to, *v.*, *aggradire*.  
 accompany, to, *v.*, *accompagnare*.  
 account, *n.*, *conto*.  
 according, *adv.*, *giusta*.  
 accumulate, to, *v.*, *ammassare*.  
 accustomed, to be, *v.* *solere*.  
 ache, *n.*, *dolore*.  
 ache, to, *v.*, *dolere*.  
 action, *n.*, *azione*.  
 actor, *n.*, *attore*.  
 actress, *n.*, *attrice*.  
 add, to, *v.*, *arrògere*.  
 address, to, *v.*, *indirizzare*.  
 adduce, to, *v.*, *addurre*.  
 admire, to, *v.*, *ammirare*.  
 admit, to, *v.*, *ammettere*.  
 adulator, *n.*, *adulatore*.  
 advance, to, *v.*, *avanzarsi*.  
 advantage, *n.*, *vantaggio*.  
 advice, *n.*, *consiglio*.  
 advice, to, *v.*, *consigliare*.  
 advise, to, *v.*, *avvisare*.  
 affectionate, *adj.*, *affettuoso*.  
 affirm, to, *v.*, *affermare*.  
 affix, to, *v.*, *affiggere*.  
 Africa, *n.*, *África*.  
 afterwards, *adv.*, *póí, dopo*.  
 against, *adv.*, *contro*.  
 age, *n.*, *età*.  
 ago, *n.*, *cambio*.  
 agreeably, *adv.*, *secóndo, di buon grado*.  
 agree, to, *v.*, *convenire*.  
 agreement, *n.*, *accórdo*.  
 Albert, *n.*, *Alberto*.  
 allow, to, *v.*, *permettere*.  
 all, at, *adv.*, *affatto*.  
 all four, on, *adv.*, *carpóni*.  
 allowed (to be), *v.*, *permettersi, licere*.  
 alms, *n.*, *elemósina*.  
 alone, *adj.*, *sólo*.

### ASTONISHED.

along, *adv.*, *rasénte, lúngo*.  
 already, *adv.*, *di già*.  
 also, *conj.*, *anche*.  
 although, *conj.*, *sebbene*.  
 always, *adv.*, *sempre*.  
 America, *n.*, *América*.  
 among, *prep.*, *fra, tra*.  
 amuse, to, *v.*, *divertire*.  
 amusement, *n.*, *divertimento*.  
 ancestor, *n.*, *antenato*.  
 and, *conj.*, *e*.  
 angle, *n.*, *ángolo*.  
 angry, to get, *v.*, *arrabbiarsi*.  
 annoy, to, *v.*, *annoiare*.  
 Anthony, *n.*, *António*.  
 applauded, *part.*, *applaudito*.  
 appearance, *n.*, *aspétto*.  
 apple, *n.*, *mela*.  
 approach, to, *v.*, *avvicinarsi*.  
 April, *n.*, *Aprile*.  
 architect, *m.*, *architétto*.  
 arm, *n.*, *braccio*.  
 army, *n.*, *esército*.  
 Arno, *n.*, *Arno*.  
 around, *adv.*, *dintórno, intorno*.  
 arrest, to, *v.*, *arrestare*.  
 arrive, to, *v.*, *arrivare*.  
 art, *n.*, *arte*.  
 ascend, to, *v.*, *ascéndere*.  
 ashamed, to be, *v.*, *vergognarsi*.  
 ashore, to go, *v.*, *approdare*.  
 as far as, *adv.*, *fino a*.  
 Asia, *n.*, *Ásia*.  
 ask, to, *v.*, *domandare*.  
 asleep, to fall, *v.*, *addormentarsi*.  
 as much, *adv.*, *tánto*.  
 as much as, *adv.*, *tánto quanto*.  
 as soon as, *adv.*, *appéna*.  
 as soon as possible, *adv.*, *quánto prima*.  
 assurance, *n.*, *assicurazióne*.  
 assure, to, *v.*, *assicurare*.  
 astride, *adv.*, *cavalcóni*.  
 astonished, to be, *v.*, *mara- vigliarsi*.  
 astonished, *adv.*, *di sasso*.

### BET.

at all, *adv.*, *púnto*.  
 attention, *n.*, *attenzióne*.  
 attentive, *adj.*, *atténto*.  
 attract, to, *v.*, *attrarre*.  
 August, *n.*, *Agosto*.  
 aunt, *n.*, *zia*.  
 Austrian, *adj.*, *Austriaco*.  
 author, *n.*, *autóre*.  
 autumn, *n.*, *autúunno*.  
 avaricious, *adj.*, *aváro*.  
 avenge, to, *v.*, *vendicare*.  
 aware, to be, *v.*, *avvedersi*.  
 away, *adv.*, *via*.

### B.

baby, *n.*, *bambíno*.  
 bad, *adj.*, *cattivo, málo*.  
 badly, *adv.*, *mále*.  
 ball, *n.*, *bállo*.  
 banker, *n.*, *banchiére*.  
 baptism, *n.*, *battésimo*.  
 baroness, *n.*, *baronéssa*.  
 battle, *n.*, *battáglia*.  
 be, to, *v.*, *essere*.  
 beat, to, *v.*, *battere*.  
 beautiful, *adj.*, *bélló*.  
 because, *conj.*, *a cáusa, perchè*.  
 become, to, *v.*, *divenire*.  
 become old, to, *v.*, *invecchiare*.  
 beer, *n.*, *birra*.  
 bed, *n.*, *letto*.  
 before, *adv.*, *avánti, davánti, prima*.  
 begin, to, *v.*, *cominciare*.  
 behave, to, *v.*, *condursi*.  
 behaviour, *n.*, *procédere, condotta*.  
 behind, *adv.*, *diétro*.  
 believe, to make, *v.*, *far vista, fingere*.  
 Belgium, *n.*, *Bélgio*.  
 believe, to, *v.*, *credere*.  
 belong, to, *v.*, *appartenere*.  
 below, *adv.*, *abbássó, giù*.  
 benefactor, *n.*, *benefattóre*.  
 benevolent, *adj.*, *benevolente, benevolo*.  
 Berlin, *n.*, *Berlino*.  
 besides, *conj.*, *óltre*.  
 bet, to, *v.*, *scommettere*.

## BETTER.

better, *adv.*, meglio; *adj.*, migliore.  
 bill of exchange, *n.*, cambiale.  
 bite, *to*, *v.*, mordere.  
 bitter, *adj.*, amaro.  
 black, *adj.*, nero.  
 blame, *to*, *v.*, biasimare.  
 blind, *adj.*, cieco.  
 blow, *to*, (of winds) *v.*, tirare.  
 blow, *n.*, colpo.  
 blush, *to*, *v.*, arrossire.  
 boast, *to*, *v.*, vantarsi.  
 boat, *n.*, battello.  
 boil, *to*, *v.*, bollire.  
 bone, *n.*, osso.  
 book, *n.*, libro.  
 bookseller, *n.*, librário.  
 boot, *n.*, stivale.  
 both, *pron.*, entrambi, *conj.*, e...e.  
 bother, *n.*, noia.  
 bottle, *n.*, bottiglia.  
 boy, *n.*, ragazzo.  
 box, *n.*, scatola.  
 brain, *n.*, cervello.  
 brandy, *n.*, acquavite.  
 Brazil, *n.*, Brasile.  
 bread, *n.*, pane.  
 breath, *n.*, fiato.  
 break, *to*, *v.*, rompere.  
 breakfast, *n.*, colazione.  
 bride, *n.*, sposa.  
 bring, *to*, *v.*, condurre.  
 brother, *n.*, fratello.  
 brush, *n.*, spazzola.  
 brush, *to*, *v.*, spazzare.  
 burn, *to*, *v.*, ardere.  
 bury, *to*, *v.*, seppellire.  
 burst forth, *to*, *v.*, prorompere.  
 business, *n.*, affare.  
 busy, *adj.*, occupato.  
 butter, *n.*, burro.  
 butterfly, *n.*, farfalla.  
 buy, *to*, *v.*, comprare.  
 by the by, *conj.*, a propósito.

## C.

call, *to*, *v.*, chiamare.  
 calumniate, *to*, *v.*, calunniare.  
 calumny, *n.*, calunnia.  
 canal, *n.*, canale.  
 candle, *n.*, candela.  
 cane, *to*, *v.*, bastonare.  
 capital, *n.*, capitale.  
 captain, *n.*, capitano.  
 cards, *n.* (to play), carte.  
 care, *to*, *v.*, curarsi.  
 careful, *adj.*, attento.  
 carelessness, *n.*, trascuragine.  
 carriage, *n.*, carrozza.  
 carry, *to*, *v.*, portare.  
 case, *n.*, caso.  
 case, *in*, *adv.*, in caso.

## CONTENT.

castle, *n.*, castello.  
 cause, *n.*, motivo.  
 cat, *n.*, gatto.  
 celebrated, *part.*, celebre.  
 cellar, *n.*, cantina.  
 cemetery, *n.*, cimitero.  
 century, *n.*, secolo.  
 certain, *adj.*, certo.  
 certainly, *adv.*, certamente, certo (*di*).  
 chain, *n.*, collana.  
 chair, *n.*, sedia.  
 chance, *n.*, occasione.  
 change, *n.*, cambio.  
 change, *to*, *v.*, cambiare.  
 Charles, *n.*, Carlo.  
 cheek, *n.*, guancia.  
 cheese, *n.*, formaggio.  
 chemist, *n.*, speziale.  
 cherry, *n.*, ciliegia.  
 chess, *n.*, scacchi.  
 chest, *n.*, petto.  
 chestnut, *n.*, castagna.  
 Chianti, *n.*, Chianti.  
 chiffonier, *n.*, armadio.  
 chimney, *n.*, ciminiera.  
 China, *n.*, Cina.  
 chocolate, *n.*, cioccolata.  
 choose, *to*, *v.*, scegliere.  
 Christ, *n.*, Cristo.  
 church, *n.*, chiesa.  
 cigar, *n.*, sigaro.  
 citizen, *n.*, cittadino.  
 class, *n.*, classe.  
 clear, *adj.*, chiaro.  
 clear, *to* (the table) *v.*, sbarazzare.  
 close, *to*, *v.*, chiudere.  
 coast, *n.*, costa.  
 coat, *n.*, abito.  
 coffee, *n.*, caffè.  
 cold, *adj.*, freddo.  
 cold, *n.*, raffreddore.  
 collect, *to*, *v.*, riscuotere.  
 colour, *n.*, colore.  
 Columbus, *n.*, Colombo.  
 come, *to*, *v.*, venire.  
 comedy, *n.*, commedia.  
 commit, *to*, *v.*, commettere.  
 Como, *n.*, Como.  
 companion, *n.*, compagno.  
 company, *n.*, compagnia.  
 complain, *to*, *v.*, dolersi.  
 complaint, *n.*, lamento.  
 completely, *adv.*, completamente.  
 complexion, *n.*, cera.  
 compose, *to*, *v.*, comporre.  
 compromise, *to*, *v.*, compromettere.  
 concert, *n.*, concerto.  
 condemn, *to*, *v.*, condannare.  
 conflagration, *n.*, incendio.  
 consequence, *n.*, conseguenza.  
 contemporaneous, *adj.*, contemporaneo.  
 content, *adj.*, contento.

## DESPISE.

continuous, *adj.*, continuo.  
 contrary (on the), *adv.*, al contrario.  
 convenient, *to* be, *v.*, convenire.  
 converse, *to*, *v.*, conversare.  
 copy, *to*, *v.*, copiare.  
 corner, *n.*, angolo.  
 correct, *to*, *v.*, correggere.  
 correspond, *to*, *v.*, corrispondere.  
 corrupt, *to*, *v.*, corrumpere.  
 cost, *to*, *v.*, costare.  
 cough, *to*, *v.*, tossire.  
 countess, *n.*, contessa.  
 country, *n.*, paese.  
 courage! *interj.*, ánimo!  
 courier, *n.*, corriere.  
 courtyard, *n.*, cortile.  
 cousin, *n.*, cugino.  
 covet, *to*, *v.*, desiderare.  
 coward, *adj.*, poltrone.  
 Croesus, *n.*, Creso.  
 cross, *adj.*, arrabbiato.  
 crown (money), *n.*, scudo.  
 crucify, *to*, *v.*, crocifiggere.  
 cry, *to*, *v.*, piangere.  
 crying (the), *n.*, pianto.  
 cup, *n.*, tazza.  
 curled, *part.*, inanellato.  
 cut, *to*, *v.*, tagliare.

## D.

daisy, *n.*, margherita.  
 damp, *adj.*, umido.  
 dance, *to*, *v.*, ballare.  
 danger, *n.*, pericolo.  
 dare, *to*, *v.*, osare.  
 dark, *adj.*, scuro.  
 daughter, *n.*, figlia.  
 day, *n.*, giorno, di.  
 day, *to*, *adv.*, oggi.  
 day before yesterday, *the*, *adv.*, avantieri.  
 deaf, *adj.*, sordo.  
 dear, *adj.*, caro.  
 death, *n.*, morte.  
 debt, *n.*, debito.  
 deceive, *to*, *v.*, ingannare.  
 December, *n.*, Dicembre.  
 decide, *to*, *v.*, decidere.  
 deed, *n.*, azione.  
 deep, *adj.*, profondo.  
 defeat, *to*, *v.*, sconfiggere.  
 defend, *to*, *v.*, difendere.  
 degenerate, *to*, *v.*, degenerare.  
 delay, *n.*, ritardo.  
 deny, *to*, *v.*, negare.  
 depart, *to*, *v.*, partire.  
 departure, *n.*, partenza.  
 depose, *to*, *v.*, deporre.  
 derive, *to*, *v.*, derivare.  
 descend, *to*, *v.*, discendere.  
 deserve, *to*, *v.*, meritare.  
 desist, *to*, *v.*, desistere.  
 despatch, *n.*, dispaccio.  
 despise, *to*, *v.*, disprezzare.

## DESTROY.

destroy, to, v., *distrúrrre*.  
dictate, to, v., *dettàre*.  
dine, to, v., *pranzàre*.  
dinner, n., *pránzo*.  
die, to, v., *morire*.  
different, adj., *diverso*.  
differently, adv., *diversamente*.  
difficult, adj., *difficile*.  
diligent, adj., *diligente*.  
dip into, to, v., *immérgere*.  
direct, to, *indirizzàre*.  
director, n., *direttore*.  
dirty, adj., *súdicio*.  
disagreement, n., *disaccordo*.  
dish, n., *piátto*.  
dishonestly, adv., *disonestamente*.  
dishonourable, adj., *disonorevole*.  
disjoin, to, v., *disgiúngere*.  
disobedient, adj., *disobbediente*.  
disobey, to, v., *disubbidire*.  
dispose, to, v., *dispórre*.  
disposed, part., *dispósto*.  
dissipate, to, v., *sciupàre*.  
distinctly, adj., *distintamente*.  
distinguish, to, v., *distinguere*.  
distract, to, v., *distógliere*, *distràrre*.  
divide, to, v., *dividere*.  
do, to, v., *fare*.  
do quickly, to, v., *far presto*.  
doctor, n., *dotlóre*.  
dog, n., *càne*.  
dollar, n., *scúdo*.  
domination, n., *dominio*.  
done, part., *fatto*.  
door, n., *pórtà*.  
doubt, to, v., *dubitàre*.  
downstairs, adv., *abbasso*.  
draw, to, v., *tràrre*.  
drawing, n., *diségno*.  
drawing-room, n., *sála*.  
dream, to, v., *sognàre*.  
Dresden, n., *Dréssa*.  
dress, n., *àbito*.  
drink, to, v., *bèvere*, *bére*.  
drown, to, v., *annegàre*.  
drunk, adj., *ubbrúco*.  
drunk, part., *bevúto*.  
drunk, to get, v., *ubbricarsi*.  
dry, adj., *sécco*.  
dry, to, v., *léggere*.  
duel, n., *duéllo*.  
duet, n., *duétto*.  
duke, n., *dúca*.  
during, adv., *durànte*.  
dust, n., *pólvere*.  
duty, n., *dovére*.

## EXTINGUISH.

## E.

each, adj., *ógni*.  
ear, n., *orecchio*.  
earl, n., *cónte*.  
earring, n., *orecchino*.  
earth, n., *terra*.  
east, n., *levànte*.  
easy, adj., *fàcile*.  
eat, to, v., *mangiàre*.  
ebony, n., *ébano*.  
economical, adj., *ecónomo*.  
educated, part., *educáto*.  
education, n., *educazióne*.  
egg, n., *uovo*.  
elephant, n., *elefànte*.  
eloquent, adj., *eloquente*.  
elsewhere, adv., *altróce*.  
embark, to, v., *imbarcarsi*.  
embassy, n., *ambasciata*.  
Emma, n., *Emma*.  
Emmanuel, n., *Emanuèle*.  
empty, adj., *vuóto*.  
encumbrance, n., *imbarazzo*.  
enemy, n., *nemico*.  
engineer, n., *ingegnere*.  
England, n., *Inghiltèrra*.  
English, adj., *inglèse*.  
enjoy, to, v., *godere*.  
enormously, adv., *enormemente*.  
enough, adv., *abbastánza*.  
enough! interj., *basta!*  
enrich, to, v., *arricchire*.  
enter, to, v., *entràre*.  
enterprise, n., *intrapresa*.  
entrust, to, v., *affidàre*.  
equivalent, to be, v., *equivalere*.  
erect, to, v., *erigere*.  
estate, n., *podere*.  
esteem, to, v., *stimàre*.  
Europe, n., *Európa*.  
even, conj., *anche*.  
even, not, conj., *neanche*.  
evening, n., *sera*.  
evening, this, adv., *stasera*.  
ever, adv., *sémpre*.  
every, adj., *ógni*.  
every time, adv., *ógni qual volta*.  
everywhere, adv., *dovunque*.  
evil, n., *màle*.  
examination, n., *esàme*.  
examiner, n., *esaminatore*.  
except, conj., *eccétto*.  
exception, n., *eccezióne*.  
excessively (of rain), adv., *álta*, *diróttà*.  
exercise, n., *esercizio*.  
exhibition, n., *esposizióne*.  
exist, to, v., *esistere*.  
expel, to, v., *espèllere*.  
expect, to, v., *attèndersi*.  
express, to, v., *esprimere*.  
extinguish, to, v., *spegnere*.

## FRESH.

extract, to, v., *estràrre*.  
extremely, adv., *enormemente*.  
eye, n., *occhio*.

## F.

fable, n., *fávola*, *stória*.  
face, n., *faccia*.  
fact (in), adv., *fatti (in)*.  
fail, to, *mançàre*.  
faith, n., *fede*.  
fall, to, v., *cadere*.  
false, adj., *fàlso*.  
family, n., *famiglia*.  
far, adj., *lontàno*.  
far away, adv., *lontàno*.  
fastidious (to become), v., *infastidirsi*.  
father, n., *pàdre*.  
fatherland, n., *pàtria*.  
fate, n., *fàto*.  
fault, n., *cólpa*.  
favour, n., *favóre*.  
favour, in, adv., *in favóre*.  
fear, n., *pàura*.  
February, n., *Febbráio*.  
feel, to, v., *sentire*.  
feign, to, v., *fiingere*.  
fever, n., *fébbre*.  
few (pl.), *póchi*.  
fib, n., *storiella*.  
field, n., *pràto*, *campàgna*.  
fig, n., *fico*.  
fight, to, v., *bàttersi*.  
fig-tree, n., *fico*.  
find, to, v., *trovare*.  
finger, n., *dito*.  
finish, to, v., *finire*.  
fire, n., *fuóco*, *incéndio*.  
fish, n., *pésce*.  
fist, n., *pugno*.  
flame, n., *fiàmma*.  
flatterer, n., *adulatore*.  
flood, to, v., *allagàre*.  
floor, n., *piàno*.  
flower, n., *fióre*.  
follow, to, v., *seguire*.  
foot, n., *piède*.  
foot, at the, adv., *appiè*.  
for, prep., *per*.  
foresee, to, v., *prevedere*.  
forest, n., *bosco*.  
forget, to, v., *oblidre*.  
forgetful, adj., *smemoráto*.  
fork, n., *forchétta*.  
fortune, n., *fortúna*.  
forward, adv., *avànti*.  
forward, to go, v., *avanzarsi*.  
franc, n., *fráncó*.  
France, n., *Frància*.  
Francis, n., *Francésco*.  
free, to, v., *liberare*.  
freedom, n., *libertà*.  
freely, adv., *liberamente*.  
freeze, to, imp., *gelàre*.  
French, adj., *francése*.  
fresh, adj., *fresco*.

## FRIEND.

friend, *n.*, amico.  
 friendship, *n.*, amicizia.  
 frighten, to, *v.*, far paura,  
*sbalordire*.  
 from, *prep.*, da.  
 fruit, *n.*, fruttu.  
 fruit-garden, *n.*, orto.  
 fry, to, *v.*, friggere.  
 fulfil, to, adempiere.  
 furniture, *n.*, móbile.  
 future, *n.*, futuro.

## G.

gain, to, *v.*, guadagnare.  
 game, *n.*, partita.  
 garden, *n.*, giardino.  
 gas, *n.*, gas.  
 gather, to, *v.*, raccógliere.  
 general, *n.*, generale.  
 generally, *adv.*, per solito.  
 generous, *adj.*, generoso.  
 gentleman, *n.*, galantuomo,  
*signóre*.  
 German, *adj.*, tedesco.  
 Germany, *n.*, Germania.  
 get, to, *v.*, avere.  
 get angry, to, *v.*, arrab-  
*biarsi*.  
 get drunk, to, *v.*, ubbria-  
*carsi*.  
 get near, to, *v.*, avvicinarsi.  
 get up, to, *v.*, alzarsi.  
 gird, to, *v.*, cingere.  
 girl, *n.*, ragazza.  
 give, to, *v.*, dare.  
 give back, to, *v.*, rendere.  
 give a prize, to, *v.*, pre-  
*miare*.  
 given, *part.*, dato.  
 glad, *adj.*, felice.  
 glass, *n.*, bicchiere, vetro.  
 glove, *n.*, guanto.  
 go, to, *v.*, andare.  
 go away, to, *v.*, andarsene.  
 go ashore, to, *v.*, approdare.  
 go down at sea, to (to  
 sink), *v.*, affondare.  
 go out, to, *v.*, uscire.  
 goal, *n.*, scópo.  
 goat, *n.*, capro.  
 God, *n.*, Dio.  
 gold, *n.*, oro.  
 good, *adj.*, buono.  
 good heavens! *interj.*, *córpo*  
*di Bacco!*  
 goodness, *n.*, bontà.  
 goods, *n.*, róba.  
 gospel, *n.*, evangélio.  
 gout, *n.*, podágra.  
 government, *n.*, govérno.  
 governor, *n.*, governatóre.  
 grandfather, *n.*, nonno.  
 grandmother, *n.*, nonna.  
 grant, to, *v.*, concedere.  
 grape, *n.*, uva.  
 grass, *n.*, érba.  
 grass-plot, *n.*, práto.  
 grateful, *adj.*, gráto.

## HOW.

great, *adj.*, gránde, enórme.  
 Greek, *adj.*, gréco.  
 grey, *adj.*, bigio.  
 grieve, to, *v.*, attristarsi.  
 groping, *adv.*, tastóni.  
 grow, to, *v.*, crescere.  
 gun, *n.*, fucile.

## H.

habit, *n.*, abitudine.  
 hail, to, *imp. v.*, granainare.  
 hair, *n.*, capello.  
 half-penny, *n.*, sòlido.  
 hall, *n.*, sala.  
 ham, *n.*, salame.  
 Hamlet, *n.*, Amleto.  
 hand, *n.*, máno.  
 handicraft, *n.*, mestiere.  
 handkerchief, *n.*, fazzolettó.  
 happen, to, *v.*, accadere.  
 happened, what, *n.*, acca-  
*dúto*.  
 happy, *adj.*, felice.  
 hard, *adj.*, duro.  
 haste, *n.*, fretta.  
 hasten, to, *v.*, affrettarsi.  
 hat, *n.*, cappello.  
 hatter, *n.*, cappelláio.  
 have, to, *v.*, avere.  
 have recourse, to, *v.*, ricór-  
*rere*.  
 head, *n.*, tésta, capo.  
 heal, to, *v.*, guarire.  
 health, *n.*, salúte.  
 hear, to, *v.*, udire.  
 heart, *n.*, cuore.  
 heart, by, *adv.*, a mente.  
 heavens, good, *interj.*,  
*córpo di Bacco!*  
 heavy, *adj.*, pesante.  
 height, *n.*, altezza.  
 help, to, *v.*, tener máno,  
*aiutare*.  
 henceforth, *adv.*, d'óra in-  
*nanzi*.  
 Henry, *n.*, Enrico.  
 here, *adv.*, qui.  
 here above, *adv.*, quassù.  
 here and there, *adv.*, quà e là.  
 hide, to, *v.*, nascondere.  
 high, *adj.*, álto.  
 history, *n.*, stória.  
 hold, to, *v.*, tenere.  
 holiday, *n.*, vacánza.  
 Holland, *n.*, Olánda.  
 honest, *adj.*, onèsto, intégro.  
 honestly, *adv.*, onestaménte.  
 honour, to, *v.*, onorare.  
 hope, to, *v.*, sperare.  
 horrible, *adj.*, orribile.  
 horse, *n.*, cavállo.  
 hospital, *n.*, ospedále.  
 hotel, *n.*, albergo.  
 hotel-keeper, *n.*, alberga-  
*tóre*.  
 house, *n.*, casa.  
 how, *conj.*, cóme.

## JUDGE.

however, *conj.*, quantunque,  
*püre*.  
 how much, *adv.*, quáto.  
 hunger, *n.*, fame.  
 hunt, *n.*, caccia.  
 hurt, to, *v.*, urtare.  
 hurtful, to be, *v.*, nuocere.  
 hush! *interj.*, zitto!

## I.

ice, *n.*, ghiaccio.  
 ignoble, *adj.*, ignóbile.  
 if, *conj.*, se.  
 ill, *adj.*, ammalato.  
 illness, *n.*, malattia.  
 image, *n.*, immagine.  
 immediately, *adv.*, subito.  
 impede, to, *v.*, impedire.  
 impel, to, *v.*, impellere.  
 important, *adj.*, importánte.  
 impose, to, *v.*, imporre.  
 impossible, *adj.*, impossi-  
*bile*.  
 improve, to, *v.*, migliorare.  
 incapable, *adj.*, incapace.  
 income, *n.*, rendita.  
 increase, to, *v.*, accrescere.  
 incur, to, *v.*, incorrere.  
 indigestion, *n.*, indigestione.  
 in fact, *adv.*, infátti.  
 in favour, *adv.*, in favóre.  
 infuse, to, *v.*, infondere.  
 inheritance, *n.*, eredità.  
 injure, to, *v.*, ledere.  
 ink, *n.*, inchiostro.  
 inkstand, *n.*, calamáio.  
 inn, *n.*, osteria.  
 innocent, *adj.*, innocénte.  
 in place, *adv.*, in luógo.  
 inside, *adv.*, dentro.  
 in spite, *adv.*, ad ónta.  
 instead, *adv.*, in luógo.  
 insult, *n.*, insulto.  
 insult, to, *v.*, insultare.  
 in the midst, *adv.*, in mézzo.  
 intimate, *adj.*, íntimo.  
 invade, to, *v.*, invadere.  
 invite, to, *v.*, invitare.  
 invitation, *n.*, invito.  
 invited, *part.*, invitato.  
 iron, *n.*, ferro.  
 irresistibly, *adv.*, irresistí-  
*bilmente*.  
 Italian, *adj.*, Italianó.  
 Italy, *n.*, Itália.

## J.

January, *n.*, gennáio.  
 jaw, *n.*, mascella.  
 jewel, *n.*, gioiello.  
 Jewish, *adj.*, giudio.  
 John, *n.*, Giovanni.  
 joiner, *n.*, falegname.  
 journey, *n.*, viaggjo.  
 joy, *n.*, gioia.  
 judge, *n.*, giudice.



JUDGMENT.

judgment, *n.*, *giudizio*.  
juice, *n.*, *sugo*.  
June, *n.*, *giugno*.  
July, *n.*, *luglio*.

K.

keep awake, to, *v.*, *vegliare*.  
kill, to, *v.*, *uccidere*.  
kind, *adj.*, *buono*.  
kindness, *n.*, *bontà*.  
king, *n.*, *re*.  
kitchen, *n.*, *cucina*.  
kneel, to, *v.*, *genuflettere*.  
knife, *n.*, *coltello*.  
knight, *n.*, *cavaliere*.  
knot, *n.*, *nodo*.  
know, to, *v.*, *sapere*, *conoscere*.  
known, *part.*, *saputo*, *conosciuto*.

L.

lady, *n.*, *signora*.  
lake, *n.*, *lago*.  
lame, *adj.*, *zoppo*.  
lamp, *n.*, *lampada*.  
language, *n.*, *lingua*.  
lantern, *n.*, *lanterna*.  
large, *adj.*, *largo*, *grande*.  
last, *adj.*, *ultimo*.  
last, at, *adv.*, *alla fine*.  
late, *adv.*, *tardi*.  
lately, *adv.*, *poco fa*.  
Latin, *adj.*, *latino*.  
laugh, to, *v.*, *ridere*.  
lawyer, *n.*, *avvocato*.  
lazy, *adj.*, *ozioso*.  
laziness, *n.*, *ozio*, *infiargadaggine*.  
lean, to, *v.*, *appoggiarsi*.  
learn, to, *v.*, *imparare*.  
learned, *adj.*, *dotto*.  
leave, to, *v.*, *lasciare*.  
leave, *n.*, *permesso*.  
leg, *n.*, *gamba*.  
lend, to, *v.*, *prestare*.  
less, *adv.*, *meno*.  
lesson, *n.*, *lezione*.  
let, to, *v.*, *appigionare*.  
letter, *n.*, *lettera*.  
liberty, *n.*, *libertà*.  
library, *n.*, *libreria*.  
lie, *n.*, *bugia*.  
lie, to, *v.*, *mentire*.  
life, *n.*, *vita*.  
light, *n.*, *lume*.  
light again, to, *v.*, *riaccendere*.  
lighten, to, *imp. v.*, *lampeggiare*.  
lion, *n.*, *leone*.  
liqueur, *n.*, *liquore*.  
listen, to, *v.*, *ascoltare*.  
little, *adj.*, *piccolo*.  
little, *adv.*, *poco*.  
little by little, *adv.*, *poco a poco*.

MRS.

live, to, *v.*, *vivere*.  
loadstone, *n.*, *calamita*.  
Lombardy, *n.*, *Lombardia*.  
London, *n.*, *Londra*.  
long, *adj.*, *lungo*.  
long, to, *v.*, *desiderare*.  
look, to, *v.*, *sembrare*.  
looking-glass, *n.*, *specchio*.  
lose, to, *v.*, *perdere*.  
loss, *n.*, *perdita*.  
loud, *adj.*, *alto*.  
Louise, *n.*, *Luisa*.  
love, *n.*, *amore*.  
lucrative, *adj.*, *lucrativo*.

M.

maccaroni, *n.*, *maccherone*.  
mad (of a dog), *adj.*, *arrabbiato*.  
made, *part.*, *fatto*.  
make, to, *v.*, *fare*.  
make believe, to, *v.*, *far vista*,  *fingere*.  
make a present, to, *v.*, *regalare*.  
man, *n.*, *uomo*.  
manner, *n.*, *modo*.  
manufactory, *n.*, *fabbrica*.  
many, *adj.*, *molto*.  
marble, *n.*, *marmo*.  
March, *n.*, *marzo*.  
march, to, *v.*, *marciare*.  
market, *n.*, *mercato*.  
marry, to, *v.*, *maritarsi*.  
Mary, *n.*, *Maria*.  
mask, *n.*, *maschera*.  
master, *n.*, *maestro*, *padrone*.  
match, *n.*, *zolfanello*.  
meadow, *n.*, *prato*.  
means, *n.*, *mezzo*.  
means, by, *adv.*, *per mezzo*.  
meat, *n.*, *carne*.  
meet, salt, *n.*, *salame*.  
medicine, *n.*, *medicina*.  
meet, to, *v.*, *incontrare*.  
melt, to, *v.*, *fondere*, *di sciogliere*.  
memory, *n.*, *mente*.  
merchandise, *n.*, *merce*.  
merchant, *n.*, *negoziante*.  
midnight, *n.*, *mezzanotte*.  
merry, *adj.*, *allegro*.  
midst, in the, *adv.*, *in mezzo*.  
Milan, *n.*, *Milano*.  
mile, *n.*, *miglio*.  
milk, *n.*, *latte*.  
minister, *n.*, *ministro*.  
minute, *n.*, *minuto*.  
misdemeanour, *n.*, *delitto*.  
miser, *n.*, *avaro*.  
misery, *n.*, *miseria*.  
misfortune, *n.*, *disgrazia*.  
mistake, *n.*, *errore*.  
Mr., *n.*, *signore*.  
Mrs., *n.*, *signora*.

NOT.

mix, to, *n.*, *miscere*.  
modest, *adj.*, *modesto*.  
modesty, *n.*, *modestia*.  
money, *n.*, *dandro*.  
monkey, *n.*, *scimmia*.  
Mont Blanc, *n.*, *Monte Bianco*.  
Monte Rosa, *n.*, *Monte Rosa*.  
month, *n.*, *mese*.  
moon, *n.*, *luna*.  
moonlight, *n.*, *chiaro di luna*.  
more, *adv.*, *più*.  
morning, *n.*, *mattina*.  
morning, this, *adv.*, *stamattina*.  
morrow, to-, *adv.*, *domani*.  
mortal, *adj.*, *mortale*.  
mother, *n.*, *madre*.  
mountain, *n.*, *monte*, *montagna*.  
mouth, by word of, *adv.*, *a viva voce*.  
much, *adv.*, *assai*, *molto*.  
much, as, *adv.*, *tanto*.  
much as, as, *adv.*, *tanto quanto*.  
much, by, *adv.*, *a forza*.  
much, how, *adv.*, *quanto*.  
much, too, *adv.*, *troppo*.  
murderer, *n.*, *assassino*.  
mutual, *adj.*, *comune*.

N.

name, to, *v.*, *nominare*.  
named, *part.*, *nominato*.  
Napoleon, *n.*, *Napoleone*.  
nation, *n.*, *nazione*.  
native, *adj.*, *natiale*.  
near, *adj.* and *adv.*, *vicino*.  
near, to get, *v.*, *avvicinarsi*.  
nearest, *adj.*, *prossimo*.  
nearly, *conj.*, *quasi*.  
necessary, *adj.*, *necessario*.  
necessary, to be, *v.*, *bisognare*.  
need, *n.*, *bisogno*.  
needle, *n.*, *ago*.  
neglect, to, *v.*, *negligere*.  
neighbour, *n.*, *prossimo*.  
neighbouring, *adj.*, *vicino*.  
nephew, *n.*, *nipote*.  
nevertheless, *conj.*, *nondimeno*.  
new, *adj.*, *nuovo*.  
news, *n.*, *nuova*, *novella*.  
newspaper, *n.*, *giornale*.  
next, *adj.*, *prossimo*.  
night, *n.*, *notte*.  
noble, *adj.*, *nobile*.  
nobody, *pron.*, *nessuno*.  
noise, *n.*, *rumore*.  
none, *pron.*, *nessuno*.  
noon, *n.*, *mezzogiorno*.  
nor, *adv.*, *nè*.  
north, *n.*, *nord*.  
not, *adv.*, *non*.

## NOTE.

note, *n.*, *biglietto*.  
 not even, *adv.*, *neanche*.  
 nothing, *pron.*, *nulla*, *niente*.  
 now, *adv.*, *ora*, *adesso*.  
 numerous, *adj.*, *numeroso*.

## O.

oak, *n.*, *quercia*.  
 obedient, *adj.*, *ubbidiente*.  
 obey, to, *v.*, *ubbidire*.  
 oblige, to, *v.*, *obbligare*.  
 obliged, to be, *v.*, *dovere*.  
 obstacle, *n.*, *ostacolo*.  
 obstinate, *adj.*, *ostinato*.  
 occasion, *n.*, *occasione*.  
 occupied, *part.*, *occupato*.  
 of, *prep.*, *di*.  
 offend, to, *v.*, *offendere*.  
 offended, *part.*, *offeso*.  
 offer, *n.*, *offerta*.  
 offer, to, *v.*, *offrire*.  
 often, *adj.*, *spesso*.  
 oh! *interj.*, *oh!*  
 oil, *n.*, *olio*.  
 old, *adj.*, *vecchio*.  
 umbrella, *n.*, *ombrello*.  
 on all fours, *adv.*, *carponi*.  
 only, *adv.*, *soltanto*.  
 only one, *adj.*, *unico*.  
 on the contrary, *adv.*, *diversamente*.  
 on the point, *adv.*, *in procinto*.  
 on the other side, *adv.*, *al di là*.  
 open, to, *v.*, *aprire*.  
 opera, *n.*, *opera*.  
 opinion, *n.*, *parere*.  
 opposite, *adv.*, *dirimpetto*, *faccia (in)*.  
 oppress, to, *v.*, *opprimere*.  
 oppressor, *n.*, *oppressore*.  
 or, *conj.*, *o*, *od*, *altrimenti*.  
 orange, *n.*, *arancia*.  
 orator, *n.*, *oratore*.  
 order, *n.*, *ordine*.  
 order, in, *adv.*, *a fine*, *a finire*.  
 order, to, *v.*, *ordinare*.  
 originate, to, *v.*, *procedere*.  
 other, *adj.*, *altro*.  
 others, *pron.*, *altri*.  
 otherwise, *conj.*, *altrimenti*.  
 outside, *adv.*, *fuori*.  
 out, to go, *v.*, *uscire*.  
 overbearing, *n.*, *arroganza*.  
 overflow, to, *v.*, *allagare*.  
 overtake, to, *v.*, *raggiungere*.  
 owner, *n.*, *padrone*.  
 ox, *n.*, *bue*.

## P.

page, *n.*, *página*.  
 pain, *n.*, *dolore*.  
 pain, to, *v.*, *dolere*.  
 paint, to, *v.*, *dipingere*.

## POUR OUT.

painter, *n.*, *pittore*, *f.*, *pittore*, *m.*  
 painting, *n.*, *pittura*, *quadro*.  
 palace, *n.*, *palazzo*.  
 pale, to become, *v.*, *impallidire*.  
 paper, *n.*, *carta*.  
 pardon, to, *v.*, *perdonare*.  
 pardon, free, *n.*, *grazia*.  
 parent, *n.*, *genitore*.  
 Paris, *n.*, *Parigi*.  
 park, *n.*, *parco*.  
 part, *n.*, *parte*.  
 pass, to, *v.*, *passare*.  
 past, *adj.*, *scorso*.  
 patience, *n.*, *pazienza*.  
 pay, to, *v.*, *pagare*.  
 peach, *n.*, *pesca*.  
 pear, *n.*, *pera*.  
 pen, *n.*, *penna*.  
 Peter, *n.*, *Pietro*.  
 peasant, *n.*, *contadino*.  
 peninsula, *n.*, *penisola*.  
 penny (half), *n.*, *soldo*.  
 people, *n.*, *pòpolo*.  
 perceive, to, *v.*, *scorgere*.  
 perhaps, *conj.*, *forse*.  
 person, *n.*, *persona*.  
 personally, *adv.*, *in persona*.  
 peruse, to, *v.*, *scorrere*.  
 petition, *n.*, *petizione*.  
 piano, *n.*, *pianoforte*.  
 pin, *n.*, *spilla*.  
 pink, *n.*, *garofano*.  
 pipe, *n.*, *pipa*.  
 pity, to, *v.*, *compiangere*.  
 place, in, *adv.*, *in luogo*.  
 place, *n.*, *pòsto*.  
 plant, *n.*, *pianta*.  
 plate, *n.*, *piatto*.  
 play, to, *v.*, *giocare*, *giuocare*, *suonare*.  
 pleasant, *adj.*, *ameno*.  
 please, to, *v.*, *piacere*.  
 please to be, *v.*, *compiacersi*.  
 pleasure, *n.*, *piacere*, *grado*.  
 plenty, *adv.*, *a bizzeffe*.  
 plot, grass, *n.*, *prato*.  
 pocket, *n.*, *tasca*, *saccoccia*.  
 pocket-handkerchief, *n.*, *fazzoletto*.  
 poetry, *n.*, *poesia*.  
 poisoned, *part.*, *avvelenato*.  
 polish again, to, *v.*, *ripulire*.  
 political, *adj.*, *politico*.  
 poor, *adj.*, *povero*.  
 portion, *n.*, *parte*.  
 possess, to, *v.*, *possedere*.  
 possess oneself, to, *v.*, *impadronirsi*.  
 possible, *adj.*, *possibile*.  
 possibly, *adv.*, *possibilmente*.  
 post-office, *n.*, *pòsta*.  
 pound (money), *n.*, *lira sterlina*.  
 pour out, to, *v.*, *versare*.

## QUIET.

poverty, *n.*, *miseria*.  
 powerful, *adj.*, *potente*.  
 praise, to, *v.*, *lodare*.  
 pray, to, *v.*, *pregare*.  
 prefer, to, *v.*, *preferire*.  
 prepared, *part.*, *preparato*.  
 present, *n.*, *regalo*.  
 present, to make a, *v.*, *regalare*.  
 presented, *part.*, *regalato*.  
 presently, *adv.*, *fra poco*.  
 prevent, to, *v.*, *impedire*.  
 priest, *n.*, *prete*.  
 principal, *adj.*, *principale*.  
 prison, *n.*, *prigione*.  
 prisoner, *n.*, *prigioniero*.  
 privately, *adv.*, *a quattr'occhi*.  
 prize, *n.*, *premio*.  
 prize, to give a, *v.*, *premiare*.  
 probable, *adj.*, *probabile*.  
 probably, *adv.*, *probabilmente*.  
 proceed, to, *v.*, *procedere*.  
 profession, *n.*, *professione*.  
 profit, *n.*, *profitto*, *partito*.  
 promenade, *n.*, *passaggiata*, *passaggio*.  
 promenade, to, *v.*, *passaggiare*.  
 promise, to, *v.*, *promettere*.  
 promised, *part.*, *promesso*.  
 promote, to, *v.*, *promuovere*.  
 pronounce, to, *v.*, *pronunciare*.  
 proper, to be, *v. imp.*, *convenire*.  
 property, *n.*, *avere*, *proprietà*.  
 proposal, *n.*, *propòsta*.  
 protect, to, *v.*, *proteggere*.  
 proud, *adj.*, *superbo*.  
 proverb, *n.*, *proverbio*.  
 provide, to, *v.*, *provvedere*.  
 provided, *conj.*, *suppostoche*,  *purchè*.  
 province, *n.*, *provincia*.  
 prudent, *adj.*, *prudente*.  
 psalm, *n.*, *salmò*.  
 public, *adj.*, *público*.  
 punish, to, *v.*, *vantre*.  
 pupil, *n.*, *scolare*, *allievo*.  
 purchase, to, *v.*, *comprare*.  
 purchase, *n.*, *cómpra*.  
 purpose, *n.*, *disegno*.  
 purposely, *adv.*, *a bello studio*, *a bella pòsta*.  
 pursue, to, *v.*, *inseguire*.  
 put, to, *v.*, *mettere*, *pörre*.  
 put between, to, *v.*, *frappörre*.

## Q.

queen, *n.*, *regina*.  
 quickly, *adv.*, *prèsto*.  
 quickly, to do, *v.*, *scr prèsto*.  
 quiet, *adj.*, *zitto*.

RAILWAY.

R.

railway, *n.*, *ferrovia*.  
rain, *n.*, *pioggia*.  
rain, to, *imp. v.*, *piovere*.  
rather, *conj.*, *piuttosto*.  
read, to, *v.*, *leggere*.  
read, *part.*, *letto*.  
reading, the, *lettura*.  
ready, *adj.*, *pronto*.  
readjust, to, *v.*, *riaggiustare*.  
reason, *n.*, *ragione*.  
receive, to, *v.*, *ricevere*.  
recite, to, *v.*, *recitare*.  
recognise, to, *v.*, *riconoscere*.  
recommend, to, *v.*, *raccomandare*.  
recommendation, *n.*, *raccomandazione*.  
recompense, to, *v.*, *ricompensare*.  
recourse, to have, *v.*, *ricorrere*.  
red, *adj.*, *rosso*.  
redeem, to, *v.*, *salvare*.  
reduce, to, *v.*, *ridurre*.  
reflect, to, *v.*, *riflettere*.  
refract, to, *v.*, *riflettere*.  
regarding, *adv.*, *a proposito*.  
regiment, *n.*, *reggimento*.  
regret, to, *v.*, *pentirsi*.  
rejoice, to, *v.*, *rallegrarsi*.  
relate, to, *v.*, *narrare*, *raccontare*.  
relation, *n.*, *relazione*.  
remain, to, *v.*, *rimanere*.  
remember, to, *v.*, *ricordarsi*.  
rend, to, *v.*, *sdrucire*.  
rent, *n.*, *rendita*.  
repel, to, *v.*, *ripellere*.  
repent, to, *v.*, *pentirsi*.  
reply, to, *v.*, *rispondere*.  
representation, *n.*, *rappresentazione*.  
reproach, to, *v.*, *rimproverare*.  
request, *n.*, *richiesta*.  
request, to, *v.*, *richiedere*.  
reside, to, *v.*, *dimorare*.  
residence, *n.*, *abitazione*.  
resolve, to, *v.*, *risolvere*.  
resource, *n.*, *risorsa*.  
respect, *n.*, *rispetto*.  
respect, to, *v.*, *rispettare*.  
rest, to, *v.*, *riposarsi*.  
return, *n.*, *ritorno*.  
return, to, *v.*, *ritornare*.  
revolted, *part.*, *ribellato*.  
rich, *adj.*, *ricco*.  
riches, *n.*, *ricchezza*.  
ride, *n.*, *cavalcata*.  
right, *n.*, *diritto*.  
ring, *n.*, *anello*.  
ripe, *adj.*, *maturo*.  
river, *n.*, *fiume*.

SHOUT.

road, *n.*, *via*.  
roar, to, *v.*, *ruggire*.  
roast, *n.*, *arrosto*.  
Rome, *n.*, *Roma*.  
roof, *n.*, *tetto*.  
room, *n.*, *cámara*, *pósto*.  
rose, *n.*, *rosa*.  
Rose, *proper n.*, *Rósa*, *Rosina*.  
ruin, to, *v.*, *rovinare*.  
run, to, *v.*, *correre*.  
run away, to, *v.*, *fuggire*.  
run towards, to, *v.*, *accorrere*.  
Russia, *n.*, *Rússia*.

S.

saddened, to be, *v.*, *attristarsi*.  
saddle, *n.*, *sella*.  
safe, *adj.*, *sicuro*.  
safety, *n.*, *sicurtà*.  
said, *part.*, *détto*.  
sailor, *n.*, *marinadro*.  
Saint Helena, *n.*, *Sant'Elena*.  
salad, *n.*, *insalata*.  
sale, *n.*, *vendita*.  
salute, to, *v.*, *salutare*.  
Sappho, *n.*, *Sáffo*.  
satire, *n.*, *sátira*.  
satisfied, to be, *v.*, *contentarsi*.  
save, to, *v.*, *salvare*.  
Saxony, *n.*, *Sassonia*.  
say, to, *v.*, *dire*.  
scarcely, *conj.*, *a pena*.  
school, *n.*, *scuola*.  
sea, *n.*, *màre*.  
see, to, *v.*, *vedere*.  
seek, to, *v.*, *cercare*.  
seem, to, *v.*, *parere*.  
seldom, *adv.*, *di rado*.  
sell, to, *v.*, *vendere*.  
send, to, *v.*, *mandare*.  
sentinel, *n.*, *sentinella*.  
September, *n.*, *Settembre*.  
serious, *adj.*, *severo*, *sério*.  
seriously, *adv.*, *seriamente*.  
servant, *n.*, *servo*, *servitóre*.  
serve, to, *v.*, *servire*.  
several, *adj.*, *parecchi*.  
severe, *adj.*, *severo*, *sério*.  
severely, *adv.*, *severamente*.  
sew, to, *v.*, *cuocere*.  
shear, to, *v.*, *tosare*.  
sheep, *n.*, *pecora*.  
sheet (of paper), *n.*, *fógljo*.  
shilling, *n.*, *scellino*.  
shine, to, *v.*, *rilucere*.  
ship, *n.*, *nave*, *vascello*.  
shoe, *n.*, *scarpa*.  
shoemaker, *n.*, *calzolaio*.  
shooting, *n.*, *caccia*.  
shopkeeper, *n.*, *bottegaio*.  
short, *adj.*, *corto*.  
shoulder, *n.*, *spalla*.  
shout, *n.*, *grido*.

STATION.

shout, to, *v.*, *gridare*.  
snow, *n.*, *móstra*.  
snow, to, *v.*, *mostrare*.  
spout, to, *v.*, *chiudere*.  
side, on the other, *adv.*, *al di là*.  
side, *n.*, *lato*, *parte*.  
sight, *n.*, *vista*.  
sign, to, *v.*, *firmare*.  
silk, *n.*, *seta*.  
silly, *adj.*, *stúpido*.  
sin, *n.*, *peccato*.  
since, *conj.*, *giacchè*.  
sing, to, *v.*, *cantare*.  
singer, *f. n.*, *cantatrice*.  
sink, to, *v.*, *affondare*.  
sir, *n.*, *signóre*.  
sister, *n.*, *sorélla*.  
sit, to, *v.*, *sedere*.  
situation, *n.*, *pósto*.  
situated, *part.*, *situato*.  
skin, *n.*, *pelle*.  
sleep, to, *v.*, *dormire*.  
sleep, to fall a-, *v.*, *addormentarsi*.  
sleeve, *n.*, *mánica*.  
slothful, *adj.*, *infigárido*.  
slow, *adj.*, *piáno*.  
small, *adj.*, *piccolo*.  
smile, to, *v.*, *sorridere*.  
smith, *n.*, *fábbrjo*.  
smoke, *n.*, *fumo*.  
smoke, to, *v.*, *fumare*, *fumicare*.  
snow, *n.*, *néve*.  
snow, to, *imp. v.*, *nevicare*.  
so, *conj.*, *così*.  
soap, *n.*, *sapóne*.  
soldier, *n.*, *soldáto*.  
some, *adj.*, *alcuno*.  
something, *n.*, *qualche cosa*.  
son, *n.*, *figlio*.  
song, *n.*, *canzone*.  
soon, *adv.*, *présto*.  
soon, *as. adv.*, *appína*.  
soon as, *as. adv.*, *appena che*.  
sooner, *conj.*, *piuttosto*.  
Sophia, *n.*, *Sofía*.  
sow, to, *v.*, *seminare*.  
Spain, *n.*, *Spágna*.  
sparrow, *n.*, *pássero*.  
speak, to, *v.*, *parlare*.  
speech, *n.*, *discorso*.  
spend, to, *v.*, *spendere*.  
spider, *n.*, *rágno*.  
spirit, *n.*, *ánimo*.  
spite, *in. adv.*, *ad ónta*.  
splendour, *n.*, *splendóre*.  
spleen, *n.*, *nóia*.  
spring, *primavera*.  
staircase, *n.*, *scalináta*.  
stairs, *n.*, *scála*.  
stand to, *v.*, *stare*.  
standing, *adv.*, *in piedi*.  
star, *n.*, *stella*.  
starry, *adj.*, *stelláto*.  
start, to, *v.*, *avviarsi*.  
station, *n.*, *stazione*.

## STATUE.

statue, *n.*, *státua*.  
 statue, little, *n.*, *statuétta*.  
 steal, to, *v.*, *rubàre*.  
 steam, *n.*, *vapóre*.  
 steel, *n.*, *acciaio*.  
 steeple, *n.*, *campanile*.  
 sterling, *adj.*, *sterlino*.  
 stew, *n.*, *stufàlo*.  
 stick, *n.*, *bastóne*.  
 still, *conj.*, *tuttavia*.  
 stir the soul, to, *v.*, *commuovere*.  
 Stock Exchange, *n.*, *Bórsa*.  
 stone, *n.*, *sàsso*, (*of fruit*) *nóccio*.  
 stop, to, *v.*, *fermàrsi*.  
 storm, *n.*, *tempesta*.  
 story, *n.*, *stória*.  
 stranger, *n.*, *forestiére*.  
 street, *n.*, *stràda*.  
 strike, to, *v.*, *percuotere*.  
 strong, *adj.*, *fórtè*.  
 student, *n.*, *studénte*.  
 studious, *adj.*, *studióso*.  
 study, *n.*, *stúdio*.  
 study, to, *v.*, *studiàre*.  
 stupid, *adj.*, *stúpido*.  
 subject, *n.*, *súddito*.  
 subjugate, to, *v.*, *soggiogàre*.  
 submit, to, *v.*, *sottomettere*.  
 succeed, to, *v.*, *riuscire*, *pervenire*, *succedere*.  
 such, *conj.*, *tàle*.  
 suck, to, *v.*, *sùggere*.  
 suddenly, *adv.*, *sùbito*.  
 suffer, to, *v.*, *soffrire*.  
 sufficient, to be, *imp. v.*, *bastàre*.  
 sufficiently, *adv.*, *abbastanza*.  
 sugar, *n.*, *zúcchero*.  
 summer, *n.*, *està*, *estàte*.  
 sun, *n.*, *sóle*.  
 sup, to, *v.*, *cenàre*.  
 supper, *n.*, *céna*.  
 suppose, to, *v.*, *suppórre*.  
 surprised, *part.*, *sorpreso*.  
 survive, to, *v.*, *sopravvivere*.  
 surrender, to, *v.*, *arrendersi*.  
 suspend, to, *v.*, *sospèndere*.  
 swallow, to, *v.*, *inghiottire*.  
 sweep, to, *v.*, *spazzàre*.  
 sweet, *adj.*, *dóce*.  
 Switzerland, *n.*, *Svizzera*.  
 swollen, *adj.*, *gónfio*.  
 sword, *n.*, *spàda*.

## T.

table, *n.*, *távola*.  
 tailor, *n.*, *sarto*.  
 take, to, *v.*, *tórre*, *prendere*.  
 talk, to, *v.*, *parlàre*.  
 tall, *adj.*, *álto*, *grànde*.  
 tea, *n.*, *tè*.

## TURN.

teach, to, *v.*, *insegnàre*.  
 tear, to, *v.*, *sdrucire*.  
 tenor, *n.*, *tenóre*.  
 thanks, *n.*, *gràzie*.  
 thank, to, *v.*, *ringraziàre*.  
 that, *adj.*, *quéllo*.  
 the, *art.*, *il*, *lo*, *la*, *i*, *gli*, *le*.  
 theatre, *n.*, *teàtro*.  
 then, *adv.*, *allóra*.  
 there, *adv.*, *là*.  
 therefore, *conj.*, *perciò*, *dunque*.  
 thief, *n.*, *ladro*.  
 thin, *adj.*, *sécco*.  
 thing, *n.*, *cósa*.  
 think, to, *v.*, *pensàre*.  
 thirst, *n.*, *sete*.  
 this, *adj.*, *questo*, *pron.*, *ciò*.  
 this evening, *adv.*, *stasera*.  
 this morning, *adv.*, *stamattina*.  
 thought, *n.*, *concétto*.  
 thousand, *adj.*, *mille*.  
 throat, *n.*, *gola*.  
 through, *prep.*, *per mézzo*.  
 throne, *n.*, *tróno*.  
 throw oneself, to, *gittàrsi*.  
 thunder, to, *imp. v.*, *tuo-nàre*.  
 thus, *conj.*, *così*.  
 ticket, *n.*, *bigliétto*.  
 time, *n.*, *témpo*.  
 tired, *part.*, *stànco*.  
 to, *prep.*, *a*, *ad*.  
 to-day, *adv.*, *oggi*.  
 together, *adv.*, *insième*.  
 to-morrow, *adv.*, *domàni*.  
 tongue, *n.*, *lìngua*.  
 too much, *adv.*, *troppo*.  
 tooth, *n.*, *dén-te*.  
 towards, *prep.*, *verso*.  
 towards, to run, *v.*, *accorrere*.  
 towel, *n.*, *asciugamàno*.  
 tower, *n.*, *tóre*.  
 town, *n.*, *città*.  
 traitor, *n.*, *traditóre*.  
 traitress, *n.*, *traditóra*.  
 translate, to, *v.*, *tradurre*.  
 travel, to, *v.*, *viaggiàre*.  
 traveller, *n.*, *viaggiàto*.  
 travel over, to, *v.*, *scorrere*.  
 tree, *n.*, *àrbore*, *álbero*.  
 tribute, *n.*, *tribùto*.  
 trouble, *n.*, *imbaràzzo*.  
 true, *adj.*, *véro*.  
 truly, *adv.*, *certaménte*, *davvéro*.  
 trust, *n.*, *confidénza*.  
 trust, to, *v.*, *fidàrsi*.  
 truth, *n.*, *verità*.  
 Turin, *n.*, *Torino*.  
 turkey (fowl), *n.*, *gallinaccio*.  
 Turkish, *adj.*, *túrco*.  
 turn, to, *v.*, *volgere*.

## WANT.

## U.

ugly, *adj.*, *brútto*.  
 uncle, *n.*, *zio*.  
 under, *adv.*, *sótto*.  
 undergo, to, *v.*, *subire*.  
 understand, to, *v.*, *capire*, *intèndere*.  
 undertake, to, *v.*, *intraprendere*.  
 undertaking, *n.*, *intrapresa*.  
 unhappy, *adj.*, *infelice*.  
 untie, to, *v.*, *sciogliere*.  
 until, *adv.*, *sino*.  
 unusual, *adj.*, *inusàto*.  
 unwillingly, *adv.*, *a malincuore*.  
 up, to get, *v.*, *alzàrsi*.  
 uphold, to, *v.*, *sostenere*.  
 upon, *prep.*, *su*, *sopra*.  
 uproot, to, *v.*, *svellere*, *divellere*.  
 us, *pron.*, *noi*, *ci*.  
 used, *adj.*, *sólito*.  
 useful, *adj.*, *ùtile*.  
 useless, *adj.*, *inùtile*.  
 usually, *adv.*, *spesso*.  
 usury, *n.*, *usùra*.

## V.

vacancy, *n.*, *vacànza*.  
 valour, *n.*, *valóre*.  
 valorous, *adj.*, *valoróso*.  
 value, to, *v.*, *tenere conto*.  
 various, *adj.*, *diverso*.  
 Venice, *n.*, *Venezia*.  
 verb, *n.*, *verbo*.  
 very much, *adv.*, *mólto*.  
 very much (of rain), *adv.*, *dalla dirotta*.  
 vice, *n.*, *vizio*.  
 Victor, *n.*, *Vittório*.  
 victorious, *adj.*, *vincitóre*.  
 view, *n.*, *vista*.  
 village, *n.*, *villaggio*.  
 violet, *n.*, *viola*.  
 virtue, *n.*, *virtù*.  
 visit, *n.*, *visita*.  
 voice, *n.*, *vóce*.  
 volume, *n.*, *volùme*.

## W.

wait, to, *v.*, *aspettáre*.  
 waiter, *n.*, *cameriere*.  
 waiting, *adv.*, *a bada*.  
 waitress, *n.*, *cameriera*.  
 wake up, to, *v.*, *svegliàrsi*.  
 walk, *n.*, *passaggiàta*, *passaggio*.  
 walk, to, *v.*, *camminàre*.  
 wall, *n.*, *mùro*.  
 walnut, *n.*, *nóce*.  
 want, *n.*, *bisógno*.

WANT.	WORK.	YOUTH.
<p>want, to, v., <i>abbisognàre, mancare.</i>  war, n., <i>guerra.</i>  warehouse, n., <i>magazzino.</i>  warm, adj., <i>cálido.</i>  watch, n., <i>orologio.</i>  watch, to, v., <i>vegliare.</i>  water, n., <i>acqua.</i>  wax, n., <i>cera.</i>  way, to show the, v., <i>indirizzare.</i>  way, n., <i>via, módo.</i>  weak, adj., <i>débole.</i>  weather, n., <i>tempo.</i>  week, n., <i>settimana.</i>  well, n., <i>pózzo.</i>  well, adv., <i>bene.</i>  what, pron., <i>che cosa.</i>  whatever, pron., <i>checcchè.</i>  wheat, n., <i>gráno.</i>  when, adv., <i>quando.</i>  whence, adv., <i>ónde, dónde.</i>  where, adv., <i>óve, dóve.</i>  white, adj., <i>bianco.</i>  whole, adj., <i>intéro, tutto.</i></p>	<p>whosoever, pron., <i>chiunque.</i>  why, adv., <i>perchè.</i>  wide, adj., <i>largo.</i>  wife, n., <i>moglie.</i>  wife, to take a, v., <i>ammogliarsi.</i>  will, n., <i>grádo.</i>  William, n., <i>Gugliélmo.</i>  willingly, adv., <i>volentieri.</i>  wind, n., <i>vénto.</i>  window, n., <i>finestra.</i>  wine, n., <i>vino.</i>  winter, n., <i>inverno.</i>  wipe, to, v., <i>tergere.</i>  wish, n., <i>vóglia.</i>  wish, to, v., <i>desiderare.</i>  with, prep., <i>con.</i>  without, conj., <i>senza.</i>  wolf, n., <i>lupo.</i>  woman, n., <i>dónna.</i>  wood, n., <i>bóscó, légno.</i>  word, n., <i>paróla.</i>  word of mouth, by, adv., <i>a viva voce.</i>  work, to, v., <i>lavorare.</i></p>	<p>worse, adj., <i>peggióre.</i>  worse, adv., <i>peggio.</i>  worse, to become, v., <i>peggiorare.</i>  worth, to be, v., <i>valere.</i>  wound, n., <i>ferita.</i>  wound, to, v., <i>ferire.</i>  wrath, n., <i>sdégno.</i>  wrinkled, part., <i>aggrinzito.</i>  write, to, v., <i>scrivere.</i>  written, part., <i>scritto.</i>  wrong, n., <i>tórtó.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>Y.</b></p> <p>year, n., <i>ánno.</i>  yellow, adj., <i>giállo.</i>  yesterday, adv., <i>ieri.</i>  yesterday, the day before, adv., <i>avantiéri.</i>  yet, adv., <i>ancóra.</i>  yet, not, adv., <i>non ancóra.</i>  young, adj., <i>gióvine.</i>  youth, n., <i>ragázso, giovinetto.</i></p>

803

160







**PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET**

---

**UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY**

---

